

**Jesus
Is
Here**

PRECEPT FOUR

Jesus Is Here

DAVID JENKINS



Jesus Is Here

Copyright © 2023 by David Jenkins. All rights reserved.

No part of this publication may be reproduced, stored in a retrieval system or transmitted in any way by any means, electronic, mechanical, photocopy, recording or otherwise without the prior permission of the author except as provided by USA copyright law.

The opinions expressed by the author are not necessarily those of URLink Print and Media.

1603 Capitol Ave., Suite 310 Cheyenne, Wyoming USA 82001
1-888-980-6523 | admin@urlinkpublishing.com

URLink Print and Media is committed to excellence in the publishing industry.

Book design copyright © 2023 by URLink Print and Media. All rights reserved.

Published in the United States of America

Library of Congress Control Number: 2023919570

ISBN 978-1-68486-556-7 (Paperback)

ISBN 978-1-68486-557-4 (Hardback)

ISBN 978-1-68486-558-1 (Digital)

05.10.23



And that every tongue should confess that Jesus Christ is Lord, to the glory of God the Father. (Philippians 2:11)

CONTENTS

Precept Four	9
Introduction	13
Believing.....	21
Let Us Make Man in Our Image.....	125
The Forbidden Fruit	227
The Thousand-Year Reign	247
Reincarnation	341
Just as the Days of Noah	361
The Son of Perdition “Revealed”	411
The Birth of Jesus	467
Building Your House on the Rock	511
Conclusion.....	547
About the Author.....	565

PRECEPT FOUR



This is the republication of the fourth book our Father had me write. Nothing of the contents of the fourth book has been changed. The only thing changed is the cover with the precept four, and my new website on the back cover. davidofpsalm89.com, is the name of the website where you can download any or all of the manuscripts for free if you cannot or do not want to pay for the books.

As I was finishing the sixth book, I felt the Father was telling me to republish the books. And have something referring to the six books that we have written as a series or something like that. And because our Father has been teaching me precept upon precept, line upon line, little bit here and a little bit there, I thought it would be a good idea to call each book a precept.

And Because each book is a continuation of the previous book. And at the same time, each book takes me and the reader deeper into the scriptures. With a better understanding of who our Father is and what He is doing, and why He is doing what He is doing. And hopefully you will come to agree with Him as I do.

Whom shall he teach knowledge? and whom shall he make to understand doctrine? them that are weaned from the milk, and drawn from the breasts. For precept must be upon precept, precept upon precept; line upon line, line upon line; here a little, and there a little: (Isaiah 28:9-10)

DAVID JENKINS

This book was originally published in December of 2022. I went to a different publisher with this one and they took nine months to publish it after I sent in the manuscript. If you have read the previous books or precepts, then you will notice that the third book is within this book. Right after we published the third book, our Father had a servant tell me that she was supposed to say Jesus is here. Besides me thinking that this was going to be when the Father revealed me, I also thought He was trying to tell me that I named the third book incorrectly. No, I have no confidence in my flesh.

Finally, my brethren, rejoice in the Lord. To write the same things to you, to me indeed is not grievous, but for you it is safe. Beware of dogs, beware of evil workers, beware of the concision. For we are the circumcision, which worship God in the spirit, and rejoice in Christ Jesus, and have no confidence in the flesh. Though I might also have confidence in the flesh. If any other man thinketh that he hath whereof he might trust in the flesh, I more: Circumcised the eighth day, of the stock of Israel, of the tribe of Benjamin, an Hebrew of the Hebrews; as touching the law, a Pharisee; (Philippians 3:1-5)

If you have been reading the previous books, or precepts, you should already be understanding that if you hear anyone thinking that they are perfect, righteous, and or confident that they are doing right by our Father, cut that part of the body of Christ off. This precept is going to truly show you what it means that the hour is now that we are to worship God in spirit and in truth.

But the hour cometh, and now is, when the true worshippers shall worship the Father in spirit and in truth: for the Father seeketh such to worship him. God is a Spirit: and they that worship him must worship him in spirit and in truth. (John 4:23-24)

JESUS IS HERE

You will be finding out that the entire world is spiritually covered with a spiritual flood, and the name of this flood is Egypt. There is no more time for the hour to come, by the time you are done reading this precept, you will know the hour is upon us now. This is where I want to remind everyone that our Father is working a works that no man will believe.

Behold ye among the heathen, and regard, and wonder marvelously: for I will work a work in your days which ye will not believe, though it be told you.
(Habakuk 1:5)

Behold, ye despisers, and wonder, and perish: for I work a work in your days, a work which ye shall in no wise believe, though a man declare it unto you.
(Acts 13:41)

If you have not read any or some of the previous precepts, then you will be completely lost through this one. Precept must be upon precept as we read and heard just a bit ago.

INTRODUCTION



The first thing I am going to mention is that I do not take credit for writing this book again. For it is our Father who teaches me, and I just try to help others understand what I have been learning from our Father. He is the ultimate teacher. I am a man in the flesh, so yes, I do make mistakes, and my education level is not that high. I only have a ninth-grade education and have failed colleges and such. The only thing I know about is the Bible. Our Father is using my vessel of God to show that nobody needs a fancy education or degree if you will. I know the Bible, and I know our Father. I will mention now that this is an updated version of the third book our Father had me write. Some things started happening after the third book was published, which made me believe that I needed to write another. I started another book and got about three strong chapters done and realized that I was really repeating stuff that had been placed in the previous books. I feel our Father just told me to just amend the third book and add a couple chapters. This is because the last book was incomplete. I realize that this book is quite long, but at the same time, it holds a lot of knowledge that has been misunderstood for a very long time. On that note, I will say I have placed new chapters and chapters from other books we have written, so something might seem, as it is, really out of place.

We are naming this book a little different than the other two/three, yet as you will notice as you read this one, they all go together. I am the servant or vessel of God in which He chooses to use to reveal secrets in which have been kept since the beginning of the world. Our

Father is the true author of this book as He had me show in previous books. All glory goes to our Father and not me.

Remember as you read through this that we must worship God in spirit.

But the hour cometh, and now is, when the true worshippers shall worship the Father in spirit and in truth: for the Father seeketh such to worship him. God is a Spirit: and they that worship him must worship him in spirit and in truth. (John 4:23–24)

So humble yourself and let your guard down. This message is all about love, but it also shows how this world hates love.

As I stated in the last book, I am in school with our Father, and my knowledge of Him and what He is doing will never stop growing as long as I am in the flesh. Once again, He is using this foolish old man to show how far this world is from knowing who He is and what He is doing. I will say now that there will most likely be type errors in here, and we will be jumping around and maybe even repeating certain things. Just as the last book, this book will not be formatted to be fancy or even practical for that matter. I do not use big fancy words, for I—well, I just don't really know any. I am not going to spend my time trying to figure out how to make things in a way that might please some people. What I mean is I am not trying to please any man; the message is within the words and not in how the words are formatted. With that being said, ask our Father to help you understand, for I am in the flesh and do not teach as well as He does.

I will say right now though this book is a little different than the other two. This one is going to show my thought process through all this teaching so that you as a reader can know without a doubt that I do come in my Father's name and not my own. We are going to be learning that our Father has offered His love for each person and that His love is for all people. It does not matter what color, race, nationality, size, or shape someone is. It does not matter what a person has done, doing, or will do. His love is unconventional to all of

JESUS IS HERE

mankind. It is just man that truly does not want to know Him and what He is doing. I will say you really need to let go of your pride. Humble yourself and realize that this is a time that is going to be very devastating for the world.

We will be learning that the Old Testament and the New Testament are all knitted together as one long letter for instructions as to how we are to live our lives today and not the people of the past. We will be learning that reincarnation is talked about in our Bibles. This is a topic in which was covered in the last book, yet I felt that we needed to see more biblical truth behind it. We will be learning that Job of the Bible is alive today. Just as our Father has had me put in all three books, the Bible is one long letter of instructions on how we are to live our lives and not just about the people of the past.

We will be learning of our Father's magnificent power, and you will be learning how the scriptures are truly being fulfilled. Down to the letter of the Bible. Just by looking at the cover of this book, how do you think this world had a good idea of what I would look like? I will be honest; I didn't even know that I would wind up looking as I do. I used to hate a beard, and now, there is absolutely no way I will even trim it. As another update in this book, you can now see the cross in which is very close to being right in the middle of my forehead. This is my seal from our Father. This will be explained in further detail in the chapter "Believing." We will be learning how to build our house. As shown in the last book, each one of us is our own personal house of God.

We will be taking you through my thought process. What I mean by that is how my thoughts toward the Bible and our Father formed. How I got to the stage of believing what I believe now. There will be times in which I will show how I didn't think I was supposed to say anything about who I am. We will also be realizing that our Father has kept all of this secret, without keeping it secret, for every- thing that He has and is teaching me is in our Bibles. I will say that I only use the King James Version of the Bible, and I strongly feel our Father will not allow me to use any other. I did use a different version of the Bible in the first book for one sample, but our Father brought me right

back to the King James. I truly believe this is because man has altered the Bible to make it say what they want it to say so they do not have to hear the truth. Then let us listen to Ezra 6:11.

Also I have made a decree, **that whosoever shall alter this word, let timber be pulled down from his house,** and being set up, let him be hanged thereon; and let his house be made a dunghill for this.

At this time, we like to show a section of the Bible from two versions of the Bible so that you, as a reader, can see how the words have been altered. We will be using something that will be talked about later in the book, but at the same time, it will help people understand why our Father will only allow me to use the King James Bible.

Let us look at Hebrews 5:7–9 in the New International Version: “During the days of Jesus’ life on earth, he offered up prayers and petitions with fervent cries and tears to the one who could save him from death, and he was heard because of his reverent submission. **Son though he was, he learned obedience from what he suffered and, once made perfect,** he became the source of eternal salvation for all who obey him.”

Can you hear how this version sounds as if the son was made perfect and then became the author of our salvation? Now let us listen to the exact same verse in the King James Version of the Bible. “Who in the days of his flesh, when he had offered up prayers and supplications with strong crying and tears unto him that was able to save him from death, and was heard in that he feared; **though he were a Son, yet learned he obedience by the things which he suffered; and being made perfect,** he became the author of eternal salvation unto all them that obey him” (Hebrew 5:7–9). Can you hear the difference?

I will say at this time, this book is not going to tickle your ears and will probably offend many. However, we are at a time of history in which the truth must be revealed. For the rest of the introduction,

JESUS IS HERE

I think the name of the book says it all. So, sit back, get a cup of coffee or preferred drink, and enjoy learning more and more about our

Father and how brilliantly He is doing everything that He is doing. And as always, ask our Father to help you understand as you read through this, for it is not the doctrine you will hear in any church.

If you have read any of the other books, you will know that I live by every word that proceedeth out of the mouth of God. Every word starts with Genesis 1, “In the beginning,” through the end of Revelation 22:21, “The grace of our Lord Jesus Christ be with you all. Amen.” Now I want to show you what it means when you hear me tell you that you won’t hear what I teach in any man-made church.

And they were all amazed, insomuch that they questioned among themselves, saying, **What thing is this? what new doctrine is this?** for with authority commandeth he even the unclean spirits, and they do obey him. (Mark 1:27)

My doctrine is not of man. My doctrine is the doctrine of our Father. And therefore, now is the time in which all that are going to worship God *must* worship Him in *spirit* and stop looking at this carnally.

Being how this is an updated version of the third book we wrote, I want to show something that was noted in the third book and again in this one. On page 9 of the introduction, I stated, “**Humble yourself and realize that this is a time in which is going to be very devastating for the world.**” And in the conclusions of the second and third books, I warned of something bad was coming for the world. I didn’t know how or what was going to happen, but for certain, I knew something was coming, and now it has begun. Mind you, the second book, *Behold, A Greater Than Jonas Is Here!!!*, was published in October 2018. The third book, *Jesus Christ in the Flesh*, was published August of 2019. I just want to point this out, for I want you to know this is the real deal and not just a book for your enjoyment.

I also want to show something else here in the introduction so that everyone is aware of what is going on. Through all the books our Father has had me write, I give an understanding of who He is and what He is doing. Let us listen to what we are told in the scriptures.

We know that whosoever is born of God sinneth not; but he that is begotten of God keepeth himself, and that wicked one toucheth him not. And we know that we are of God, and the whole world lieth in wickedness. And we know that the Son of God is come, **and hath given us an understanding**, that we may know him that is true, and we are in him that is true, even in his Son Jesus Christ. This is the true God, and eternal life. (1 John 5:18–20)

Some might ask why we need to understand who our Father is and what He is doing; to that, we need to reflect on the scriptures again.

When the boughs thereof are withered, they shall be broken off: the women come, and set them on fire: for it is a people of no understanding: therefore he that made them will not have mercy on them, and he that formed them will shew them no favour. (Isaiah 27:11)

As you can now see and hear, our Father will not have mercy on anyone that does not take the time to try to understand who He is and what He is doing. Now I ask you to just think about this for a minute. Would you allow someone to come into your house and tell you to run your house differently if have things working perfectly for your needs? If this someone does not want to do things the way you have them set up, you are not going to allow this. So why would you expect our Father to do differently?

I would like to mention that the third book is wrapped into this book for I should have named the third book, *Jesus Christ in the Flesh Is Here!* So when you read something referring to the last book that our Father had me write, we are referring to the second book in which we wrote.

This world has been looking for the return of Jesus for quite some time. I ask you, as the reader, to keep a couple of things in mind as you read. We just showed you all that our Father will not have mercy on

JESUS IS HERE

any without an understanding. We showed how I have come to give the world an understanding. Now we are going to show you why this is the most important time of the world. Please keep this in mind as you read through this. “I have seen the travail, which God hath given to the sons of men to be exercised in it. He hath made every thing beautiful in his time: also he hath set the world in their heart, **so that no man can find out the work that God maketh from the beginning to the end**” (Ecclesiastes 3:10–11). As you can hear, our Father has made it so that man could not understand till the time of the end. As you read through any of our books, or even just this one, you will see how I have a true deep understanding of the Bible. My understanding of the Bible is some knowledge you have never heard of before. And with this knowledge and understanding that I try to share with the world, you can be certain that the end is quickly approaching. With that being said, it is up to you whether you truly want Jesus to lead you to the light and give you life with our Father.

BELIEVING



In this chapter, we are going to be showing within the scriptures what believing in God our savior is. We must do this chapter because recently I asked our Father why He continues teaching me all that He teaches me and why He still shows mercy toward me, for I am a sinful and rebellious man. For He has been teaching me obedience now for just over three years now, and there are still days that I do resist of what I am being commanded to do.

We need to pause here for a minute for we want to explain why I say that I am a sinful man. We all know that Jesus knew no sin, correct? “Now then, we are ambassadors for Christ, as though God did beseech you by us: we pray you in Christ’s stead, be ye reconciled to God. For he hath made him to be sin for us, who knew no sin; that we might be made the righteousness of God in him” (2 Corinthians 5:20–21). This is the spirit of Jesus that dwells in every person on the planet that is only doing as our Father commands him do as soon as the Father commands it. This was explained in detail in the second book.

I myself do argue and throw fits and such. I rebel or get a stiff neck and sometimes ignore something of what I am being told. I am like a little child who argues with his parents. Just as we are told to be. “And said, Verily I say unto you, Except ye be converted, and become as little children, ye shall not enter into the kingdom of heaven” (Matthew 18:3). Yes, this makes me feel as if I am sinful, but I always humble myself and listen because I know that I cannot do anything without Him. And I do know “He hath not dealt with us after our sins; nor rewarded us according to our iniquities” (Psalm 103:10). Just

to put a little humor into it. If I want to make it a sports analogy, my batting average for winning an argument is zero.

The answer I received almost immediately is “Because you believe.” So, this took my mind on a journey through the scriptures, and I quickly realized that there are very many that believe, but we need to look into what believing is all about.

Let us look at John 3:16–18.

For God so loved the world, that he gave his only begotten Son, that whosoever believeth in him should not perish, but have everlasting life. For God sent not his Son into the world to condemn the world; but that the world through him might be saved. **He that believeth on him is not condemned: but he that believeth not is condemned already, because he hath not believed in the name of the only begotten Son of God.**

At first glance at these two verses, one might believe that this is a man that came to earth several years ago and died on the cross for our sins; and if you believe that, you will have everlasting life with our Father. If this is the case, then this would be the entire Bible. We need to listen to the words of Jesus in Matthew 11:25.

At that time Jesus answered and said, I thank thee, O Father, Lord of heaven and earth, **because thou hast hid these things from the wise and prudent, and hast revealed them unto babes.**

Now with just these few verses, we can know without a doubt that there must be more than just believing that that son of God came into this world and died on the cross and your sins are forgiven.

Through this entire book, we are going to be learning that because Jesus laid down his life is why we are here today. This is not just for us or for people born just a couple thousand years ago. As showed

JESUS IS HERE

in the last book our Father had me write, if it wasn't for Jesus doing this, Adam and Eve in the very beginning of the Bible wouldn't have existed either. Just a quick look back at a couple of verses without going into all the details again, let us look at John 14:6.

Jesus saith unto him, I am the way, the truth, **and the life**: no man cometh unto the Father, but by me.

And now we need to look back into the beginning of the Bible.

And the Lord God formed man of the dust of the ground, **and breathed into his nostrils the breath of life; and man became a living soul.** (Genesis 2:7)

The life that Jesus states that he is, is the very life that our Father breathed into man in the very beginning.

As our Father had me show in the first and second books, our Bible is one long letter of instructions for us to learn. It is not just parts of the Bible; it is not just the New Testament or just parts of the Old Testament. It is the entire Bible from the first verse in Genesis all the way to the last verse in the book of Revelation. This is probably the first and foremost thing to believe. What I mean by that is if you believe that the Old Testament was only for the people of the past, then you will never understand the New Testament. And of course, if you believe that you are in the New Testament now and only need the New Testament, then you do not even believe the words of Jesus Christ, as he stated in John 5:39–47.

Search the scriptures; for in them ye think ye have eternal life: and they are they which testify of me. And ye will not come to me, that ye might have life. I receive not honour from men. But I know you, that ye have not the love of God in you. I am come in my Father's name, and ye receive me not: if another shall come in his own name, him ye will receive. How can

ye believe, which receive honour one of another, and seek not the honour that cometh from God only? Do not think that I will accuse you to the Father: there is one that accuseth you, even Moses, in whom ye trust. **For had ye believed Moses, ye would have believed me; for he wrote of me. But if ye believe not his writings, how shall ye believe my words?**

This is Jesus telling us right here, we must believe the writings of Moses if there is any chance that we will believe his sayings. Even if we do believe the writings of Moses, it will not guarantee that we will believe the sayings of Jesus. This stems off us actually believing that our Father is perfect, righteous, and justified in everything that He has done, doing, and will do.

At some time in this book, we will also be looking at how Adam is not one man but several people as one man, as we introduced in the last book. But for now, we need to be focusing on what this believing is all about. To do this, we need to be looking at a few areas of the Bible that mention believing. And yes, we will be looking at quite a few, for this is a matter that is greatly misunderstood. Let us start with Genesis 15:1–6.

After these things the word of the Lord came unto Abram in a vision, saying, Fear not, Abram: I am thy shield, and thy exceeding great reward. And Abram said, Lord God, what wilt thou give me, seeing I go childless, and the steward of my house is this Eliezer of Damascus? And Abram said, Behold, to me thou hast given no seed: and, lo, one born in my house is mine heir. And, behold, the word of the Lord came unto him, saying, This shall not be thine heir; but he that shall come forth out of thine own bowels shall be thine heir. And he brought him forth abroad, and said, Look now toward heaven, and tell the stars, if thou be able to number them: and he said unto him,

JESUS IS HERE

So shall thy seed be. **And he believed in the Lord; and he counted it to him for righteousness.**

Notice how Abram believed in the Lord and not someone that came and changed the Lord. Also note that this is in the very first book of the Bible.

I am backing up in the Bible, for I want to show all how my mind works. I mentioned above that this is in the very first book of the Bible, so this automatically brought my mind to think of Noah. Now our Bible does not exactly state how long it took Noah to build the ark. We need to look at a couple different areas to kind of get a grasp of how long it took. First let us look at how old Noah was when he begot his three sons. “And Noah was five hundred years old: and Noah begat Shem, Ham, and Japheth” (Genesis 5:32). Then we need to look at Genesis 6:10–14.

And Noah begat three sons, Shem, Ham, and Japheth. The earth also was corrupt before God, and the earth was filled with violence. And God looked upon the earth, and, behold, it was corrupt; for all flesh had corrupted his way upon the earth. And God said unto Noah, The end of all flesh is come before me; for the earth is filled with violence through them; and, behold, I will destroy them with the earth. Make thee an ark of gopher wood; rooms shalt thou make in the ark, and shalt pitch it within and without with pitch.

Now without being told exactly when Noah was commanded to build the ark, we can hear that it must not have been long after he begot his three sons.

Now let us look at when Noah entered into the ark. “And Noah was six hundred years old when the flood of waters was upon the earth. And Noah went in, and his sons, and his wife, and his sons’ wives with him, into the ark, because of the waters of the flood” (Genesis 7:6–7). Now let us look at 1 Peter 3:20, “Which sometime

were disobedient, when once the longsuffering of God waited in the days of Noah, while the ark was a preparing, wherein few, that is, eight souls were saved by water.” Without going into all the timetables of knowing how long each child was when they entered into the ark, we can easily figure that it took some time to build but must have been less than a hundred years to build the ark. All this time in which he was building this ark, do you think he was being ridiculed for what he was doing? Do you think all the people that he saw daily thought he was doing something for nothing? Do you think that many people were telling Noah that he was doing a good thing? Can you hear how it is because Noah believed God and not man? He believed what God said. That God is our Father and not some god that was thought to change our Father.

Now we mentioned that we are not going to look into all the timetables and such of the age of each child. This is because this is how our Father has taught me. He has taught me to just listen to what is being said and not to try to make more of what it is. We could go on forever trying to figure out what is being said and how it should work, or we could just listen to the simplicity of the matter. That is one of the ways our Father has hidden this from the wise and prudent. The wise figure that they must do all the math and figure the genetics and such behind the message. But, if we just listen to what is being said, it makes our Bibles easier to understand.

Just to make a quick sidenote here, we need to listen to what our Father told Noah about the animals that he was to take with him into the ark.

And the Lord said unto Noah, Come thou and all thy house into the ark; for thee have I seen righteous before me in this generation. **Of every clean beast thou shalt take to thee by sevens, the male and his female: and of beasts that are not clean by two, the male and his female.** Of fowls also of the air by sevens, the male and the female; to keep seed alive upon the face of all the earth. (Genesis 7:1-3)

JESUS IS HERE

Notice how this is only the seventh chapter of the first book of the Bible. Our Father didn't give us a list of the clean and unclean animals until the third book of the Bible. We bring this up, for this is something we should be having in the back of our minds as we read this book. Now we need to look at something else about Noah's sons.

And the sons of Noah, that went forth of the ark, were Shem, and Ham, and Japheth: and Ham is the father of Canaan. **These are the three sons of Noah: and of them was the whole earth over- spread.**
(Genesis 9:18–19)

Let us use e-Sword, an online Bible concordance, so that we can break down what this verse shows. We are hearing that these three sons overspread the entire earth. The word *overspread* is “H5310 nâphats naw-fats'm. A primitive root; to dash to pieces, or scatter:—be beaten in sunder, break (in pieces), broken, dash (in pieces), **cause to be discharged, dispersed, be overspread, scatter.**” These three souls covered the entire earth. Remember man became a living soul? This all ties in with many people being as one man or one man as many people. These spirits of the Bible are a lot bigger than we are. Remember, we are only in their image. By the time we get to the end, it should make a lot more sense to all.

Now we will jump back into the topic of believing. Let us look at Jonah 3:1–10.

And the word of the Lord came unto Jonah the second time, saying, Arise, go unto Nineveh, that great city, and preach unto it the preaching that I bid thee. So Jonah arose, and went unto Nineveh, according to the word of the Lord. Now Nineveh was an exceeding great city of three days' journey. And Jonah began to enter into the city a day's journey, and he cried, and said, Yet forty days, and Nineveh shall be overthrown. **So the people of Nineveh believed**

God, and proclaimed a fast, and put on sackcloth, from the greatest of them even to the least of them.

For word came unto the king of Nineveh, and he arose from his throne, and he laid his robe from him, and covered him with sackcloth, and sat in ashes. And he caused it to be proclaimed and published through Nineveh by the decree of the king and his nobles, saying, Let neither man nor beast, herd nor flock, taste any thing: let them not feed, nor drink water: But let man and beast be covered with sackcloth, and cry mightily unto God: yea, let them turn every one from his evil way, and from the violence that is in their hands. Who can tell if God will turn and repent, and turn away from his fierce anger, that we perish not?

And God saw their works, that they turned from their evil way; and God repented of the evil, that he had said that he would do unto them; and he did it not.

As we showed you all in the last book, the city of Nineveh covers the entire earth, so I will not show all of the explanation of that, but I will show a bit. Remember what Jesus tells us in John 4:23–24.

But the hour cometh, and now is, when the true worshippers shall worship the Father in spirit and in truth: for the Father seeketh such to worship him.

God is a Spirit: and they that worship him must worship him in spirit and in truth.

The earth took three days for our Father to finish. The spirit of Jonas was commanded to warn the entire earth that our Father was going to overthrow it. Notice how the people of this time believed God and proclaimed a fast and put on sackcloth. This is not because they took God's name in vain, nor did they believe that He would change. However, they did believe that maybe our Father would have

JESUS IS HERE

mercy on them, and they hoped that He would repent of the evil our Father had planned.

Now we need to listen to a couple of times that Jesus mentions how important it is to believe.

I am come in my Father's name, and ye receive me not: if another shall come in his own name, him ye will receive. How can ye believe, which receive honour one of another, and seek not the honour that cometh from God only? Do not think that I will accuse you to the Father: there is one that accuseth you, even Moses, in whom ye trust. **For had ye believed Moses, ye would have believed me; for he wrote of me. But if ye believe not his writings, how shall ye believe my word.** (John 5:43–47)

These words spake Jesus, and lifted up his eyes to heaven, and said, Father, the hour is come; glorify thy Son, that thy Son also may glorify thee: As thou hast given him power over all flesh, that he should give eternal life to as many as thou hast given him. And this is life eternal, **that they might know thee the only true God, and Jesus Christ, whom thou hast sent.** I have glorified thee on the earth: I have finished the work which thou gavest me to do. And now, O Father, glorify thou me with thine own self with the glory which I had with thee before the world was. I have manifested thy name unto the men which thou gavest me out of the world: thine they were, and thou gavest them me; and they have kept thy word. Now they have known that all things whatsoever thou hast given me are of thee. For I have given unto them the words which thou gavest me; and they have received them, and have known surely that I came out from

DAVID JENKINS

thee, and they have believed that thou didst send me.
(John 17:1–8)

When you put these few verses with what Jesus tells us in the book of John.

Jesus therefore answered and said unto them, Murmur not among yourselves. No man can come to me, except the Father which hath sent me draw him: and I will raise him up at the last day. It is written in the prophets, And they shall be all taught of God. Every man therefore that hath heard, and hath learned of the Father, com- eth unto me. Not that any man hath seen the Father, save he which is of God, he hath seen the Father. (John 6:43–46)

We can hear right away that if we do not know our Father, there is absolutely no chance we are going to be given to Jesus. Or better said, we are not going to have the spirit of the son of God rise within our own bodies.

Remember that our Father is working works that no man will believe.

Behold ye among the heathen, and regard, and wonder marvelously: for I will work a work in your days which ye will not believe, though it be told you.
(Habakkuk 1:5)

Behold, ye despisers, and wonder, and perish: for I work a work in your days, a work which ye shall in no wise believe, though a man declare it unto you.
(Acts 13:41)

These two verses alone should tell all that we need to try to understand what God our Father is doing.

JESUS IS HERE

I know there are lot of people that believe that if they believe this man came and died on the cross, then that is all they must believe. But what is that really believing? Is that believing that you are justified in all of your works? Or is that believing that this man died so that everybody, including yourself, could learn what our Father wants from us? As our Father had me show in the last book, everybody is part of the son of God and not just one person as you or me. We are all in this together and not just you and the people around you. If you believe that Jesus dying on the cross is all that you need to believe, then just listen to this one verse.

For the preaching of the cross is to them that perish foolishness; but unto us which are saved it is the power of God. (1 Corinthians 1:18)

As our Father had me show in the last book, everybody on this planet carries the cross from the time they come out of the womb until they die. We all bleed the same one blood.

And hath made of one blood all nations of men for to dwell on all the face of the earth, and hath determined the times before appointed, and the bounds of their habitation. (Acts 17:26)

Have we not all one father? hath not one God created us? why do we deal treacherously every man against his brother, by profaning the covenant of our fathers? (Malachi 2:10)

Now this does not mean that you should believe that there are some that are doing better or worse of what our Father's will is. Let us listen to what Jesus said if we think we know whether or not someone is doing the will of God.

DAVID JENKINS

But what think ye? A certain man had two sons; and he came to the first, and said, Son, go work to day in my vineyard. He answered and said, I will not: but afterward he repented, and went. And he came to the second, and said likewise. And he answered and said, I go, sir: and went not. Whether of them twain did the will of his father? They say unto him, **The first. Jesus saith unto them, Verily I say unto you, That the publicans and the harlots go into the kingdom of God before you.** (Matthew 21:28–31)

This does not mean that believing people that live in different areas of the world are loved by God more or less than others. This does not mean that some people make up the one body of Christ. This does not mean that because someone has a different skin color than you, that they are not part of the son of God. It does not matter what color, race, or nationality someone is. It does not matter what size or shape someone is. It does not matter what someone has done, doing, or will do, they still have the same blood as you do. They breathe the same air you do, and they walk on the same type of ground as you do.

It is not believing that our Father changed just so people could go about their day ignoring Him and not trying to get to know who He is and what He is all about because you have better things to do or you just don't have time for Him. Let us listen to what our Father tells us in Malachi 3:6, "For I am the Lord, **I change not**; therefore ye sons of Jacob are not consumed." This is actually telling us that if our Father made a commandment, this commandment will *never* change. Now I know that there are a lot of people that believe that Jesus changed the laws of God, and to that I say that this is only because you don't truly want to find out what it will do to your life if you have to actually try to learn of and try to obey of what our Father has said. Who benefits when the laws of God change? Do you realize that Jesus was an example for us and not a changer of God?

JESUS IS HERE

For even hereunto were ye called: because Christ also suffered for us, **leaving us an example, that ye should follow his steps:** Who did no sin, neither was guile found in his mouth: Who, when he was reviled, reviled not again; when he suffered, he threatened not; but committed himself to him that judgeth righteously: Who his own self bare our sins in his own body on the tree, that we, being dead to sins, should live unto righteousness: by whose stripes ye were healed. For ye were as sheep going astray; but are now returned unto the Shepherd and Bishop of your souls. (1 Peter 2:21–25)

Are not Jesus and our Father one?

My Father, which gave them me, is greater than all; and no man is able to pluck them out of my Father's hand. **I and my Father are one.** (John 10:29–30)

Now if the Father and Jesus are one, then why in the world would Jesus try to change Him? Jesus is all about the Father and everything that He is for. He knew and knows without a doubt that our Father is perfect, righteous, and justified in all His works in which our Father has ever done, is doing, and will ever do.

This is where you need to ask yourself, what spirit is telling you that our Father changed His ways just so you do not have to change yours? It is not our Father. If you remember from the last book our Father had me write, it showed that the laws, ruling, judgments, testimonies, commandments, and such are a mixture of laws, ruling, and commandments for man, the soul inside man, Jesus, the kings of the Old Testament, and Satan. If you remember, we showed you that you are the house of God in which houses all these spirits. Which spirit is it that you believe?

At this time, we feel that we need to show an entire chapter in Hebrews, and as you read through this, ask yourself if these people thought to change the ways of God.

1 Now faith is the substance of things hoped for, the evidence of things not seen. 2 For by it the elders obtained a good report. 3 Through faith we understand that the worlds were framed by the word of God, so that things which are seen were not made of things which do appear. 4 By faith Abel offered unto God a more excellent sacrifice than Cain, by which he obtained witness that he was righteous, God testifying of his gifts: and by it he being dead yet speaketh. 5 By faith Enoch was translated that he should not see death; and was not found, because God had translated him: for before his translation he had this testimony, that he pleased God. 6 **But without faith it is impossible to please him: for he that cometh to God must believe that he is, and that he is a rewarder of them that diligently seek him.** 7 By faith Noah, being warned of God of things not seen as yet, moved with fear, prepared an ark to the saving of his house; by the which he condemned the world, and became heir of the righteousness which is by faith. 8 By faith Abraham, when he was called to go out into a place which he should after receive for an inheritance, obeyed; and he went out, not knowing whither he went. 9 By faith he sojourned in the land of promise, as in a strange country, dwelling in tabernacles with Isaac and Jacob, the heirs with him of the same promise: 10 For he looked for a city which hath foundations, whose builder and maker is God. 11 Through faith also Sara herself received strength to conceive seed, and was delivered of a child when she was past age, because she judged him faithful who had

JESUS IS HERE

prom-ised. 12 Therefore sprang there even of one, and him as good as dead, so many as the stars of the sky in multitude, and as the sand which is by the sea shore innumerable. 13 These all died in faith, not having received the promises, but having seen them afar off, and were persuaded of them, and embraced them, and confessed that they were strangers and pilgrims on the earth. 14 For they that say such things declare plainly that they seek a country. 15 And truly, if they had been mindful of that country from whence they came out, they might have had opportunity to have returned. 16 But now they desire a better country, that is, an heavenly: wherefore God is not ashamed to be called their God: for he hath prepared for them a city. 17 By faith Abraham, when he was tried, offered up Isaac: and he that had received the promises offered up his only begotten son, 18 Of whom it was said, That in Isaac shall thy seed be called: 19 Accounting that God was able to raise him up, even from the dead; from whence also he received him in a figure. 20 By faith Isaac blessed Jacob and Esau concerning things to come. 21 By faith Jacob, when he was a dying, blessed both the sons of Joseph; and worshipped, leaning upon the top of his staff. 22 By faith Joseph, when he died, made mention of the departing of the children of Israel; and gave commandment concerning his bones. 23 By faith Moses, when he was born, was hid three months of his parents, because they saw he was a proper child; and they were not afraid of the king's commandment. 24 By faith Moses, when he was come to years, refused to be called the son of Pharaoh's daughter; 25 Choosing rather to suffer affliction with the people of God, than to enjoy the pleasures of sin for a season; 26 Esteeming the reproach of Christ greater riches than the treasures in Egypt: for he had

respect unto the recompence of the reward. 27 By faith he forsook Egypt, not fearing the wrath of the king: for he endured, as seeing him who is invisible. 28 Through faith he kept the passover, and the sprinkling of blood, lest he that destroyed the firstborn should touch them. 29 By faith they passed through the Red sea as by dry land: which the Egyptians assaying to do were drowned. 30 By faith the walls of Jericho fell down, after they were compassed about seven days. 31 By faith the harlot Rahab perished not with them that believed not, when she had received the spies with peace. 32 And what shall I more say? for the time would fail me to tell of Gedeon, and of Barak, and of Samson, and of Jephthae; of David also, and Samuel, and of the prophets: 33 Who through faith subdued kingdoms, wrought righteousness, obtained promises, stopped the mouths of lions. 34 Quenched the violence of fire, escaped the edge of the sword, out of weakness were made strong, waxed valiant in fight, turned to flight the armies of the aliens. 35 Women received their dead raised to life again: and others were tortured, not accepting deliverance; that they might obtain a better resurrection: 36 And others had trial of cruel mockings and scourgings, yea, moreover of bonds and imprisonment: 37 They were stoned, they were sawn asunder, were tempted, were slain with the sword: they wandered about in sheepskins and goatskins; being destitute, afflicted, tormented; 38 (Of whom the world was not worthy:) they wandered in deserts, and in mountains, and in dens and caves of the earth. 39 And these all, having obtained a good report through faith, received not the promise: 40 God having provided some better thing for us, that they without us should not be made perfect. (Hebrews 11:1–40)

JESUS IS HERE

Notice in verse 6 that without faith, it impossible to please Him: “But without faith it is impossible to please him: for he that cometh to God must believe that he is, **and that he is a rewarder of them that diligently seek him.**” This is not telling us that we should seek someone else other than God. Note that all these people mentioned after this are the people of the Old Testament and not of the New Testament. This isn’t telling us to investigate the Old Testament and then go find other books that man has written to explain what it was about. It is simply telling us to seek God, and as Jesus said in John 6:45, “**It is written in the prophets, And they shall be all taught of God. Every man therefore that hath heard, and hath learned of the Father, cometh unto me.**” These are the words of Jesus himself; he is saying that if you do not learn of the Father in the Old Testament, you’re not coming to Jesus. If you will recall in the last book, we showed you all that it is the spirit of Jesus that our Father raises up inside of us.

That comes from a fear of our Father.

For, behold, the day cometh, that shall burn as an oven; and all the proud, yea, and all that do wickedly, shall be stubble: and the day that cometh shall burn them up, saith the Lord of hosts, that it shall leave them neither root nor branch. 2 **But unto you that fear my name shall the Sun of righteousness arise with healing in his wings; and ye shall go forth, and grow up as calves of the stall.** 3 And ye shall tread down the wicked; for they shall be ashes under the soles of your feet in the day that I shall do this, saith the Lord of hosts. 4 Remember ye the law of Moses my servant, which I commanded unto him in Horeb for all Israel, with the statutes and judgments. 5 Behold, I will send you Elijah the prophet before the coming of the great and dreadful day of the Lord: 6 And he shall turn the heart of the fathers to the children, and

the heart of the children to their fathers, lest I come
and smite the earth with a curse. (Malachi 4:1–6)

“By mercy and truth iniquity is purged: **and by the fear of the Lord men depart from evil.** Remember faith comes by hearing the word of God so I ask that read verse two out loud and listen to what you read and hear the son of righteousness” (Proverbs 16:6). “**So then faith cometh by hearing, and hearing by the word of God**” (Romans 10:17).

Now I have been asked by people why we should fear our Father? And the simple answer is believing that He is the one that can make life easy or hard. Believing that our Father has control over everything, every minute of every day. Now my faith has grown to be the size of the entire earth, and yes, it did grow from something less than the size of a mustard seed. I want to explain this a bit, for it does have a lot to do with me believing. As I told you all in the last book, I wouldn’t even talk about the Bible before I was forty-one years old because I did not understand it. I was called by our Father in an odd way. I tuned into a radio talk show that was talking about rapture, which they thought would happen in a few months. I decided to investigate this concept a little further, for I had never heard of such a thing. I first got on YouTube to see all these areas of the Bible that people were talking about and went and bought a King James Bible for myself. I looked for all the verses or passages that people were referring to. I could not see how anyone could see a rapture or any- thing like that.

So, I made a few videos on what I could see and understand by the same verses that a lot of people were using. It was a couple of months of that, and then I felt that I needed to read the Bible from the very beginning. Now this is the very first time that I read the Bible from the front to back, and there were three things that caught my attention in the Old Testament. Now remember this is shortly after I came out of a nine-year relationship with a woman that had a child when we met, and we had one child together. This was my fifth child—in which at that time, I didn’t have much contact with any of my other

JESUS IS HERE

children. I can remember as if it was just yesterday—as I am reading the Bible, I come across Leviticus 26:18–28.

And if ye will not yet for all this hearken unto me, then I will punish you seven times more for your sins. And I will break the pride of your power; and I will make your heaven as iron, and your earth as brass: And your strength shall be spent in vain: for your land shall not yield her increase, neither shall the trees of the land yield their fruits. And if ye walk contrary unto me, and will not hearken unto me; I will bring seven times more plagues upon you according to your sins. **I will also send wild beasts among you, which shall rob you of your children,** and destroy your cattle, and make you few in number; and your high ways shall be desolate. And if ye will not be reformed by me by these things, but will walk contrary unto me; Then will I also walk contrary unto you, and will punish you yet seven times for your sins. And I will bring a sword upon you, that shall avenge the quarrel of my covenant: and when ye are gathered together within your cities, I will send the pestilence among you; and ye shall be delivered into the hand of the enemy. And when I have broken the staff of your bread, ten women shall bake your bread in one oven, and they shall deliver you your bread again by weight: and ye shall eat, and not be satisfied. And if ye will not for all this hearken unto me, but walk contrary unto me; Then I will walk contrary unto you also in fury; and I, even I, will chastise you seven times for your sins.

Now I must do an update here. I showed you all this one above, but I forgot to mention the one that caught my attention more than the first. **“Thy sons and thy daughters shall be given unto another people,** and thine eyes shall look, and fail with longing for them all the

day long; and there shall be no might in thine hand” (Deuteronomy 28:32). I truly feel that this one in Deuteronomy is the one that caught my attention the most. All of my children had been given to other men, and I was cast pretty much out of their lives. I will not give the details on that, but with all five of my children, there has been at least a one-year gap within our relationships.

Oh my gosh, I have been through several things in my life and have had all five children taken from me. These were the thoughts that were going through my head at the very time I was reading this, and yes, it still connects today. I knew right then and there that this wasn't just about the people of the past. It was about me. I believed—and still believe with all of my heart, soul, and mind—that the Old Testament is about us living today and not just about the people of the past. As I continue reading, I notice a couple other spots that just didn't seem right if this Old Testament was only for those of the past.

And the Lord shall scatter thee among all people, from the one end of the earth even unto the other; and there thou shalt serve other gods, which neither thou nor thy fathers have known, even wood and stone. **And among these nations shalt thou find no ease, neither shall the sole of thy foot have rest: but the Lord shall give thee there a trembling heart, and failing of eyes, and sorrow of mind:** And thy life shall hang in doubt before thee; and thou shalt fear day and night, and shalt have none assurance of thy life. (Deuteronomy 28:64–66)

Now picture this in your minds: I am sitting there reading this and have already read and felt that the Bible was about the people of today and not just the past, and then I come upon this. This was in 2011 and had just about a year and half since I had tried to take my own life, for I was tired of failing at—at that time, seemed to be—everything I tried. I wore glasses and still wear glasses as of today. I can see fairly well, and my eyes are not all that bad, but I am required

JESUS IS HERE

to wear them when I drive. I have failing eyesight; it is not twenty-twenty. Can you see how this was connecting with me and not just the people of the past?

Now I come across another spot in the Bible that seemed to connect but not as much as the first two. **“And I also have given you cleanness of teeth in all your cities,** and want of bread in all your places: yet have ye not returned unto me, saith the Lord” (Amos 4:6). At the time of reading this, my thought was that the people from thousands of years ago did not have a way to clean their teeth. Today we have all ways imaginable to whiten our teeth. This just seemed to really stick out in my mind as another way of showing that this is about us and not just the people of the past.

That is how I got to the point of believing what I believe today; it wasn't because I felt I needed to go and get a bunch of books explaining what the Bible meant. It wasn't me believing that once I got to the New Testament that I no longer needed the Old Testament. It wasn't me believing that I have read the Bible once and now I can just go about my life and everything will be okay. It was about me believing that my life was in this humongous book, and I wanted to know more. There was only one place that this book could tell me more, and it is the book itself. That is how I have gotten to know my Father and will continue to get to know my Father even more each day of my life.

Yes, there was a time I did watch and listen to other Bible scholars and theologians, but what they taught was not connecting of what I could hear and see in the same Bible. This was before I was baptized with the Holy Ghost. It didn't make sense on how they could not see or hear what I could. Same Bible, same verses, same words, but I could see and hear something completely different from what they could. Well, of course this just made me desire to seek the truth in the Bible further.

Then after believing that I could only find the truth from the Bible, and Bible only, I got to the point of believing the words of Moses, and yes, I did everything in my power to try to obey everything that Moses commanded. At this time, I did not know that the

unclean things listed in Leviticus 11 was the forbidden fruit from the tree in the midst of the garden, but I knew that if our perfect Father had said not to eat of it, I trusted Him and that it was not good for me, so I did quit eating of the unclean things. Skipping a lot of details, I did—and do to this day—hear loud and clear of what Jesus tells us in John 5:45–47.

Do not think that I will accuse you to the Father: there is one that accuseth you, even Moses, in whom ye trust. For had ye believed Moses, ye would have believed me; for he wrote of me. **But if ye believe not his writings, how shall ye believe my words?**

Now it wasn't just Moses that I listened to, however, I listened to the prophets of the Old Testament. Because I believed that all the Bible was or is about our lives today and not just a book of the people of the past. I got to the point of believing what I heard in Isaiah 58:1–14.

Cry aloud, spare not, lift up thy voice like a trumpet, and shew my people their transgression, and the house of Jacob their sins. Yet they seek me daily, and delight to know my ways, as a nation that did righteousness, and forsook not the ordinance of their God: they ask of me the ordinances of justice; they take delight in approaching to God. Wherefore have we fasted, say they, and thou seest not? wherefore have we afflicted our soul, and thou takest no knowledge? Behold, in the day of your fast ye find pleasure, and exact all your labours. Behold, ye fast for strife and debate, and to smite with the fist of wickedness: ye shall not fast as ye do this day, to make your voice to be heard on high. Is it such a fast that I have chosen? a day for a man to afflict his soul? is it to bow down his head as a bulrush, and to spread sackcloth and ashes under

JESUS IS HERE

him? wilt thou call this a fast, and an acceptable day to the Lord? Is not this the fast that I have chosen? to loose the bands of wickedness, to undo the heavy burdens, and to let the oppressed go free, and that ye break every yoke? Is it not to deal thy bread to the hungry, and that thou bring the poor that are cast out to thy house? when thou seest the naked, that thou cover him; and that thou hide not thyself from thine own flesh? Then shall thy light break forth as the morning, and thine health shall spring forth speedily: and thy righteousness shall go before thee; the glory of the Lord shall be thy reward. Then shalt thou call, and the Lord shall answer; thou shalt cry, and he shall say, Here I am. If thou take away from the midst of thee the yoke, the putting forth of the finger, and speaking vanity; And if thou draw out thy soul to the hungry, and satisfy the afflicted soul; then shall thy light rise in obscurity, and thy darkness be as the noon day: And the Lord shall guide thee continually, and satisfy thy soul in drought, and make fat thy bones: and thou shalt be like a watered garden, and like a spring of water, whose waters fail not. And they that shall be of thee shall build the old waste places: thou shalt raise up the foundations of many generations; and thou shalt be called, The repairer of the breach, The restorer of paths to dwell in. **If thou turn away thy foot from the sabbath, from doing thy pleasure on my holy day; and call the sabbath a delight, the holy of the Lord, honourable; and shalt honour him, not doing thine own ways, nor finding thine own pleasure, nor speaking thine own words: Then shalt thou delight thyself in the Lord; and I will cause thee to ride upon the high places of the earth, and feed thee with the heritage of Jacob thy father: for the mouth of the Lord hath spoken it.**

We placed the entire chapter, for there is a very important message in here that we will cover in just a minute; but to keep on track, let us just pay attention to the area in bold. Yes, I got to the point that as soon as the sun set on Friday evening, for that is when the day begins according to the Bible. I will not show all the details in our Bibles for that is something that each person must do so that they can spiritually tell our Father they believe Him. As shown in Exodus 31:13–17.

Speak thou also unto the children of Israel, saying, **Verily my sabbaths ye shall keep: for it is a sign between me and you throughout your generations;** that ye may know that I am the Lord that doth sanctify you. 14 Ye shall keep the sabbath therefore; for it is holy unto you: every one that defileth it shall surely be put to death: for who-soever doeth any work therein, that soul shall be cut off from among his people. 15 Six days may work be done; but in the seventh is the sabbath of rest, holy to the Lord: whosoever doeth any work in the sabbath day, he shall surely be put to death. 16 Wherefore the children of Israel shall keep the sabbath, to observe the sabbath throughout their generations, for a perpetual covenant. 17 **It is a sign between me and the children of Israel for ever:** for in six days the Lord made heaven and earth, and on the seventh day he rested, and was refreshed.

Quick sidenote here: notice how in verses 14 and 15 that a person shall be cut off and/or put to death. Remember how we showed in the last book that the putting to death in the Old Testament is a spiritual death. They are the same thing: if you are cut off from working with our Father, then that is the same thing as being put to death. Your heart still pumps the same blood, and you will still be breathing.

I got to the point that I would come home from work on Fridays, and as soon as the sun would set, I would start listening to the

JESUS IS HERE

Bible online and would not stop listening till I went to bed. I got up Saturday morning and immediately started listening to the Bible again. I would listen until the sun would set on Saturday evening. I had that same desire as Jesus did and does to be obedient to every word that proceedeth out of the mouth of God.

This was me allowing the spirit of Moses to “lead me out of Egypt,” just as it is described in the Old Testament. Yes, this world still lives in Egypt, and yes, Egypt covers the entire earth. Now just listen to what our Father is saying in **Isaiah 19:3**, “**And the spirit of Egypt shall fail in the midst thereof; and I will destroy the counsel thereof: and they shall seek to the idols, and to the charmers, and to them that have familiar spirits, and to the wizards.**” Now we need to listen to **Jeremiah 46:8**, “**Egypt riseth up like a flood, and his waters are moved like the rivers; and he saith, I will go up, and will cover the earth; I will destroy the city and the inhabitants thereof.**” When we truly listen here, we can hear that Egypt is a spirit and is a he. And he covers the entire earth and is water as a flood. Remember this is all spiritual workings. Therefore, Jesus tells us that we need to **believe** the writings of Moses. So yes, if Egypt is a he and covers the entire earth, we can know that this is one of the kings of the Old Testament that has dominion over our bodies as we showed in the last book. And if we do come out of Egypt, we need to stay on that path, or our Father will lead us right back into Egypt.

We feel a need to place the second half of Deuteronomy 1 so we can truly hear what happens if and when we do not trust our Father to lead us all the way to the end.

And I commanded you at that time all the things which ye should do. And when we departed from Horeb, we went through all that great and terrible wilderness, which ye saw by the way of the mountain of the Amorites, as the Lord our God commanded us; and we came to Kadeshbarnea. And I said unto you, Ye are come unto the mountain of the Amorites, which the Lord our God doth give unto us. Behold,

the Lord thy God hath set the land before thee: go up and possess it, as the Lord God of thy fathers hath said unto thee; fear not, neither be discouraged. And ye came near unto me every one of you, and said, We will send men before us, and they shall search us out the land, and bring us word again by what way we must go up, and into what cities we shall come. And the saying pleased me well: and I took twelve men of you, one of a tribe: And they turned and went up into the mountain, and came unto the valley of Eshcol, and searched it out. And they took of the fruit of the land in their hands, and brought it down unto us, and brought us word again, and said, It is a good land which the Lord our God doth give us. Notwithstanding ye would not go up, but rebelled against the commandment of the Lord your God: And ye murmured in your tents, and said, Because the Lord hated us, he hath brought us forth out of the land of Egypt, to deliver us into the hand of the Amorites, to destroy us. Whither shall we go up? our brethren have discouraged our heart, saying, The people is greater and taller than we; the cities are great and walled up to heaven; and moreover we have seen the sons of the Anakims there. Then I said unto you, Dread not, neither be afraid of them. The Lord your God which goeth before you, he shall fight for you, according to all that he did for you in Egypt before your eyes; And in the wilderness, where thou hast seen how that the Lord thy God bare thee, as a man doth bear his son, in all the way that ye went, until ye came into this place. Yet in this thing ye did not believe the Lord your God, Who went in the way before you, to search you out a place to pitch your tents in, in fire by night, to shew you by what way ye should go, and in a cloud by day. And the Lord

JESUS IS HERE

heard the voice of your words, and was wroth, and sware, saying, Surely there shall not one of these men of this evil generation see that good land, which I sware to give unto your fathers. Save Caleb the son of Jephunneh; he shall see it, and to him will I give the land that he hath trodden upon, and to his children, because he hath wholly followed the Lord. Also the Lord was angry with me for your sakes, saying, Thou also shalt not go in thither. But Joshua the son of Nun, which standeth before thee, he shall go in thither: encourage him: for he shall cause Israel to inherit it. Moreover your little ones, which ye said should be a prey, and your children, which in that day had no knowledge between good and evil, they shall go in thither, and unto them will I give it, and they shall possess it. But as for you, turn you, and take your journey into the wilderness by the way of the Red sea. Then ye answered and said unto me, We have sinned against the Lord, we will go up and fight, according to all that the Lord our God commanded us. And when ye had girded on every man his weapons of war, ye were ready to go up into the hill. And the Lord said unto me, Say unto them. Go not up, neither fight; for I am not among you; lest ye be smitten before your enemies. So I spake unto you; and ye would not hear, but rebelled against the commandment of the Lord, and went presumptuously up into the hill. 44 And the Amorites, which dwelt in that mountain, came out against you, and chased you, as bees do, and destroyed you in Seir, even unto Hormah. And ye returned and wept before the Lord; **but the Lord would not hearken to your voice, nor give ear unto you.** So ye abode in Kadesh many days, according unto the days that ye abode there. (Deuteronomy 1:18–46)

Now this is an area of this book wherein we will be covering some of what our Father had me show in the last book. However, it will go more into detail. We showed how our Father had me give everything away. The reason we are covering this in detail is so our Father can show all how believing truly works. As showed in the first book, our Father woke me up on my forty-fifth birthday with the knowledge He had me write in the first book. I had stopped celebrating b-days and all holidays, some years before this. I do not remember how many years, but I do know that I stopped because I believed that our Father was and is perfect in everything He has ever done or said, is doing, and will do. He never gives a commandment of celebrating holidays and such, so I trusted Him and believed that I didn't need or want any kind of celebration of these days. After I realized that our Father had given me a very great gift on my b-day, and that gift came from above and not from man, I became a Bible junky if you will.

About two months after He had me write the first book, my wife, by man's definition, left me. Well, about two months after, it was published in April of 2015. My heart was breaking again, and after weeping for about a week, I received a commandment to just follow her and love her with everything I had to offer. I immediately called into work and told them I had to quit in a week even though I had just started working there a couple weeks before this. I made decent money, about \$1,200 a week. I quit that job and moved to where she was. I did not move in with her, for I knew this was going to take time. It took a couple of days, but I did find a reasonable apartment and started a job search. I found a job in a factory, making just over \$9 an hour. I was bringing home about \$280 a week. Quite the pay difference, but I believed that our Father had given me a commandment to "just go love your wife." He did not say get a good-paying job, nor did He say just think about doing this. He commanded me to "just go and love your wife." Nothing else mattered, for I was doing what I was being commanded to do.

Then Peter and the other apostles answered and said,
We ought to obey God rather than men. (Acts 5:29)

JESUS IS HERE

Yes, I was being ridiculed by everybody I knew for what I was doing—and even my wife when I contacted her and told her what I had been commanded.

I want to show something that happened while I was working at this factory. At this time in my life, I am all about God and what He is doing. And yes, He was all I could think about. I was at work one evening, and a couple of women seemed to be really interested in how our Father had me write the first book. I kept telling them about it, and then all of a sudden, the supervisor came to me and said one of the women were complaining about how I was talking about God. He asked me not to talk to her anymore. I said okay and went on doing my job. A few minutes later, I chuckled and said within myself that I will be hated by all. I didn't give it much thought but knew that I would look it up once I got home. **“And ye shall be hated of all men for my name's sake: but he that endureth to the end shall be saved”** (Matthew 10:22). I laugh now, but that night when I got home and saw this, I told our Father that I was not going to do this. Needless to say, that was only a feeling I had for a short while. I was truly fascinated, for everything the Bible said was coming to pass.

After a few weeks of talking with my wife, she started to understand, and things started to go well for a while. Everything that she couldn't stand at the time she left, I changed and started doing the complete opposite. We were building a good relationship for about six months. She stayed with her family, and I stayed in my apartment. Then things turned sour. What I mean is now she complained about all the things I changed for her. It was like no matter what I did, I was wrong. This is when our Father put on my conscience about hearing the word of God. **“So then faith cometh by hearing, and hearing by the word of God”** (Romans 10:17). So, I started with Genesis and listened to the Bible online for the first time.

Oh yes, it seemed so much more exciting than reading, and I seemed to comprehend it a little better. I started hearing things like “tell them you are their sign in the book of Ezekiel 12:11.” **“Say, I am your sign: like as I have done, so shall it be done unto them: they shall remove and go into captivity.”** This really caught my attention.

I felt strongly that our Father was telling me to do this right now. So, I did and sent out messages on Facebook to all on my friends list. I did not know what it meant at the time; however, I just knew our Father was giving me a commandment. I continued to listen to the Bible, and then I started to hear certain things like “take no food or drink, nor script for your journey.” After a month or so of this is when our Father led me out into the wilderness to be baptized with the Holy Ghost.

Now we must get sidetracked here for a few minutes. In the last book, our Father had me show that and say that I am your sign. And I just showed above of what I heard, so now our Father is making me feel that I need to show in the scriptures as to why I feel I am your sign of the end of the world. First and foremost, the first time I listened to the Bible, this almost made the hair on the back of my neck stand. I paused the Bible and immediately said within myself, you have got to be kidding. I hit rewind and listened to it over and over and just started knowing how deeply I felt that this was personally talking to me. Just another small taste of the power of God. Now we are going to skip a couple of years of me intensely listening to the complete Bible over and over. In the last book, we mentioned that looking for signs like asteroids and such keeps us from doing the two greatest commandments.

Master, which is the great commandment in the law? Jesus said unto him, **Thou shalt love the Lord thy God with all thy heart, and with all thy soul, and with all thy mind. This is the first and great commandment. And the second is like unto it, Thou shalt love thy neighbour as thyself. On these two commandments hang all the law and the prophets.**
(Matthew 22:36–40)

So here is where we realize how looking for these things distracts us from following these commandments. Who are you looking out for when you look for these things? Are you watching these things so much that you disregard the entire Bible and only look for

JESUS IS HERE

prophecies to be fulfilled? Are you hearing that engrafted word that can save your soul? Or are you more worried about surviving when all hell breaks loose? The entire Bible is about loving and helping others more than yourself. Listen to a little of Psalm 74:1–4.

O God, why hast thou cast us off for ever? why doth thine anger smoke against the sheep of thy pasture? Remember thy congregation, which thou hast purchased of old; the rod of thine inheritance, which thou hast redeemed; this mount Zion, wherein thou hast dwelt. Lift up thy feet unto the perpetual desolations; even all that the enemy hath done wickedly in the sanctuary. **Thine enemies roar in the midst of thy congregations; they set up their ensigns for signs.**

Looking for these signs in which Jesus tells us are just signs of the end, but the end is not yet.

And ye shall hear of wars and rumours of wars: see that ye be not troubled: for all these things must come to pass, but the end is not yet. (Matthew 24:6)

Now we need to listen to what we are being told about what our Father will do.

And there shall come forth a rod out of the stem of Jesse, and a Branch shall grow out of his roots: And the spirit of the Lord shall rest upon him, **the spirit of wisdom and understanding, the spirit of counsel and might, the spirit of knowledge and of the fear of the Lord; And shall make him of quick understanding in the fear of the Lord: and he shall not judge after the sight of his eyes, neither reprove after the hearing of his ears:** But with righteousness

shall he judge the poor, and reprove with equity for the meek of the earth: and he shall smite the earth: with the rod of his mouth, and with the breath of his lips shall he slay the wicked. And righteousness shall be the girdle of his loins, and faithfulness the girdle of his reins. The wolf also shall dwell with the lamb, and the leopard shall lie down with the kid; and the calf and the young lion and the fatling together; and a little child shall lead them. And the cow and the bear shall feed; their young ones shall lie down together: and the lion shall eat straw like the ox. And the sucking child shall play on the hole of the asp, and the weaned child shall put his hand on the cockatrice' den. They shall not hurt nor destroy in all my holy mountain: for the earth shall be full of the knowledge of the Lord, as the waters cover the sea. **And in that day there shall be a root of Jesse, which shall stand for an ensign of the people; to it shall the Gentiles seek: and his rest shall be glorious.** And it shall come to pass in that day, that the Lord shall set his hand again the second time to recover the remnant of his people, which shall be left, from Assyria, and from Egypt, and from Pathros, and from Cush, and from Elam, and from Shinar, and from Hamath, and from the islands of the sea. **And he shall set up an ensign for the nations, and shall assemble the outcasts of Israel, and gather together the dispersed of Judah from the four corners of the earth.** (Isaiah 11:1–12)

Now when our Father was first telling me to put this in this book, I almost refused, for it made me feel as if I am saying that I am Jesus. But then our Father reminded me of Ecclesiastes 1:9–13.

**The thing that hath been, it is that which shall be;
and that which is done is that which shall be done:**

and there is no new thing under the sun. Is there any thing whereof it may be said, See, this is new? it hath been already of old time, which was before us. There is no remembrance of former things; neither shall there be any remembrance of things that are to come with those that shall come after. I the Preacher was king over Israel in Jerusalem. **And I gave my heart to seek and search out by wisdom concerning all things that are done under heaven: this sore travail hath God given to the sons of man to be exercised therewith.**

This is telling us right here: if it happened in the past, it will happen again; and if it is happening now, it happened in the past. I can say without a doubt that I am your sign for my understanding and knowledge of our Father. Even though I am a high school drop-out and didn't even look at the Bible until I was forty-one, I have the utmost confidence that I could show anyone things that they have never heard of before. That is because our Father is backing me up in everything that I do. This is why you always hear me say we feel or something of that sort. The Father and I are one. Try to remember we are going through my thought process.

Now back on the topic of believing. Now picture this in your mind if you will: I just came out of another relationship and was totally sick of living this life. I started hearing things like food or drink for your journey.”

Heal the sick, cleanse the lepers, raise the dead, cast out devils: freely ye have received, freely give. **Provide neither gold, nor silver, nor brass in your purses, Nor scrip for your journey, neither two coats, neither shoes, nor yet staves: for the workman is worthy of his meat.** (Matthew 10:8–10)

And he said unto them, **Take nothing for your journey, neither staves, nor scrip, neither bread, neither money; neither have two coats apiece.**
(Luke 9:3)

This is something I am adding, for I feel our Father is saying “show it all.” Remember, this is something that we must believe and hear in our hearts and not something we can just do so that we can do things right by our Father.

Skipping a lot of details, with me hearing these particular sections of the Bible, I was thinking, *I am going out by myself so that I can die and go to work for our Father in the spiritual world.* I was being commanded to go out into the wilderness so that I could die alone.

I was excited, for I didn’t know what I know now, so I truly believed I was going to go be with our Father and not be here on earth anymore. So, I gave everything I owned to the poor and needy.

Jesus said unto him, **If thou wilt be perfect, go and sell that thou hast, and give to the poor, and thou shalt have treasure in heaven: and come and follow me.** (Matthew 19:21)

I was truly believing, *This is what I must do so that I could become perfect, just like our Father and Jesus.* I will not give details of what I gave away, for as Jesus states in John 6, we are to give our alms in secret. I truly believed that I was going out in the wilderness to die, so I gave everything away except one pair of shoes, one pair of socks, one pair of jeans, one pair of undershorts, and two shirts, for I always wear an undershirt. I believed I was not going to be here anymore, so I listened to what the scriptures told me to do. By the way, as noted in Luke 9:3 above, scrip is money. I knew that I couldn’t take anything with me when I died, so why not give it to someone that needed the help?

But godliness with contentment is great gain. For we brought nothing into this world, and it is certain we can carry nothing out. (1 Timothy 6:6–7)

Then Job arose, and rent his mantle, and shaved his head, and fell down upon the ground, and worshipped, **And said, Naked came I out of my mother's womb, and naked shall I return thither:** the Lord gave, and the Lord hath taken away; blessed be the name of the Lord. In all this Job sinned not, nor charged God foolishly. (Job 1:20–22)

At this time, I thought I could do this on the day I choose, so I tried this on March 5, 2016. It was a Saturday evening, and I walked out about five miles from my apartment and found a somewhat secluded area and lay there till I fell asleep. I awoke around 3:00 a.m., freezing. I got up, telling our Father I failed Him, and walked back to the apartment. Carl was looking over some of the stuff I had given him, so I was able to get back into the apartment. In our conversation, I figured that maybe I needed to move out of the apartment and pay off utilities and return the cable box. So, I asked Carl for a little money back so I could do this; however, I knew I was not giving up. Come Monday, I moved everything out of my apartment in the daylight, as the scriptures said to do.

The word of the Lord also came unto me, saying, Son of man, thou dwellest in the midst of a rebellious house, which have eyes to see, and see not; they have ears to hear, and hear not: for they are a rebellious house. **Therefore, thou son of man, prepare thee stuff for removing, and remove by day in their sight; and thou shalt remove from thy place to another place in their sight: it may be they will consider, though they be a rebellious house. Then shalt thou bring forth thy stuff by day in their sight, as stuff for**

removing: and thou shalt go forth at even in their sight, as they that go forth into captivity. Dig thou through the wall in their sight, and carry out thereby. In their sight shalt thou bear it upon thy shoulders, and carry it forth in the twilight: thou shalt cover thy face, that thou see not the ground: **for I have set thee for a sign unto the house of Israel.** And I did so as I was commanded: I brought forth my stuff by day, as stuff for captivity, and in the even I digged through the wall with mine hand; I brought it forth in the twilight, and I bare it upon my shoulder in their sight. (Ezekiel 12:1–7)

That wall that we are to dig through is a spiritual wall. It is the same wall that Jesus breaks down inside of us. This wall inside us keeps us from seeing the true light of the bible, that light being our Father.

But now in Christ Jesus ye who sometimes were far off are made nigh by the blood of Christ. For he is our peace, who hath made both one, and hath broken down the middle wall of partition between us. (Ephesians 2:13–14)

Are you starting to see how I believed what I was hearing in the scriptures? Then I asked Carl if I could sleep in his car for one night until I figured out what I was going to do. I awoke from a dream on a Tuesday at 4:13 a.m. This was actually the first day of the year of the Hebraic calendar. Not showing the details and research I did for this, for this is a way of showing our Father yourself that you have a desire to be obedient. And when this happened, I was not paying attention to any calendar. This is something I realized a couple of weeks after it happened. But this was not the day I chose; however, it was on March 8–9 of 2016. In this dream, I was watching the news, and the broadcaster announced, “All those to report to duty is David Jenkins and Randy for jerry-rigging. The place that I was working at when all

this started had a guy there that was very good at jerry-rigging. So, I figured our Father does make jokes. Funny, but the owner's name was Jerry also. I knew, *This is now the time I am going out to die*. I was now staying where Carl was staying; however, I was sleeping in the car I gave him. This place was already out in the country, so I just walked out on the gravel road. As I was walking, I asked the Father to lead me to the place this was going to happen. After a couple hours of walking and daylight being broke, I found a creek that looked to lead to nowhere. I walked back about three-fourths of a mile back into the woods along this creek and set up camp there, if you will.

Okay, I mentioned in the last book that I tried to take my life in '09, right? I was doing it again, but it was different this time. Remember how we showed you all in the last book that the sacrifices that our Father likes are of a broken spirit and so forth. That was the kings and spirits making a sacrifice to get me to the Bible the last time. This time I was giving up my life on what I felt on my terms, but as the scriptures instructed. I did this with my free will.

Then the people rejoiced, **for that they offered willingly, because with perfect heart they offered willingly to the Lord:** and David the king also rejoiced with great joy. Wherefore David blessed the Lord before all the congregation: and David said, Blessed be thou, Lord God of Israel our father, for ever and ever. Thine, O Lord is the greatness, and the power, and the glory, and the victory, and the majesty: for all that is in the heaven and in the earth is thine; thine is the kingdom, O Lord, and thou art exalted as head above all. Both riches and honour come of thee, and thou reignest over all; and in thine hand is power and might; and in thine hand it is to make great, and to give strength unto all. Now therefore, our God, we thank thee, and praise thy glorious name. But who am I, and what is my people, that we should be able to offer so willingly after this sort? for all things come

of thee, and of thine own have we given thee. For we are strangers before thee, and sojourners, as were all our fathers: our days on the earth are as a shadow, and there is none abiding. O Lord our God, all this store that we have prepared to build thee an house for thine holy name cometh of thine hand, and is all thine own. I know also, my God, that thou triest the heart, and hast pleasure in uprightness. **As for me, in the uprightness of mine heart I have willingly offered all these things: and now have I seen with joy thy people, which are present here, to offer willingly unto thee.** (1 Chronicles 29:9–17)

I tried to take my life the first time, for I just couldn't stand this life anymore. Pretty much the same reason the second time, but now I was allowing our Father to take my life. But now I remembered what Jesus said.

If any man come to me, and hate not his father, and mother, and wife, and children, and brethren, and sisters, yea, and his own life also, he cannot be my disciple. (Luke 14:26)

I just knew I must be doing something right.

That was me believing the writings of Moses and me believing what the prophets wrote. And yes, believing the true sayings of Jesus. After about forty hours of being out there with no food or drink, I got to the point that I started walking back to where Carl was staying, thinking and telling the Father that I failed Him again. After this, our Father sent me to my mom's for three weeks so that I could get my head straightened out and realize that I did die—but not the death as man thinks of. I was telling everybody I talked to that we needed to repent, for the kingdom of God was at hand. I thought the world was going to end right away. I did not know what was going on.

JESUS IS HERE

We feel that we need to place just one chapter of many in which helped me understand what I just went through.

For I would that ye knew what great conflict I have for you, and for them at Laodicea, and for as many as have not seen my face in the flesh; That their hearts might be comforted, being knit together in love, and unto all riches of the full assurance of understanding, to the acknowledge- ment of the mystery of God, and of the Father, and of Christ; In whom are hid all the treasures of wisdom and knowledge. And this I say, lest any man should beguile you with enticing words. For though I be absent in the flesh, yet am I with you in the spirit, joying and beholding your order, and the stedfastness of your faith in Christ. As ye have therefore received Christ Jesus the Lord, so walk ye in him: Rooted and built up in him, and stablished in the faith, as ye have been taught, abounding therein with thanksgiving. Beware lest any man spoil you through philosophy and vain deceit, after the tradition of men, after the rudiments of the world, and not after Christ. For in him dwelleth all the fulness of the Godhead bodily. And ye are complete in him, which is the head of all principality and power: In whom also ye are circumcised with the circumcision made without hands, in putting off the body of the sins of the flesh by the circumcision of Christ: **Buried with him in baptism, wherein also ye are risen with him through the faith of the operation of God, who hath raised him from the dead. And you, being dead in your sins and the uncircum- cision of your flesh, hath he quickened together with him, having forgiven you all trespasses;** Blotting out the handwriting of ordinances that was against us, which was contrary to us, and took it out of the way, nailing it to his

cross; And having spoiled principalities and powers, he made a shew of them openly, triumphing over them in it. Let no man therefore judge you in meat, or in drink, or in respect of an holyday, or of the new moon, or of the sabbath days: Which are a shadow of things to come; but the body is of Christ. Let no man beguile you of your reward in a voluntary humility and worshipping of angels, intruding into those things which he hath not seen, vainly puffed up by his fleshly mind, And not holding the Head, from which all the body by joints and bands having nourishment ministered, and knit together, increaseth with the increase of God. **Wherefore if ye be dead with Christ from the rudiments of the world, why, as though living in the world, are ye subject to ordinances, (Touch not; taste not; handle not; Which all are to perish with the using;) after the commandments and doctrines of men? Which things have indeed a shew of wisdom in will worship, and humility, and neglecting of the body: not in any honour to the satisfying of the flesh.** (Colossians 2:1–23)

Egypt riseth up like a flood, and his waters are moved like the rivers; and he saith, I will go up, and will cover the earth; I will destroy the city and the inhabitants thereof. (Jeremiah 46:8)

This is the water in which I came out of when I was baptized by the Holy Ghost. This is when the upper grades of my schooling took place. Remember this is spiritual works that our Father is working. I was now dead but still alive. I was buried and risen with Christ. I was and am truly working with our Father one-on-one, hands-on training. Want to bring something up right here. Think about this for a minute. We just read that this world is covered with a spiritual water.

JESUS IS HERE

What happens if man is underwater for far too long? They drown and become dead, right? Now listen to Jesus in Matthew 8:20–22.

And Jesus saith unto him, The foxes have holes, and the birds of the air have nests; but the Son of man hath not where to lay his head. And another of his disciples said unto him, Lord, suffer me first to go and bury my father. **But Jesus said unto him, Follow me; and let the dead bury**

Can you now see how the dead can bury the dead?

I gave up my life of the flesh and the things of this world so that I could be with our Father, for our Father and Jesus are not of this world. During this time, one of my brothers tried to convince me to go to a hospital to seek drugs so I could stop thinking of our Father and the Bible so much. I obviously replied, “No way.” Now with my brother saying this, we need to look at a couple of things so that we can hear the damage I would have done if I would have agreed to such a thing. First and foremost, I remember thinking and telling him that he shouldn’t tempt God. “Jesus said unto him, **It is written again, Thou shalt not tempt the Lord thy God**” (Matthew 4:7). Let us look at where it is written. “**Ye shall not tempt the Lord your God, as ye tempted him in Massah**” (Deuteronomy 6:16). It wasn’t him that would have been tempting God, but rather it would have been me. I would have been telling our Father, by my spiritual works, that I needed more proof than everything that had already happened so that I would believe Him. *No, I did not* need more proof. Now because this was a statement made by my brother and not God, who would have I been trying to please?

Nevertheless among the chief rulers also many believed on him; but because of the Pharisees they did not confess him, lest they should be put out of the

synagogue: **For they loved the praise of men more than the praise of God.** (John 12:42–43)

I receive not honour from men. But I know you, that ye have not the love of God in you. I am come in my Father's name, and ye receive me not: if another shall come in his own name, him ye will receive. **How can ye believe, which receive honour one of another, and seek not the honour that cometh from God only?** (John 5:41–44)

I don't do what I do so that I can please anyone, for our Father is the one I am trying to please. If I would have went and got some drugs, I would have been blocking out the voice of our Father. I would have been putting that vail over my heart, just as most of the world has when it comes to the reading of the Old Testament.

And not as Moses, which put a veil over his face, that the children of Israel could not stedfastly look to the end of that which is abolished: **But their minds were blinded: for until this day remaineth the same vail untaken away in the reading of the Old Testament; which vail is done away in Christ.** (2 Corinthians 3:13–14)

I want to make a sidenote here. One of the things my brother said to me is that I couldn't be right with God for I smoke cigarettes. Nowhere in the Bible does it say that we cannot smoke cigarettes. Before you reading this cast a stone, just as my brother did, and think that I am wrong for smoking, let me ask you if you are without sin. It is not what goes into the mouth that defiles a man.

Then came to Jesus scribes and Pharisees, which were of Jerusalem, saying, Why do thy disciples transgress the tradition of the elders? for they wash not their hands

JESUS IS HERE

when they eat bread. But he answered and said unto them, Why do ye also transgress the commandment of God by your tradition? For God commanded, saying, Honour thy father and mother: and, He that curseth father or mother, let him die the death. But ye say, Whosoever shall say to his father or his mother, It is a gift, by whatsoever thou mightiest be profited by me; And honour not his father or his mother, he shall be free. Thus have ye made the commandment of God of none effect by your tradition. Ye hypocrites, well did Esaias prophesy of you, saying, This people draweth nigh unto me with their mouth, and honoureth me with their lips; but their heart is far from me. But in vain they do worship me, teaching for doctrines the commandments of men. And he called the multitude, and said unto them, Hear, and understand: **Not that which goeth into the mouth defileth a man; but that which cometh out of the mouth, this defileth a man.** (Matthew 15:1–11)

My smoking cigarettes does not make me love man less, nor does it make me think that anyone else's life is not just as important to our Father as mine is. These are the thoughts that man has, in which comes from the heart that defile a man. Now I want to mention something that had happened in this conversation that happened for one of the first times of many now.

When my brother was telling me this, I was smoking a cigarette, and all of a sudden it came to mind. I looked him straight in the eye and told him, "If I quit smoking so that I can live longer, then I will lose my life with the Father." This is when we need to listen to what the scriptures tell us.

But when they deliver you up, take no thought how or what ye shall speak: for it shall be given you in that same hour what ye shall speak. For it is not

ye that speak, but the Spirit of your Father which speaketh in you. (Matthew 10:19–20)

And when this happens, I can tell, for there are times that I will say something and then have to look it up to see if I spoke correctly. This is just a small example of what it means when we hear “those that save their life will lose it” is about. This will be explained in detail later in the book. For me, I could feel, see, and hear how every word of the scripture was being fulfilled to the letter, as Jesus stated on Matthew 5:17–18.

Think not that I am come to destroy the law, or the prophets: I am not come to destroy, but to fulfil. For verily I say unto you, **Till heaven and earth pass, one jot or one tittle shall in no wise pass from the law, till all be fulfilled.**

Then I was sent to my oldest brother’s place in South Dakota so that I could help a different brother with his business. I told my brother, before going, that he will not pay me. I was there for about seven weeks. I was afraid to get paid for my labor, for I wasn’t sure what was going on here; however, I remembered the scriptures telling me not to take my life back. “And Jesus said unto him, **No man, having put his hand to the plough, and looking back, is fit for the kingdom of God**” (Luke 9:62). I was not taking my life back, for I just knew something was happening. About six weeks in my stay with my brother, we had a big falling out. You guessed it; it was about the scriptures. There was no way I would say anything if the law had changed.

Now we need to bring up the forbidden fruit, as man calls it. If you all can recall, we showed in the last book that this fruit is a tree of life, and that tree is detailed in Leviticus 11. There was about eight months of me being down where I was trying to patch things up with my wife. There was a time, about six weeks before the baptism of the Holy Ghost, that I started to eat pork or swine. Not because I didn’t

believe, but rather because I was commanded to just “go and love your wife.” She did not have the same beliefs as I did; however, I was just trying to show her that I would do anything at that time. In my mind, I was only doing what our Father commanded of me. Obviously, our Father put it on my conscience to stop doing that, and shortly after that is when I got baptized by the Holy Ghost. Sidenote here: I did not know what was happening when this baptism happened. Our Father showed me several months after He did this. The reason we bring this up is because to work for our Father in the manner I am, we need to be by ourselves. “But I would have you without carefulness. **He that is unmarried careth for the things that belong to the Lord, how he may please the Lord: But he that is married careth for the things that are of the world, how he may please his wife**” (1 Corinthians 7:32–33). I am by myself, but yet I am never alone. Now I am married to God and He is the only one I want in my personal life.

Then when I was sent to my brother’s in South Dakota, about two weeks before our Father took me from there, there was one night that my brother fixed porkchops. He also did and does not believe in the manner that I do. I chose to eat this not because of me not believing, but rather because I remembered the scriptures. “And into whatsoever city ye enter, and they receive you, **eat such things as are set before you**” (Luke 10:8). So, some might ask, why? It is so that you do not make others feel as if they are doing wrong. Remember the Bible is about loving and not condemning.

Now we are going to show something that our Father has just very recently brought to my attention. There are many people that believe that Jesus was the ultimate sacrifice, and now the law is changed. Yes, Jesus did sacrifice himself, but not to change our Father’s law. To understand this better, let us listen to 1 Corinthians 10:1–33.

Moreover, brethren, I would not that ye should be ignorant, how that all our fathers were under the cloud, and all passed through the sea; And were all baptized unto Moses in the cloud and in the sea; **And did all eat the same spiritual meat; And did all drink**

the same spiritual drink: for they drank of that spiritual Rock that followed them: and that Rock was Christ. But with many of them God was not well pleased: for they were overthrown in the wilderness. Now these things were our examples, to the intent we should not lust after evil things, as they also lusted. Neither be ye idolaters, as were some of them; as it is written, The people sat down to eat and drink, and rose up to play. Neither let us commit fornication, as some of them committed, and fell in one day three and twenty thousand. Neither let us tempt Christ, as some of them also tempted, and were destroyed of serpents. Neither murmur ye, as some of them also murmured, and were destroyed of the destroyer. Now all these things happened unto them for examples: and they are written for our admonition, upon whom the ends of the world are come. Wherefore let him that thinketh he standeth take heed lest he fall. There hath no temptation taken you but such as is common to man: but God is faithful, who will not suffer you to be tempted above that ye are able; but will with the temptation also make a way to escape, that ye may be able to bear it. Wherefore, my dearly beloved, flee from idolatry. I speak as to wise men; judge ye what I say. The cup of blessing which we bless, is it not the communion of the blood of Christ? The bread which we break, is it not the communion of the body of Christ? For we being many are one bread, and one body: for we are all partakers of that one bread. Behold Israel after the flesh: are not they which eat of the sacrifices partakers of the altar? What say I then? that the idol is any thing, or that which is offered in sacrifice to idols is any thing? But I say, that the things which the Gentiles sacrifice, they sacrifice to devils, and not to God: and I would not that ye should have

JESUS IS HERE

fellowship with devils. Ye cannot drink the cup of the Lord, and the cup of devils: ye cannot be partakers of the Lord's table, and of the table of devils. Do we provoke the Lord to jealousy? are we stronger than he? All things are lawful for me, but all things are not expedient: all things are lawful for me, but all things edify not. Let no man seek his own, but every man another's wealth. Whatsoever is sold in the shambles, that eat, asking no question for conscience sake: For the earth is the Lord's, and the fulness thereof. If any of them that believe not bid you to a feast, and ye be disposed to go; whatsoever is set before you, eat, asking no question for conscience sake. **But if any man say unto you, this is offered in sacrifice unto idols, eat not for his sake that shewed it, and for conscience sake: for the earth is the Lord's, and the fulness thereof:** Conscience, I say, not thine own, but of the other: for why is my liberty judged of another man's conscience? For if I by grace be a partaker, why am I evil spoken of for that for which I give thanks? Whether therefore ye eat, or drink, or whatsoever ye do, do all to the glory of God. Give none offence, neither to the Jews, nor to the Gentiles, nor to the church of God: Even as I please all men in all things, not seeking mine own profit, but the profit of many, that they may be saved.

When some think that we can eat all things because Jesus was sacrificed, we can hear that is wrong. Jesus gave his life so that we might be saved by doing the same as him.

Now back on topic. This is when our Father severed me from all other people.

But I have said unto you, Ye shall inherit their land, and I will give it unto you to possess it, a land that

floweth with milk and honey: I am the Lord your God, **which have separated you from other people. Ye shall therefore put difference between clean beasts and unclean, and between unclean fowls and clean: and ye shall not make your souls abominable by beast, or by fowl, or by any manner of living thing that creepeth on the ground, which I have separated from you as unclean. And ye shall be holy unto me: for I the Lord am holy, and have severed you from other people, that ye should be mine.** A man also or woman that hath a familiar spirit, or that is a wizard, shall surely be put to death: they shall stone them with stones: their blood shall be upon them. (Leviticus 20:24–27)

We need to bring something up here. We have gone over how I went out into the wilderness to die so that I could be with our Father and Jesus. This was the process of David being born again. “Jesus answered and said unto him, Verily, verily, I say unto thee, Except a man be born again, he cannot see the kingdom of God” (John 3:3).

Very shortly after our Father severed me from others and placed me in the truck to be myself, He showed me—when I was listening to the Bible for about the fifth or sixth time—that this tree is a tree of life, and that tree is listed in Leviticus 11. Then He showed me what He tells us in 2 Corinthians 6:16–18.

And what agreement hath the temple of God with idols? for ye are the temple of the living God; as God hath said, **I will dwell in them, and walk in them; and I will be their God, and they shall be my people. Wherefore come out from among them, and be ye separate, saith the Lord, and touch not the unclean thing; and I will receive you. And will be a Father unto you, and ye shall be my sons and daughters, saith the Lord Almighty.**

JESUS IS HERE

Now I am to the point that I would rather die before I eat the unclean things. I always eat by myself, and I have absolutely no desire to eat the unclean things. It was the very first thing that our Father commanded us not to do, so I won't. Now if I am wrong for this, no one else suffers because of my inability to understand of what our Father is commanding of me. I am only trying to work out my own salvation as we are commanded to do. "Wherefore, my beloved, as ye have always obeyed, not as in my presence only, but now much more in my absence, **work out your own salvation with fear and trembling**" (Philippians 2:12). At the same time, I try to share what our Father has taught me, for I do know that He does not respect or favor any person.

Now we are going to show something that we showed in the last book; however, it just seems to fit in with believing. And we are going to be going through some of my life and my thought process pretty much the same I did back then, for all I do is think about our Father. I was now driving a truck and listening to the Bible, and I heard something as I was listening. I won't post the entire chapter, for it is just a few verses that really stuck out.

And David the king came and sat before the Lord, and said, **Who am I, O Lord God, and what is mine house, that thou hast brought me hitherto?** And yet this was a small thing in thine eyes, O God; for thou hast also spoken of thy servant's house for a great while to come, and hast regarded me according to the estate of a man of high degree, O Lord God. What can David speak more to thee for the honour of thy servant? for thou knowest thy servant. O Lord, for thy servant's sake, and according to thine own heart, hast thou done all this greatness, in making known all these great things. (1 Chronicles 17:16–19)

I paused the Bible immediately and asked the Father same thing. I awoke the next morning with my thoughts on a car accident that I had

when I was sixteen; it was on my conscience, heavy. This accident happened on March 28, Good Friday of 1986. I was in a coma from Friday afternoon till Monday morning, or for three days and three nights. Then He started reminding me of the date that I went out in the woods and thought I was going to die. This was me being baptized with the Holy Ghost. This baptism took place almost thirty years later to the day. On March 8–9 of 2016. I immediately remembered the scriptures and how old Jesus was when he was baptized.

Now when all the people were baptized, it came to pass, that Jesus also being baptized, and praying, the heaven was opened, And the Holy Ghost descended in a bodily shape like a dove upon him, and a voice came from heaven, which said, Thou art my beloved Son; in thee I am well pleased. **And Jesus himself began to be about thirty years of age, being (as was supposed) the son of Joseph, which was the son of Heli.** (Luke 30:21–23)

I still didn't connect anything but now am starting to remember of what I heard in the book of Ezekiel and am almost feeling as if my very own life is in the Bible. Of course, this just made me want to learn more and learn fast. And now at the same time I am also remembering the scripture in which Jesus spoke.

Then certain of the scribes and of the Pharisees answered, saying, Master, we would see a sign from thee. But he answered and said unto them, An evil and adulterous generation seeketh after a sign; and there shall no sign be given to it, but the sign of the prophet Jonas: **For as Jonas was three days and three nights in the whale's belly; so shall the Son of man be three days and, three nights in the heart of the earth.** (Matthew 12:38–40)

JESUS IS HERE

As we showed you all in the last book, our Father gives us instructions while we sleep.

For God speaketh once, yea twice, yet man perceiveth it not. **In a dream, in a vision of the night, when deep sleep falleth upon men, in slumberings upon the bed; Then he openeth the ears of men, and sealeth their instruction, That he may withdraw man from his purpose, and hide pride from man.** He keepeth back his soul from the pit, and his life from perishing by the sword. (Job 33:14–18)

Then a few weeks had went along with me listening to the Bible every day, all day long as long as I was driving. Now at the same time, I had personal stuff going on with my son. He had gotten to a point in his life that all he wanted to do is play video games and not work. He has a family with two children but would not work and always wanted money. Our Father kept reminding me of the scriptures about a person that would not work.

For even when we were with you, this we commanded you, **that if any would not work, neither should he eat. For we hear that there are some which walk among you disorderly, working not at all, but are busybodies. Now them that are such we command and exhort by our Lord Jesus Christ, that with quietness they work, and eat their own bread.** (2 Thessalonians 3:10–12)

This is the only son of mine out of four that I had and have any contact with at all. But because of my fear of God and trying everything in my power to be obedient, I stopped helping my son financially. I wouldn't even give him money for a pack of gum. I kept talking with him on the phone and such, but the funds were cut off completely, for I strongly felt our Father was commanding me to do just that until he

got a job. This went on for a couple of months, and then one day I got a call from him. He told me he just got a job and that he was going to be starting in a couple of days. He explained where he was going to be working and everything. This was great, and now I figured I could start to help him financially again, for he now has a job.

Now check this out: about an hour after my son called me and told me of the good news, I got a call from my second to oldest brother. He called and told me he was stuck at a Walmart in Colorado. He told me they had food and everything, but he wanted \$100 so that he could buy his family hot food instead of eating what they had. I immediately thought that the money our Father allows me to have goes to the poor and needy and not for the people that just want better. Then I told my brother that I would have to ask the Father, for *He* is the true owner of the money I have, and I try to do with it what He tells me to do with it. I got off the phone and was immediately reminded of some scriptures.

And it came to pass after these things, that God did tempt Abraham, and said unto him, Abraham: and he said, Behold, here I am. And he said, Take now thy son, thine only son Isaac, whom thou lovest, and get thee into the land of Moriah; and offer him there for a burnt offering upon one of the mountains which I will tell thee of. And Abraham rose up early in the morning, and saddled his ass, and took two of his young men with him, and Isaac his son, and clave the wood for the burnt offering, and rose up, and went unto the place of which God had told him. Then on the third day Abraham lifted up his eyes, and saw the place afar off. And Abraham said unto his young men, Abide ye here with the ass; and I and the lad will go yonder and worship, and come again to you. And Abraham took the wood of the burnt offering, and laid it upon Isaac his son; and he took the fire in his hand, and a knife; and they went both of them

JESUS IS HERE

together. And Isaac spake unto Abraham his father, and said, My father: and he said, Here am I, my son. And he said, Behold the fire and the wood: but where is the lamb for a burnt offering? And Abraham said, My son, God will provide himself a lamb for a burnt offering: so they went both of them together. And they came to the place which God had told him of; and Abraham built an altar there, and laid the wood in order, and bound Isaac his son, and laid him on the altar upon the wood. And Abraham stretched forth his hand, and took the knife to slay his son. And the angel of the Lord called unto him out of heaven, and said, Abraham, Abraham: and he said, Here am I. And he said, Lay not thine hand upon the lad, neither do thou any thing unto him: for now I know that thou fearest God, seeing thou hast not withheld thy son, thine only son from me. **And Abraham lifted up his eyes, and looked, and behold behind him a ram caught in a thicket by his horns: and Abraham went and took the ram, and offered him up for a burnt offering in the stead of his son.** And Abraham called the name of that place Jehovahjireh: as it is said to this day, In the mount of the Lord it shall be seen. And the angel of the Lord called unto Abraham out of heaven the second time, And said, By myself have I sworn, saith the Lord, for because thou hast done this thing, and hast not withheld thy son, thine only son: (Genesis 22:1–16)

My brother was the ram caught in a thicket by his horns. I did not send my brother money.

I am not trying to tell you all my alms, for I do try to do these in secret, as commanded in Matthew 6, but I am explaining how I believe. But, my very next load went through where my son lives, so I helped them purchase a car, for now he had a job, and he needed

reliable transportation that his entire family could be safe in. I now knew what we showed in the last book. God never commanded us to sacrifice animals and that He is not as vindictive as this world portrays Him to be. I couldn't connect it in the Bible at that time, but I now knew that I had my only son on that same altar as Abraham. We are the beast that the kings, Lords, and spirits are commanded to sacrifice, as we showed in the last book. Now I am remembering the scriptures that tell us that we will sit in the kingdom with Abraham.

And I say unto you, **That many shall come from the east and west, and shall sit down with Abraham, and Isaac, and Jacob, in the kingdom of heaven.** But the children of the kingdom shall be cast out into outer darkness: there shall be weeping and gnashing of teeth. (Matthew 8:11–12)

Now that we have brought up how I have sat with Abraham, we need to see how I have sat with Isaac, and Jacob also. Without showing all the scriptures, we think most are familiar with how Isaac blessed Jacob first even though he was younger than Esau. I am the youngest boy in the family. My sister is younger than me, but I have three older brothers. And I am despised by all three of my brothers for my knowledge and blessing I have received from our Father.

Now I know one of the first things our Father allowed me to hear after I got in the truck was Psalm 89:19–36.

Then thou spakest in vision to thy holy one, and saidst, I have laid help upon one that is mighty; I have exalted one chosen out of the people. I have found David my servant; with my holy oil have I anointed him: With whom my hand shall be established: mine arm also shall strengthen him. The enemy shall not exact upon him; nor the son of wickedness afflict him. And I will beat down his foes before his face, and plague them that hate him. But my faithfulness and my mercy

JESUS IS HERE

shall be with him: and in my name shall his horn be exalted. I will set his hand also in the sea, and his right hand in the rivers. **He shall cry unto me, Thou art my father, my God, and the rock of my salvation. Also I will make him my firstborn, higher than the kings of the earth. My mercy will I keep for him for evermore, and my covenant shall stand fast with him.** His seed also will I make to endure for ever, and his throne as the days of heaven. If his children forsake my law, and walk not in my judgments; If they break my statutes, and keep not my commandments; Then will I visit their transgression with the rod, and their iniquity with stripes. Nevertheless my lovingkindness will I not utterly take from him, nor suffer my faithfulness to fail. My covenant will I not break, nor alter the thing that is gone out of my lips. Once have I sworn by my holiness that I will not lie unto David. His seed shall endure for ever, and his throne as the sun before me.

I had to show this to my son, for our Father allowed me to hear it, and I wanted my son to hear what it said about my children. I just knew this was me because this is exactly what I do. I had been doing this for quite some time now. At this point of my life, there was absolutely no way anybody was going to convince that the Bible isn't about our very own lives today. Our Father had me write that in the first book. The Bible is one long letter on how we are to live our lives today and not about the people of the past.

It had been some time now that I have been doing this, but now I could hear that our Father would raise one man that would call on Him when he arises. "I have raised up one from the north, and he shall come: from the rising of the sun shall he call upon my name: and he shall come upon princes as upon mortar, and as the potter treadeth clay" (Isaiah 41:25). This connected strongly, for I had been doing this for some time. I don't just mean that I awake and pray. If I am awake

at 11:00 p.m. the night before, I will go to Bible Gateway to see what the verse of the day is for tomorrow. This gives me an idea of what I am going to be listening to when I awake. Wherever the verse is in the Bible, I know there is something that our Father is wanting me to hear for that day, within three chapters of the Bible surrounding that verse. When I wake up, I will listen to these three chapters at least two times. And when the next day rolls around, and the next verse of the day stays in the same area, I know that I didn't hear what I needed to hear, so I will listen to these chapters three times or maybe four. To show how real this is, I need to explain how this worked just today. Yesterday I was writing and knew that I need to show this, but I couldn't remember where it was in the Bible. I could remember what it said, but I could not remember how it was worded. So, let us listen to the verse of the day. "But they that wait upon the Lord shall renew their strength; they shall mount up with wings as eagles; they shall run, and not be weary; and they shall walk, and not faint" (Isaiah 40:31). Now this is what the verse of the day is, but notice how the area that shows how I call on our Father when I awake is in Isaiah 41.

Now I am not remembering exactly when this happened, but I do know for certain that I hadn't been in the truck very long. Before we dive into this, we need to do a little bit of background on myself. This goes back to 2003 or 2004. I was with Cathy, the mother of my daughter that has my granddaughters in which is my mom and dad as one flesh. This was explained in the last book as well. I was driving for a local concrete company at the time. I had finished my shift one day with my odometer ending with 777. I got home from work that day and told Cathy that I really felt that I needed to go to the casino. Now we will pause, for I know there are many that think that going to a casino is wrong. As we showed in the last book, everybody on the planet makes up the one son of God. So let us remind you of this.

In the beginning was the Word, and the Word was with God, and the Word was God. The same was in the beginning with God. **All things were made by**

him; and without him was not any thing made that was made. (John 1:1–3)

The casinos belong to our Father and are also for the son of God. So, to go on, it was the spring season, and the hours were pretty short at work. Cathy was running a home daycare but did not have that many children at the time. We were almost two months behind on rent of \$650 a month and over a month behind on utilities. I told Cathy that I would only take a hundred dollars and just see what happens, for I strongly felt I needed to go. That hundred dollars was not going to pay the bills as needed, but if something good happened at the casino, then we could pay our bills. These were the thoughts going through my head as I was heading to the casino. I went to one slot machine, played for a bit, and lost \$65 of the \$100 and figured, well, maybe nothing was going to happen. So, I cashed out and started walking to the exit, when all of a sudden, I figured, “Hey, I came with \$100, and I may as well try the \$1 Wheel of Fortune slot with the remaining \$35.” I stuck my \$35 dollars in and played max credits. I spun once, and nothing hit. I spun the second time and hit \$1,000. I stepped back and said, “You have got to be kidding.” I stepped up and spun it a few more times, getting it up to around \$1,670. I spun a few more times, and it got down to \$1,600. I stopped and said to myself, “The bills are paid.” I cashed out and went home. We had no way of paying the bills before this. Now we were caught up with a couple hundred extra in our pockets. And that got us through till the hours picked up at work.

Now I know that we are really getting off track here, but I truly feel our Father is telling me to tell of a couple things that have happened to show some things that He did so that I could also know something miraculous was happening. This was shortly after I had read the Bible for the first time. I had taken my daughter to Macon, Missouri, for a weekend visit with my mom. We were leaving to go back to Iowa. My daughter was in the car; my mom was watching at the door. The screen door was closed. I had my door open and was just about to sit in the car, and all of a sudden, the globe off the porch light fell. I

instantly thought that this was very weird, for there was no movement around that door for at least three to four minutes. Erin and I got the glass and everything cleaned up for my mom so that she wouldn't have to worry about stepping on broken glass. This took about fifteen minutes or so. Now as we were driving back to Iowa, we were going up US 27 when a cop car blew by us with his lights and sirens blasting. My daughter's comment was "Wow, he is going fast." Then about two or three minutes later, another goes by with just his lights going, but he seemed to be going faster than the first. Obviously, my daughter commented on how he was going faster than the last. I told her, "There must be an accident or something somewhere." We get to US 92 and headed east, for this was the way we were taking to Davenport. We went about four or five miles and were now seeing where these police were heading. When we got to the scene, the ambulance was just getting there. There was a pickup that had sideswiped something, like a Blazer or something like that. My daughter told me there were three vehicles involved, but I only remember two. Now I can't say for certain, but if we would have not taken the time to clean up that glass from the globe at my mom's, we would have been a lot closer to that accident, if not involved. Coincidence? I think not.

Then it was just a couple of weeks later that I was driving to Kankakee, Illinois, to get certified for advance open-water scuba diving. I am a certified scuba diver, but this would allow me to dive deeper to stay within regulations. I had just gotten off work on a Friday evening. This was taking place just shortly after our Father had called me to the Bible, so I wasn't observing the Sabbath at that time. I was still in darkness. **"For ye were sometimes darkness, but now are ye light in the Lord: walk as children of light"** (Ephesians 5:8). It was dark out, and I had seen a deer about ten feet off the highway. Me being a truck driver, I see them all the time, so I didn't give it much thought. About ten minutes later or so, I saw two or three more, but these were pretty close to the road. I immediately thought within myself that maybe I should kick the cruise down a few mph, just in case. So, I did, and about an hour later, I was looking forward and noticed headlights coming around a curve in front of me. In my

JESUS IS HERE

direction, the curve went to the right and to the oncoming vehicle; it went to the left. Then I noticed that after this vehicle completed the curve, it kept going as if it was still on a curve. The vehicle crossed my lane and went into the ditch and flipped. Immediate reaction: I stopped to see if the person was okay. The gravel was still rolling from where the vehicle flipped over. That is how close this was in front of me. I called 9-1-1 and told them of my location. I asked the driver of the vehicle if he was okay, and he replied that he was good. When the police arrived, I gave them my statement, and they advised me that this driver was drunk. The officer then asked me where I was heading, so I told him. Then he said something that took my breath away. He said, "You almost didn't get to where you were going." I knew instantly that if I would have not slowed down for those deer, I would have been a few seconds farther than I was. That would have put me right there in the spot that driver came into my lane.

With everything that our Father has been teaching me, now I can say with all certainty that I was being fed manna without me knowing about it.

All the commandments which I command thee this day shall ye observe to do, that ye may live, and multiply, and go in and possess the land which the Lord sware unto your fathers. **And thou shalt remember all the way which the Lord thy God led thee these forty years in the wilderness, to humble thee, and to prove thee, to know what was in thine heart, whether thou wouldest keep his commandments, or no. And he humbled thee, and suffered thee to hunger, and fed thee with manna, which thou knewest not, neither did thy fathers know; that he might make thee know that man doth not live by bread only, but by every word that proceedeth out of the mouth of the Lord doth man live.** (Deuteronomy 8:1-3)

Can you see how I can see how this is relating to my very own life? He didn't call me to the Bible until shortly after I turned forty-one.

Let us get back on topic now. Now very shortly after being in the truck, I felt this urge to go to the casino. I stopped in Council Bluffs, Iowa, and went in to play some poker, for I had gone to a poker school back in 2010. I no longer was playing the slot machines because I discovered poker. Now I was thinking, *I know God uses the casinos to help people, speaking from experience*. When I started playing cash poker, I noticed they had a tournament going on, but it had started about an hour and a half ago. The blinds were very high. I wanted to join, but with the blinds being so high, I weighed against it. I played for six or seven hours and lost around \$400. I had no problems with losing, for I knew God helped me, so who was I to say it was wrong if He used the money He allowed me to have to help someone else out. The very next day, I was heading south east and had to go through St. Louis, Missouri. I kept having this strong overwhelming sensation that I needed to go to another casino. I was asking our Father why I just lost \$400 last night. Anyway, the closer I got to St. Louis, the stronger the urge got. So, I stopped, and they had a tournament starting in just over an hour. I was thinking, *Okay, I can do this, for it only costs \$110, and that will be a controlled loss if I lose*. The tournament was now starting, and there was about 120 people registered. I was thinking, *This is going to be fun*. This is the biggest tourney that I had ever joined. About ten minutes into the game, I was sitting in seat 3, not remembering the table number, and it just came out of my mouth, loud enough that the entire table could hear. I was just here to watch. I did not know what it meant, but I laughed my butt off. About six hours into the tourney, the blinds were getting very high. I got down to one half blind in my stack and now was convinced that I was going to bust out soon. There were about thirty people left; I got big cards and decided to go all in. I won that pot and the next four or five more after that. I now was the chip leader. I was excited beyond belief. They decided to break my table, and as I was stacking my chips so that I could move, I told the dealer, "I am just here to watch." I now knew what it meant. Our Father was the one actually playing

JESUS IS HERE

the game. David was just there to watch. Well, as I was stacking my chips, I dropped one of my chips into my cup of coffee. I couldn't get it out with my finger. I remembered the scriptures saying nothing that I drink will hurt me. "They shall take up serpents; **and if they drink any deadly thing, it shall not hurt them;** they shall lay hands on the sick, and they shall recover" (Mark 16:18). I gulped the coffee down so that I could get my chip out. The dealer looked at me and said, "I wouldn't drink that if I was you." I laughed and told her, "I can drink anything I want, and it will not hurt me." So now we are getting down to the last fifteen to eighteen people left. We were about seven hours into the game. I was not chip leader but was third or fourth in chips. This was a different kind of tourney. The last nine people of the game won a thousand dollars. I was feeling pretty confident that I could make it to the end. And after eight hours of playing, I and eight other players won \$1,000 each.

Now with reading John 1 and hearing what we just did a bit ago, who do you think was playing that game? This was what was going through my mind. Our Father was playing; He was shuffling the cards and dealing them the way He wanted them to be dealt. He dwells in all of us. He was the one that was causing people to fold when they shouldn't or call a raise when they shouldn't. He was the one in control of everything down to the very minute. This was when I started to realize that there was no such thing as a coincidence, or good or bad luck. He uses these casinos to help people, chastise people, or even take vengeance on people. I was speaking of experience and not just a simple belief. Of course, after this happened, I got quite the big head and did start going to a few casinos. I would win some and lose some. But there were times that I thought I was going in so that I would win big and could use the money to help others or maybe take another trip to Israel. I would lose. So, as a reader, please do not think this is an open-door policy to go to the casinos. If our Father does not want you there, you will lose big. But at the same time, don't allow anyone to convince you that it is a sin to be in a casino. If your conscience allows it, then maybe you are being guided there. Remember, they do have dominion over our bodies.

Now during this time that I would go to the casinos and play poker for cash, He taught me another very good lesson. I stopped in a casino in Kansas and was having a pretty good night. I was playing \$1-\$2 no-limit hold 'em poker. I picked up something like suited jack-eight. I don't remember exactly how that hand played out, but I do remember that when all cards were on the table, I had the nut full house. All three players got all their money in, and I won like \$700 in one hand. I do know one player had a smaller full house and the other had a straight. I walked out with over \$1,000 that night. The very next time I went into a casino to play poker, not remembering what the cards were, I had a straight once all the cards were on the table. There were two other players in. One of them had a small full house, and the other had the nut full house. I immediately remembered what Jesus said in Matthew 7:12, **"Therefore all things whatsoever ye would that men should do to you, do ye even so to them: for this is the law and the prophets."** I was all in with about \$200, and now I just lost a hand that I had won with just the last time I played. I won a big hand with the nut full house, but now that tables were turned, I just lost a big hand with the exact same circumstances. So yes, He even uses the casinos to teach us lessons in life. There is not one thing in this world or heaven that does not belong to our Father, and everything has a reason.

It is believing that everybody on the planet is the son of God. My wife that I had problems within Missouri, my brothers, and my sister. It was not them personally doing what they did; however, it was our Father commanding them to do what they were doing so that I could learn who I am and what our Father had planned for my life. They are servants and/or vessels of God. All that was happening was that our Father used these servants to help get me on the path He needed me to be on.

It was not making people feel less important to God by insulting them, telling them they were doing wrong. This is why we are told what we are in Romans 3:13, **"Their throat is an open sepulchre; with their tongues they have used deceit; the poison of asps is under their lips."** As we showed just a bit ago in Matthew 21, if you think

JESUS IS HERE

anyone has done or is doing wrong by our Father, you will not enter into the kingdom of God. Now the kingdom of God is not something that is going to be set up at the end of the world, for the kingdom of God is within each of us.

And when he was demanded of the Pharisees, when the kingdom of God should come, he answered them and said, **The kingdom of God cometh not with observation: Neither shall they say, Lo here! or, lo there! for, behold, the kingdom of God is within you.** (Luke 17:20–21)

This is what we really tried to explain in the last book. That everybody on the planet makes up the son of God and not just one person. Our Father is up there in heaven looking down on us and just watching all the pain and anguish that we are causing for His son. We are all familiar with Matthew 1:23, **“Behold, a virgin shall be with child, and shall bring forth a son, and they shall call his name Emmanuel, which being interpreted is, God with us.”** And as we showed you in the last book, we are hearing conversations being held in heaven when we listen to the scriptures. Now listen to what we can hear in Isaiah 8:5–8.

The Lord spake also unto me again, saying, Forasmuch as this people refuseth the waters of Shiloah that go softly, and rejoice in Rezin and Remaliah’s son; Now therefore, behold, the Lord bringeth up upon them the waters of the river, strong and many, even the king of Assyria, and all his glory: and he shall come up over all his channels, and go over all his banks: **And he shall pass through Judah; he shall overflow and go over, he shall reach even to the neck; and the stretching out of his wings shall fill the breadth of thy land, O Immanuel.**

Spelled a little different, however, they sound just alike when you hear them. I have listened to both in the Bible and on Google or YouTube, and I can hear no difference when listening to both names. The son of God or Emmanuel covers the entire earth.

This is where we need to look at how we are to pray.

After this manner therefore pray ye: Our Father which art in heaven, Hallowed be thy name. Thy kingdom come, **Thy will be done in earth, as it is in heaven.** Give us this day our daily bread. And forgive us our debts, as we forgive our debtors. And lead us not into temptation, but deliver us from evil: For thine is the kingdom, and the power, and the glory, for ever. Amen. (Matthew 6:1–13)

In the last book, on how when we see the earth through our Father's eyes from above, we can see the entire son of God consisting of about 8 billion body parts. We are being told that it will happen in earth as it is in heaven.

I started to write the last book in May of 2018; I finished around the end of September. *Behold, a Greater Than Jonas Is Here!!!* After I sent the manuscript to the publisher, I called to ask how many pages it was. On my program on the laptop, one thing showed 295, and then another showing 315, or something like that. I couldn't tell. While I was on the phone with them, they looked it up. They told me it was 316 pages long. I instantly remembered John 3:16, "**For God so loved the world, that he gave his only begotten Son, that whosoever believeth in him should not perish, but have everlasting life.**" So, I want to ask a question. Do you think that when I started writing the book in May, I had any idea of how many pages the book would be?

We are going to get sidetracked for a few minutes here. Now I mentioned that we placed the entire chapter of Isaiah 58 earlier, for there is a very important message in there. I am going to place the first few verses of it again so that we can actually hear this message.

JESUS IS HERE

Cry aloud, spare not, lift up thy voice like a trumpet, and shew my people their transgression, and the house of Jacob their sins. Yet they seek me daily, and delight to know my ways, as a nation that did righteousness, and forsook not the ordinance of their God: they ask of me the ordinances of justice; they take delight in approaching to God. Wherefore have we fasted, say they, and thou seest not? wherefore have we afflicted our soul, and thou takest no knowledge? Behold, in the day of your fast ye find pleasure, and exact all your labours. Behold, ye fast for strife and debate, and to smite with the fist of wickedness: ye shall not fast as ye do this day, to make your voice to be heard on high. **Is it such a fast that I have chosen? a day for a man to afflict his soul? is it to bow down his head as a bulrush, and to spread sackcloth and ashes under him? wilt thou call this a fast, and an acceptable day to the Lord? Is not this the fast that I have chosen? to loose the bands of wickedness, to undo the heavy burdens, and to let the oppressed go free, and that ye break every yoke? Is it not to deal thy bread to the hungry, and that thou bring the poor that are cast out to thy house? when thou seest the naked, that thou cover him; and that thou hide not thyself from thine own flesh? Then shall thy light break forth as the morning, and thine health shall spring forth speedily: and thy righteousness shall go before thee; the glory of the Lord shall be thy reward. Then shalt thou call, and the Lord shall answer; thou shalt cry, and he shall say, Here I am. If thou take away from the midst of thee the yoke, the putting forth of the finger, and speaking vanity; And if thou draw out thy soul to the hungry, and satisfy the afflicted soul; then shall thy light rise in obscurity, and thy darkness be as the noon**

day: And the Lord shall guide thee continually, and satisfy thy soul in drought, and make fat thy bones: and thou shalt be like a watered garden, and like a spring of water, whose waters fail not. And they that shall be of thee shall build the old waste places: thou shalt raise up the foundations of many generations; and thou shalt be called, The repairer of the breach, The restorer of paths to dwell in. (Isaiah 58:1–12)

Notice that our Father never commanded us to starve ourselves at the time we fast. First and foremost, we should be mindful of what Jesus tells us about fasting.

Moreover when ye fast, be not, as the hypocrites, of a sad countenance: for they disfigure their faces, that they may appear unto men to fast. Verily I say unto you, They have their reward. But thou, when thou fastest, anoint thine head, and wash thy face; That thou appear not unto men to fast, but unto thy Father which is in secret: and thy Father, which seeth in secret, shall reward thee openly. (Matthew 6:16–18)

This is not telling us to make a public scene, nor is it telling us that we should let anyone know of when we fast. With that being said, if we truly listen to what our Father is saying above, we can hear that a fast that He commands is about helping others. It is about taking the burden of someone else's shoulders. It is about undoing heavy burdens on others. It is about clothing the naked, feeding the needy, and even housing those that go without. Remember the two greatest commandments.

Then one of them, which was a lawyer, asked him a question, tempting him, and saying, Master, which is the great commandment in the law? **Jesus said unto him, Thou shalt love the Lord thy God with all thy**

heart, and with all thy soul, and with all thy mind. This is the first and great commandment. And the second is like unto it, Thou shalt love thy neighbour as thyself. On these two commandments hang all the law and the prophets. (Matthew 22:36–40)

Nowhere in our Bible are we commanded to starve ourselves or even to go without food for any particular length of time. In fact, we are told that food is necessary. “Neither have I gone back from the commandment of his lips; **I have esteemed the words of his mouth more than my necessary food**” (Job 23:12). We need food to help keep or maintain our health. If we do not eat regularly, we suffer from weakness of muscles, weakening of the immune system, psychological and emotional problems. All these can affect us and all those that we interact with on a daily basis. It can also keep us from working. If we cannot work, how can we do all these things listed as what a true fast is?

As you all know, I think of everything in a different realm, so I want to express how our Father has taught me to think of my body. It is something like a car or truck engine. If you do not put oil, water, and gasoline into a car, it will not run correctly and will eventually quit working all together. The food and water that our bodies need are like the gasoline, oil, and water for cars. The car engine will quit just as our bodies will quit if we do not replace what our bodies use.

Then said Jesus unto his disciples, If any man will come after me, **let him deny himself, and take up his cross, and follow me.** For whosoever will save his life shall lose it: and whosoever will lose his life for my sake shall find it. For what is a man profited, if he shall gain the whole world, and lose his own soul? or what shall a man give in exchange for his soul? (Matthew 16:24–26)

Helping others out and denying our own wants and what this entire Bible is about. It is not about knowing will benefit from helping others. It is not thinking that you can't help someone out because you will not get anything in return. As we showed in the last book, it is learning to love in the same manner as our Father loves us. When you listen to verses 8–12 of Isaiah 58, we can hear that our Father will reward us after we do this fast in which He commands. He is not going to do this before or so that we will help others out. It is showing Him with our spiritual works that we think of love others at least as much as we think of ourselves.

Now we showed you all just a bit ago in Malachi 4 that for those that truly fear our Father, it is to them that the sun or son of righteousness is risen up in. That fear is the beginning of all wisdom in which comes from our Father. **“The fear of the Lord is the beginning of wisdom: and the knowledge of the holy is understanding”** (Proverbs 9:10). That fear is not a fear that He is going to knock your teeth out or cut your throat or something like that. It is a fear of knowing and believing that He does have control of everything, and He is the one that can make your own life a living hell, or He can bring some peace within you. Yes, Jesus is the king of peace, but this king will not rise inside you unless you show our Father that you love Him with all of your heart, soul, and mind. The only way this can be done is by seeking Him, and the only place we can learn about our Father is Moses and the prophets. Not my words but the very words of Jesus Christ, as we showed you all earlier in John 5 and 6.

I truly feel that this all starts with us truly believing that our Father is perfect, righteous, and justified in everything He has done, doing, and will do. If you truly—and I do mean *truly*—believe that He is perfect, then you will have the same desire as Jesus did to be obedient in all that our Father commanded or is commanding him to do. **“Though he were a Son, yet learned he obedience by the things which he suffered; And being made perfect, he became the author of eternal salvation unto all them that obey him”** (Hebrews 5:8–9). I do remember that I did come to truly believe that our Father is perfect before He had me write the first book. To me, that makes sense,

JESUS IS HERE

for how could He have me write a book about something I didn't agree with, with all my heart? No, this does not mean that I understood anything as I do today, but I do know that with me believing that He is perfect is why I still continue to seek His perfection. There are a lot of people that I talk with that tell me that they know our Father is perfect yet refuse to learn about Him. They always make a comment as "I don't have time" or "I don't understand the Old Testament." There is a humongous difference in believing that He is perfect and knowing and believing that the scriptures say that He is perfect.

Once we get to the stage of truly believing is when our Father raises up Jesus inside of us, and that is when we are sealed, as shown in Ephesians 1:13–14.

In whom ye also trusted, after that ye heard the word of truth, the gospel of your salvation: in whom also after that ye believed, ye were sealed with that holy Spirit of promise, Which is the earnest of our inheritance until the redemption of the purchased possession, unto the praise of his glory.

We do not get sealed if we believe that our Father has changed His perfection. Our Father's house is perfect and is functioning perfectly. If you believe that this perfection has or is going to change, then how can it still be perfect? This is where you need to ask yourself, do you truly believe our Father is perfect? Or are you believing the son of perdition that is sitting inside the temple of God? Remember, you are the temple of God, and the son of perdition sits inside the temple of God. This is a spirit in which our Father will allow to have dominion over your body, for you have made the choice not to take the time to get to know our Father and who and what He is all about.

We can hear this when we listen to what we are being told in 2 Thessalonians 2:1–12.

DAVID JENKINS

Now we beseech you, brethren, by the coming of our Lord Jesus Christ, and by our gathering together unto him. That ye be not soon shaken in mind, or be troubled, neither by spirit, nor by word, nor by letter as from us, as that the day of Christ is at hand. Let no man deceive you by any means: for that day shall not come, except there come a falling away first, and that man of sin be revealed, the son of perdition; **Who opposeth and exalteth himself above all that is called God, or that is worshipped; so that he as God sitteth in the temple of God, shewing himself that he is God.** Remember ye not, that, when I was yet with you, I told you these things? And now ye know what withholdeth that he might be revealed in his time. For the mystery of iniquity doth already work: only he who now letteth will let, until he be taken out of the way. And then shall that Wicked be revealed, whom the Lord shall consume with the spirit of his mouth, and shall destroy with the brightness of his coming: Even him, whose coming is after the working of Satan with all power and signs and lying wonders, And with all deceivableness of unrighteousness in them that perish; because they received not the love of the truth, that they might be saved. **And for this cause God shall send them strong delusion, that they should believe a lie: That they all might be damned who believed not the truth, but had pleasure in unrighteousness.**
(2 Thessalonians 2:1–12)

Now we need to be listening to a couple more spots of our Bibles in the closing of this chapter.

Brethren, my heart's desire and prayer to God for Israel is, that they might be saved. For I bear them record that they have a zeal of God, but not according

to knowledge. **For they being ignorant of God's righteousness, and going about to establish their own righteousness, have not submitted themselves unto the righteousness of God. For Christ is the end of the law for righteousness to every one that believeth.** For Moses describeth the righteousness which is of the law, That the man which doeth those things shall live by them. But the righteousness which is of faith speaketh on this wise, Say not in thine heart, Who shall ascend into heaven? (that is, to bring Christ down from above:) Or, Who shall descend into the deep? (that is, to bring up Christ again from the dead.) But what saith it? The word is nigh thee, even in thy mouth, and in thy heart: that is, the word of faith, which we preach; That if thou shalt confess with thy mouth the Lord Jesus, and shalt believe in thine heart that God hath raised him from the dead, thou shalt be saved. For with the heart man believeth unto righteousness; and with the mouth confession is made unto salvation. For the scripture saith, Whosoever believeth on him shall not be ashamed. For there is no difference between the Jew and the Greek: for the same Lord over all is rich unto all that call upon him. For whosoever shall call upon the name of the Lord shall be saved. **How then shall they call on him in whom they have not believed? and how shall they believe in him of whom they have not heard?** and how shall they hear without a preacher? And how shall they preach, except they be sent? as it is written, How beautiful are the feet of them that preach the gospel of peace, and bring glad tidings of good things! But they have not all obeyed the gospel. For Esaias saith, Lord, who hath believed our report? So then faith cometh by hearing, and hearing by the word of God. But I say, Have they not heard? Yes

ver-ily, their sound went into all the earth, and their words unto the ends of the world. But I say, Did not Israel know? First Moses saith, I will provoke you to jealousy by them that are no people, and by a foolish nation I will anger you. But Esaias is very bold, and saith, I was found of them that sought me not; I was made manifest unto them that asked not after me. But to Israel he saith, All day long I have stretched forth my hands unto a disobedient and gainsaying people. (Romans 10:1–21)

As we can hear in here, it is about believing in our Father. If we do not believe in our Father—who is perfect, righteous, and justified in everything that He has done, doing, and will do—then we do not believe God. How can someone call on God to save them from troubles if they show God with their spiritual works that they do not want anything to do with Him? Why would God want anything to do with you if you do not want anything to do with Him?

Now I have heard of and have spoken with people saying things like, why should we believe the Bible, for it was written by man? To that I say is a cop-out or and just another way of saying you do not believe in the power of God. Listen to what we are told in 2 Peter 1:17–21.

For he received from God the Father honour and glory, when there came such a voice to him from the excellent glory, This is my beloved Son, in whom I am well pleased. And this voice which came from heaven we heard, when we were with him in the holy mount. We have also a more sure word of prophecy; whereunto ye do well that ye take heed, as unto a light that shineth in a dark place, until the day dawn, and the day star arise in your hearts: Knowing this first, that no prophecy of the scripture is of any private interpretation. **For the prophecy came not in old**

time by the will of man: but holy men of God spake as they were moved by the Holy Ghost.

Now with everything that our Father has taught me, I can say without a doubt that our Bible is written by our Father. He just used these holy men as servants and/or vessels to write the Bible.

Okay, I thought we were done with this chapter, so I stepped away for a few minutes to think of how to start the next chapter, when our Father reminded me of something I said in the very beginning of this chapter. I mentioned that our Father has been teaching me obedience for just over three years now. We are going to explain this obedience without showing how I am commanded, for that will cause more harm than good if someone tries to skip all the stages that our Father has put me through. This didn't happen until after He had severed me from all other people. He had to do this, for if there are other people around me, I get distracted a lot; they disagree with what He is teaching me, and I believe the best way to teach me anything is one-on-one. He is constantly teaching me, so yes, I prefer to be by myself. Yet, I never feel as if I am alone. What I mean by "it can cause more harm than good" is talked about in the Bible.

And thou shalt set bounds unto the people round about, saying, Take heed to yourselves, that ye go not up into the mount, or touch the border of it: **whosoever toucheth the mount shall be surely put to death.** (Exodus 19:12)

And the sound of a trumpet, and the voice of words; which voice they that heard intreated that the word should not be spoken to them any more: (For they could not endure that which was commanded, **And if so much as a beast touch the mountain, it shall be stoned, or thrust through with a dart.** (Hebrews 12:19–20)

This is where we need to remember that we are counted as beast in the Bible. We showed that in the last book, and it will be covered more, later in this book. This is a spiritual mountain, and if we do not go through the process of allowing Moses and the prophets to lead us unto this mountain, we have no right to be there. Our Father will not tolerate it, under no circumstances. Therefore, He teaches us a little at a time, continually testing our hearts to make sure that we do have the true desire to continue to seek His wisdom, and not man's. It is like we have to climb the mountain but only by His instructions. Again, showing why the entire Bible is one long letter from our Father, giving us instructions on how we are to live our lives today.

Listen to what He tells us about the way He will teach us.

Whom shall he teach knowledge? and whom shall he make to understand doctrine? them that are weaned from the milk, and drawn from the breasts. For precept must be upon precept, precept upon precept; line upon line, line upon line; here a little, and there a little. (Isaiah 28:9–10)

Now while He is teaching us in this manner, He is also continually testing our hearts. “And that thou shouldest visit him every morning, **and try him every moment?**” (Job 7:18). “And thou shalt remember all the way which the Lord thy God led thee these forty years in the wilderness, to humble thee, and to prove thee, **to know what was in thine heart, whether thou wouldest keep his commandments, or no**” (Deuteronomy 8:2). Then if we desire the honor of men rather than God, as shown just a bit ago, He will—well, listen to Isaiah 28:11–13.

For with stammering lips and another tongue will he speak to this people. To whom he said, This is the rest wherewith ye may cause the weary to rest; and this is the refreshing; yet they would not hear. **But the word of the Lord was unto them precept upon**

precept, precept upon precept; line upon line, line upon line; here a little, and there a little; that they might go, and fall back-ward, and be broken, and snared, and taken.

Now that we have shown that, we want to show you all how what He has been teaching me. I am a truck driver and drive eleven to fourteen thousand miles a month. This does stem from **believing** that everybody on the planet is a servant and/or vessel of God. Or better yet said, makes up the one son of God. I am shown what lane to be in. I am shown when to merge to a different lane. I am given about a three- to five-mile advance notice if there is a traffic jam coming up. I am shown when traffic is getting ready to be heavy. I am shown where to stop the truck so that I can find a parking spot. I am usually told, without calling ahead, if I can sleep at the customers'. I am shown in advance if I am going to have to wait a short or long time when I arrive to a shipper or receiver. I am usually shown if I am going to be inspected by DOT. I always run legal, but it is kind of nice to know if I am picking up a trailer with a light out or something. I know I need to get it fixed before crossing the scale. There are other things in which I am shown how to do, but I think you get the idea. This is because I **believe**. And I believe what I hear when I am told this. "Howbeit when he, the Spirit of truth, is come, he will guide you into all truth: for he shall not speak of himself; but whatsoever he shall hear, **that shall he speak: and he will shew you things to come**" (John 16:13). All these things and more are me being told or shewed of things to come.

When this first started to happen, I freaked out. It was like you have got to be kidding me. Then there was also a time, shortly after this started, I kept telling my mom that it wasn't fair to other drivers. She kept telling me that it isn't for them to understand. I understand that now, but I didn't then. That was our Father using my mom as a vessel of God to tell me that. Then about two months before my mom passed away, I was shown that she was going to be passing away soon. I could not tell family members, but I was shown. I was sitting

in Maine when I was shown that she was not coming home from the hospital. I am not told these things because I do not believe in our Father. I am not told or shown these things because I think our Father changed from His perfection. I am told these things for I know, way beyond believing, our Father is perfect, righteous, and justified in everything He has done, doing, and will do, and I know that He is perfect, righteous, and justified in everything that He has ever said, saying, and will say. For me, it is almost like I can't unbelieve if you will. These things that happen that show me of what is to come, keep happening. That is why I stated in the beginning that I am a rebellious man. There are times that I do screw up or sometimes just ignore of what I am being shown. But I always talk to Him about whatever I am doing. And am constantly asking for His mercy, and I do take full responsibility for my transgressions. I do not try to say I screwed up because someone else made me. It is *always* my own fault, and not His, for He does as He said He would do. And that is why Jesus tells us this in Matthew 4:4, **“But he answered and said, It is written, Man shall not live by bread alone, but by every word that proceedeth out of the mouth of God.”** And the starting point to learning and hearing every word that proceedeth out of the mouth of God is in our Bible from Genesis 1:1 through Revelation 22:21.

In the last book, we showed how my dad died in 2003, then my mom passed in 2016. Then our Father joined these two souls as one and sent them back into captivity through my daughter. Yes, my granddaughter is my mom and dad as one. There is an update on this situation in the chapter “Reincarnation.” But here is what I feel I am being told to show you all. About two months before my mom passed, our Father had me on a road that conveniently passed through Columbia, Missouri, at the very time my mom was in Columbia for a doctor's visit. She had cancer and was going to have surgery in a couple of months. While I was at the doc's with her and my sister, I heard things being said in such a fashion that I knew my mom was not coming home from the hospital. Then when she went in to have the surgery, I was sitting in Maine. I had been talking with my sister while Mom was in the hospital to keep up on Mom's status. I was

going to move the truck about fifteen miles south to a Walmart so I could send some money to my brother. He was staying with my mom and was going to install a new shower unit for Mom when she came home. Just as I got ready to leave, I received a commandment: don't move. It was right then I knew my mom was not going back to her house. Then come Monday morning, my sister called and said it has been touch and go, but now they were starting to talk about sending Mom home. I started to think maybe I understood things wrong. Which is not uncommon for me with me not being confident in my flesh. Then a couple more hours passed, and I received another call from my sister. Mom had a cardiac arrest while they were walking her in the hall, and there was no way of saving her. I was shown two months before she passed that she was going to pass.

Now that we are bringing my mom up and how I was told in advance that she was going to pass, we need to look at something else. I found out shortly after my mom passed that she refused to take blood. One of my three older brothers called me and asked me when Mom became a Jew. Apparently while she was unconscious, they gave her some blood, for she lost a lot in surgery. When she awoke, they were putting more blood in her, and she told them to stop, for she was a Jew. Now I do not ever recall my mom being anything of the sort, but I knew right then and there that this is a form of trying to save your life. This would also go with organ transplants.

But flesh with the life thereof, which is the blood thereof, shall ye not eat. And surely your blood of your lives will I require; at the hand of every beast will I require it, and at the hand of man; at the hand of every man's brother will I require the life of man.
(Genesis 9:4–5)

And whatsoever man there be of the children of Israel, or of the strangers that sojourn among you, which hunteth and catcheth any beast or fowl that may be eaten; he shall even pour out the blood thereof,

and cover it with dust. **For it is the life of all flesh; the blood of it is for the life thereof: therefore I said unto the children of Israel, Ye shall eat the blood of no manner of flesh: for the life of all flesh is the blood thereof: whosoever eateth it shall be cut off.** (Leviticus 17:13–14)

For it seemed good to the Holy Ghost, and to us, to lay upon you no greater burden than these necessary things; **That ye abstain from meats offered to idols, and from blood, and from things strangled, and from fornication: from which if ye keep yourselves, ye shall do well. Fare ye well.** (Acts 15:28–29)

If we are truly listening to what we are being told, we can hear that we are not to consume any blood. If we are not to consume blood, then how could us receiving whole blood from another person in the flesh be okay? We will be learning much more on the topic of saving our lives later in the book.

Now with our Father teaching me this obedience, He has brought me to a level that I believe or, in my mind, know that there is no such thing as a coincidence. There is no such thing as good or bad luck. This will probably be hard for you all to understand; however, there is no such thing as an accident. He has this timed to the very second and knows exactly what He is doing. It is up to us to just let go of our pride and trust Him.

Then it came to be January or so when I called Cathy, and she said that my daughter needed to tell me something, but she wasn't ready to tell me. I told Cathy right then and there, "She's pregnant"; she didn't comment. A couple weeks later, Erin told me she was pregnant. This will be explained better in the chapter "Reincarnation."

Ever heard the expression that everything happens for a reason? If you truly believe that everyone on the planet makes up the one son of God, or a servant and vessel of God, then you will know without a doubt that everything does happen for a reason. It does not matter

JESUS IS HERE

whether it is something good, bad, wrong, or even evil. At the bare minimum, it could be our Father trying to get you to turn back to Him instead of man. This is what He wants all of us to do, for He is the only one that can and does provide perfect instructions on how to live this life in the flesh so that we can and will obtain eternal life with Him.

Therefore say thou unto them, **Thus saith the Lord of hosts; Turn ye unto me, saith the Lord of hosts, and I will turn unto you, saith the Lord of hosts.** Be ye not as your fathers, unto whom the former prophets have cried, saying, Thus saith the Lord of hosts; Turn ye now from your evil ways, and from your evil doings: but they did not hear, nor hearken unto me, saith the Lord. Your fathers, where are they? and the prophets, do they live for ever? (Zechariah 1:3–5)

And then listen to what we are told in Joel 2:12–14.

Therefore also now, **saith the Lord, turn ye even to me with all your heart, and with fasting, and with weeping, and with mourning: And rend your heart, and not your garments, and turn unto the Lord your God: for he is gracious and merciful, slow to anger, and of great kindness, and repenteth him of the evil.** Who knoweth if he will return and repent, and leave a blessing behind him; even a meat offering and a drink offering unto the Lord your God?

Let us listen to Psalm 10 so that we can hear what makes a wicked man in our Father's eyes.

Why standest thou afar off, O Lord? why hidest thou thyself in times of trouble? The wicked in his pride doth persecute the poor: let them be taken in the devices

that they have imagined. For the wicked boasteth of his heart's desire, and blesseth the covetous, whom the Lord abhorreth. **The wicked, through the pride of his countenance, will not seek after God: God is not in all his thoughts.** His ways are always grievous; thy judgments are far above out of his sight: as for all his enemies, he puffeth at them. He hath said in his heart, I shall not be moved: for I shall never be in adversity. His mouth is full of cursing and deceit and fraud: under his tongue is mischief and vanity. He sitteth in the lurking places of the villages: in the secret places doth he murder the innocent: his eyes are privily set against the poor. He lieth in wait secretly as a lion in his den: he lieth in wait to catch the poor: he doth catch the poor, when he draweth him into his net. He croucheth, and humbleth himself, that the poor may fall by his strong ones. He hath said in his heart, God hath forgotten: he hideth his face; he will never see it. Arise, O Lord; O God, lift up thine hand: forget not the humble. Wherefore doth the wicked contemn God? he hath said in his heart, Thou wilt not require it. Thou hast seen it; for thou beholdest mischief and spite, to requite it with thy hand: the poor committeth himself unto thee; thou art the helper of the fatherless. Break thou the arm of the wicked and the evil man: seek out his wickedness till thou find none. The Lord is King for ever and ever: the heathen are perished out of his land. Lord, thou hast heard the desire of the humble: thou wilt prepare their heart, thou wilt cause thine ear to hear: To judge the fatherless and the oppressed, that the man of the earth may no more oppress. (Psalm 10:1–18)

Now we stated just a few minutes ago that there is no such thing as an accident. What we are referring to is things like car accidents and

such. Now I just told you all of a couple of times in which the globe fell off the porch light at my mom's house, and the deer that told my conscience to slow down a bit. If these were accidents, how did our Father know they were going to happen? How could He use these deer to slow me down if He didn't also command these deer to do exactly what it did so that I would slow down a bit? Remember, God is in control of everything. Remember we are told that He takes care of the animals also. First let us look at Daniel and listen to how our Father closed the mouths of lions. Let us listen to Daniel 6:10–22.

Now when Daniel knew that the writing was signed, he went into his house; and his windows being open in his chamber toward Jerusalem, he kneeled upon his knees three times a day, and prayed, and gave thanks before his God, as he did aforetime. Then these men assembled, and found Daniel praying and making supplication before his God. Then they came near, and spake before the king concerning the king's decree; **Hast thou not signed a decree, that every man that shall ask a petition of any God or man within thirty days, save of thee, O king, shall be cast into the den of lions?** The king answered and said, The thing is true, according to the law of the Medes and Persians, which altereth not. Then answered they and said before the king, That Daniel, which is of the children of the captivity of Judah, regardeth not thee, O king, nor the decree that thou hast signed, but maketh his petition three times a day. Then the king, when he heard these words, was sore displeased with himself, and set his heart on Daniel to deliver him: and he laboured till the going down of the sun to deliver him. Then these men assembled unto the king, and said unto the king, Know, O king, that the law of the Medes and Persians is, That no decree nor statute which the king establisheth may be changed. Then

the king com- manded, and they brought Daniel, **and cast him into the den of lions. Now the king spake and said unto Daniel, Thy God whom thou servest continually, he will deliver thee. And a stone was brought, and laid upon the mouth of the den; and the king sealed it with his own signet, and with the signet of his lords; that the pur- pose might not be changed concerning Daniel.** Then the king went to his palace, and passed the night fasting: neither were instruments of musick brought before him: and his sleep went from him. **Then the king arose very early in the morning, and went in haste unto the den of lions. And when he came to the den, he cried with a lamen- table voice unto Daniel: and the king spake and said to Daniel, O Daniel, servant of the living God, is thy God, whom thou servest continu- ally, able to deliver thee from the lions? Then said Daniel unto the king, O king, live for ever. My God hath sent his angel, and hath shut the lions' mouths, that they have not hurt me: for- asmuch as before him innocency was found in me; and also before thee, O king, have I done no hurt.**

Without showing how Daniel believed, we will just show that it was our Father who sent the angel to close the mouth of the lions while Daniel was in the den with them. Then listen to Matthew 6:26, **“Behold the fowls of the air: for they sow not, neither do they reap, nor gather into barns; yet your heavenly Father feedeth them. Are ye not much better than they?”**

Now how can our Father feed these fowls of the air if He isn't telling them where to get their food? Now this has been leading to the big question. The car accident in which I had when I was sixteen was on March 28, Good Friday of 1986. How could this happen if it was what we call an accident? And then thirty years later, almost to the day, I got baptized by the Holy Ghost? Remember God is

JESUS IS HERE

working works that no man will believe. He caused it to happen. He dwells inside of me also, and because of this, He is the one who had me oversteer when I swerved to miss the oncoming vehicle. I am going off of what the family told me and the reading of the accident in the paper. I do not remember six or seven weeks of my life. I can remember about one week before the accident, and about five or six weeks after. The time in between, I have no recollection of. My family and friends had told me that once I came out of the coma, I had to grow up again. I was reliving my life from the time I was three or four years old.

I am placing an update here, for this is something that I truly feel I was supposed to put in the third book, but I did not, for I did not want to intimidate anyone. As I have stated, I do make mistakes. But our Father told me last night to put it in so those that believe can know that this is the real deal. I have a cross on my forehead. It is almost directly in the center but being closer to the top. Back in 2014, I was playing cards with my wife and mom; “before I wrote the first book,” my wife all of a sudden asked me if I knew that I had a cross on my forehead. No, I replied. I immediately got up and went to look in a mirror. Mind you, this was before writing the first book. It is there, and I have been noticing that it seems to get more profound as time goes on. I did not put it there, it just showed up out of nowhere. Now let us look in the Scriptures to hear what we are told about my seal.

Labour not for the meat which perisheth, but for that
meat which endureth unto everlasting life, which the
Son of man shall give unto you: for him hath God the
Father sealed. (John 6:27)

Now we are going to do the grand finale of this chapter, and yes, it will take some explaining. On June 9 of this year, I was driving north on US Highway 63, and all of a sudden, all these thoughts that are in this chapter started flowing through my mind like a fountain of water. These thoughts were coming quick, but they were coming in a much better formation than I am sharing them with you all. It came to

mind that I died, but yet I am alive. It came to mind that when I was sent to my brother's place in South Dakota. While I was there, I do remember that I would listen to the Bible while playing free online poker tournaments. Or at one time, I was building a model rocket in the evenings. I wasn't really understanding what I was hearing, but just found comfort from hearing the word of God playing in the background. So, I was not being fed the spiritual meat, nor was I drinking of that spiritual water. **"And did all eat the same spiritual meat; And did all drink the same spiritual drink: for they drank of that spiritual Rock that followed them: and that Rock was Christ"** (1 Corinthians 10:3–4). I was not being fed with this meat nor drink. I was just there to help my brother because he was backed up in work. I was there about seven weeks, but we had a big argument about the Bible. I remember this clearly, for it was a Sunday. That day, my brother and his wife went to a man-made church and talked to the pastor about the unclean foods.

I want to note it was not my brother doing what he was doing, but rather our Father causing everything to happen just as it did so that He could fulfill the scriptures. This was about a week before I left there. They came home from church and started telling me that we could eat of the unclean things now that Jesus died on the cross. No, I would not agree, and I showed them in my Bible of what I could see. They in return showed me what it said in an NIV Bible. I can't remember how it was worded in their Bible, but there was no way I was saying anything of our perfect Father has changed. We argued back and forth all day long, and I would not back down. It got to the point that I remembered what the scriptures said. **"And if the house be worthy, let your peace come upon it: but if it be not worthy, let your peace return to you. And whosoever shall not receive you, nor hear your words, when ye depart out of that house or city, shake off the dust of your feet"** (Matthew 10:13–14). I packed up my three pairs of jeans, shirts, and undershorts. As I was doing this, my brother said, "Just hold on." It was about 9:00 p.m. now. I told him that I have to leave, for my peace had come back to me. Sidenote: I now had three pairs of jeans and such, for a friend of my mother's bought them for me while I

was with her. I had no money. I walked out of town a few miles before coming back. All along talking to our Father, telling Him that there is no way that I am going to say that it is okay to change Him. Then after taking about a week to find a job with a trucking company, I left my brother's. It was about six months ago when our Father showed me what a true fast is. So now I am starting to connect that I went to my brother's so that I could fast for forty days and nights. Remember that the son of perdition sits in the temple of God, and we are the temple of God. It was not my brother, for I know my brother loves me, but rather it was Satan that was in the temple of God. Satan is a son of God or the son of perdition.

Then I started thinking of how I understand the scriptures, but yet I am not even fifty years old. This brought my mind to John 8:56–58.

Your father Abraham rejoiced to see my day: and he saw it, and was glad. Then said the Jews unto him, **Thou art not yet fifty years old, and hast thou seen Abraham?** Jesus said unto them, Verily, verily, I say unto you, Before Abraham was, I am.

Remember how we just showed you all how I was going to sacrifice my son, and my brother was the ram in the bushes? **I have seen Abraham and have gone through the same spiritual sacrifice that did not require an animal as we know them to be. And I am not yet fifty years of age.** What we are hearing in John 8 above is that Abraham saw that he was living in the thousand-year reign—the day of judgment. This will be explained better in the chapter “The Thousand-Year Reign.”

Up until June 9 of this year, I was thinking that I wouldn't ever be able to tell people of who I was. I was telling people I was being taught the same things as Jesus so that I can become him in my next life. Or that maybe our Father was not going to allow me to tell anyone, and then He would just bring this world to an end, and then everyone would be brought to shame once they found out. Most of all, I didn't really know it happened the way it did, or couldn't explain it

as I can now. This is when I kept remembering Jesus saying not to tell anyone. **“Then charged he his disciples that they should tell no man that he was Jesus the Christ”** (Matthew 16:20). We will be doing a chapter on reincarnation later in the book. I was not connecting all that our Father was doing in my life. Then it started to connect. I had the accident on Good Friday, March 28 of 1986. Being in a coma for three days and three nights. Thirty years later, almost to the day, I was baptized with the Holy Ghost. So, let us look at this in the scriptures.

Then certain of the scribes and of the Pharisees answered, saying, Master, we would see a sign from thee. But he answered and said unto them, An evil and adulterous generation seeketh after a sign; and there shall no sign be given to it, but the sign of the prophet Jonas: **For as Jonas was three days and three nights in the whale’s belly; so shall the Son of man be three days and three nights in the heart of the earth.** (Matthew 10:38–40)

Then let us look at when Jesus was baptized again.

Now when all the people were baptized, it came to pass, that Jesus also being baptized, and praying, the heaven was opened, And the Holy Ghost descended in a bodily shape like a dove upon him, and a voice came from heaven, which said, Thou art my beloved Son; in thee I am well pleased. **And Jesus himself began to be about thirty years of age, being (as was supposed) the son of Joseph, which was the son of Heli.** (Luke 3:21–23)

Then, after Jesus was baptized, he went into the wilderness and fasted forty days and nights.

JESUS IS HERE

Then was Jesus led up of the Spirit into the wilderness to be tempted of the devil. And when he had fasted forty days and forty nights, he was afterward an hungred. And when the tempter came to him, he said, If thou be the Son of God, command that these stones be made bread. But he answered and said, It is written, Man shall not live by bread alone, but by every word that proceedeth out of the mouth of God. Then the devil taketh him up into the holy city, and setteth him on a pinnacle of the temple, And saith unto him, If thou be the Son of God, cast thyself down: for it is written, He shall give his angels charge concerning thee: and in their hands they shall bear thee up, lest at any time thou dash thy foot against a stone. Jesus said unto him, It is written again, Thou shalt not tempt the Lord thy God. Again, the devil taketh him up into an exceeding high mountain, and sheweth him all the kingdoms of the world, and the glory of them; And saith unto him, All these things will I give thee, if thou wilt fall down and worship me. Then saith Jesus unto him, Get thee hence, Satan: for it is written, Thou shalt worship the Lord thy God, and him only shalt thou serve. Then the devil leaveth him, and, behold, angels came and ministered unto him. (Matthew 4:1–11)

Remember how I would not back down from the Word of God and what I believed, not to change? The words that came out of our mouths were not the same as like what we read, but we need to remember of what we hear in Romans 8:26, “Likewise the Spirit also helpeth our infirmities: for we know not what we should pray for as we ought: **but the Spirit itself maketh intercession for us with groanings which cannot be uttered.**”

So here it goes. So now picture this entire chapter in your mind. Try to imagine all this going through your mind at once, as it did

mine. I am putting all this together as I am driving, and now it all made sense. Now I knew how to explain what had happened to me. David Charles Jenkins II was born February 23, 1970. He died on March 8–9 of 2016. He willingly gave his life up of the flesh. When he did this out in the wilderness, the spirit of Jesus Christ took over his body. Remember Colossians 1:14–15, “In whom we have redemption through his blood, even the forgiveness of sins: **Who is the image of the invisible God, the firstborn of every creature.**” I didn’t even realize this is what happened when I went out in the wilderness to die. I now understand why I do not have anywhere to lay my head. I have no place to call home, and everything I own is in my truck. “And Jesus said unto him, Foxes have holes, and birds of the air have nests; **but the Son of man hath not where to lay his head**” (Luke 9:58). I have told people this, and they reply back with, “You have a bed in your truck.” To think like this is to think carnally. The scriptures teach that Jesus was a man, and sleep is required for the human body to function. And to think carnally is enmity with our Father.

But now I can see it as plain as day. I now know who it was that told me I was just here to watch in the poker tournament. I now understand why I have such a desire to learn anything and everything of our Father. I now understand why—this being the third book that our Father has had me write—nobody seemed to be reading this. “Saying, The Son of man must suffer many things, **and be rejected of the elders and chief priests and scribes**, and be slain, and be raised the third day” (Luke 9:22). These are spiritual elders, the same elders that we showed in the last book. These elders and priest are above and have dominion over man. I now know why it caught my attention, the first time listening to the Bible, to say I am your sign. I now know what it means when our Father said He will raise a man for an ensign.

And in that day there shall be a root of Jesse, **which shall stand for an ensign of the people**; to it shall the Gentiles seek: and his rest shall be glorious. And it shall come to pass in that day, that the Lord shall set his hand again the second time to recover

JESUS IS HERE

the remnant of his people, which shall be left, from Assyria, and from Egypt, and from Pathros, and from Cush, and from Elam, and from Shinar, and from Hamath, and from the islands of the sea. **And he shall set up an ensign for the nations,** and shall assemble the outcasts of Israel, and gather together the dispersed of Judah from the four corners of the earth. (Isaiah 11:10–12)

So now let us do a little something with my age. I had the accident when I was sixteen and in a coma for three days and three nights. I was baptized thirty years later. So, to line this up with the scriptures, I was forty-five years old when I wrote the first book. This was preparing me for what was to come. I was forty-six when I was baptized with the Holy Ghost. I am not fifty yet, but I showed you all how I have seen Abraham. Now we know Jesus was baptized when he was about thirty years of age. So, at age forty-six, I was thirty years old. Our Father had me write the second book when I was forty-eight years old, or thirty-two years after being in the belly of the earth. I am now forty-nine years of age, or thirty-three years old. I have been and still do try to glorify our Father every chance I get. I will leave the rest of the math to you.

I now know why I was told to name the books with the names of them. The first book is called *Father, Forgive Us, We Haven't Been Listening*. Everything we need to know is in our Bible and nowhere else. But because of the darkness of man's hearts, our Father will not allow us to see or hear what is right in front of us. Our Father has also brought something to my attention while writing this book. Actually, I was trying to fall asleep, and it just came to mind last night. The first book, I wrote in 2015, before the baptism. I used to pass them out all the time. Not boasting on my alms; however, I was excited to share this newfound knowledge that came to me. Then I started telling people that these books were the milk in which we needed to start out on. And about two months ago or so, I heard Isaiah 28:9, "**Whom shall he teach knowledge? and whom shall he make to understand**

doctrine? them that are weaned from the milk, and drawn from the breasts.” I had to believe what was in that first book before our Father would teach me all that He has and is. And I have to say it: if you want to be taught as I am, you need to believe of what is in the first book. Our Father does not respect or favor any man, so if I had to believe it before He taught me, so will you. He is not going to say that I have to be weaned but others do not. But the beauty of it is you all will not have to go through everything that I have, for He tells us that if you return back to Him, He will have mercy.

And the Lord said unto me, The backsliding Israel hath justified herself more than treacherous Judah. Go and proclaim these words toward the north, and say, Return, thou backsliding Israel, saith the Lord; and I will not cause mine anger to fall upon you: for I am merciful, saith the Lord, and I will not keep anger for ever. Only acknowledge thine iniquity, that thou hast transgressed against the Lord thy God, and hast scattered thy ways to the strangers under every green tree, and ye have not obeyed my voice, saith the Lord. Turn, O backsliding children, saith the Lord; for I am married unto you: and I will take you one of a city, and two of a family, and I will bring you to Zion. (Jeremiah 3:11–14)

The second book, I originally was going to call *Judge Not, Lest Ye Be Judged*. But I had this overwhelming sensation to call it *Behold, a Greater Than Jonas Is Here!!!*. Now when I first sent this book to the publisher, they didn't like the name, and they suggested I change it. But I just knew that had to be the name of it. I asked the Father why He would cause those servants to say that. I received the answer almost immediately, within two or three minutes: they do not believe. Now let us listen to where Jesus said this.

JESUS IS HERE

For as Jonas was three days and three nights in the whale's belly; so shall the Son of man be three days and three nights in the heart of the earth. The men of Nineveh shall rise in judgment with this generation, and shall condemn it: because they repented at the preaching of Jonas; and, **behold, a greater than Jonas is here.** (Matthew 12:40–41)

Now I know the scriptures tell us that we all will see the son of man coming in the clouds. “And then shall they see the Son of man coming in the clouds with great power and glory” (Mark 13:26). Now I am thinking that there are not very many people that have gotten these books; however, both books have clouds on the covers. I did not pick the covers, and I always give our Father all credit for using me as a vessel to write these books. I say that He is the true author. Now I truly understand why this book is 316 pages long (John 3:16). When I first called and they told me that it was 316 pages, I thought it was because of how the book described how that everybody on the planet is part of the son of God. And now I truly understand how Jesus became the *author* of our salvation. It is Jesus writing these books and not David. “Though he were a Son, yet learned he obedience by the things which he suffered; And being made perfect, **he became the author of eternal salvation unto all them that obey him**” (Hebrews 5:8–9). It now made sense as to why I couldn't get over this sensation that the world is getting ready to end. “For then must he often have suffered since the foundation of the world: **but now once in the end of the world hath he appeared to put away sin by the sacrifice of himself**” (Hebrews 9:26). And I will say this: David's life did end on March 8–9 of 2016. I kept telling people the world was going to end very soon; however, I didn't realize that David's world did end, and the spirit of Jesus Christ rose up in his body and took over, and now I do nothing on my own.

We need to add something here that our Father did not bring to my attention until I sent the manuscript to the publisher for the fourth book. It might have been right before, but it was something I did not

comprehend until just a few months ago. I have been asked of what it means when we are told that we will see the son of man coming in the clouds. So we are going to be looking at where we are told this.

And then shall appear the sign of the Son of man in heaven: and then shall all the tribes of the earth mourn, and they shall see the Son of man coming in the clouds of heaven with power and great glory.
(Matthew 24:30)

Now we need to look at something else so that we can hear how the Bible defines clouds. To do this, we are going to be looking at the second chapter of second book of Peter.

But there were false prophets also among the people, even as there shall be false teachers among you, who privily shall bring in damnable heresies, even denying the Lord that bought them, and bring upon themselves swift destruction. And many shall follow their pernicious ways; by reason of whom the way of truth shall be evil spoken of. And through covetousness shall they with feigned words make merchandise of you: whose judgment now of a long time lingereth not, and their damnation slumbereth not. For if God spared not the angels that sinned, but cast them down to hell, and delivered them into chains of darkness, to be reserved unto judgment; And spared not the old world, but saved Noah the eighth person, a preacher of righteousness, bringing in the flood upon the world of the ungodly; And turning the cities of Sodom and Gomorrha into ashes condemned them with an overthrow, making them an ensample unto those that after should live ungodly; And delivered just Lot, vexed with the filthy conversation of the wicked: (For that righteous man dwelling among them, in seeing

and hearing, vexed his righteous soul from day to day with their unlawful deeds;) The Lord knoweth how to deliver the godly out of temptations, and to reserve the unjust unto the day of judgment to be punished: But chiefly them that walk after the flesh in the lust of uncleanness, and despise government. Presumptuous are they, selfwilled, they are not afraid to speak evil of dignities. Whereas angels, which are greater in power and might, bring not railing accusation against them before the Lord. But these, as natural brute beasts, made to be taken and destroyed, speak evil of the things that they understand not; and shall utterly perish in their own corruption; And shall receive the reward of unrighteousness, as they that count it pleasure to riot in the day time. Spots they are and blemishes, sporting themselves with their own deceivings while they feast with you; Having eyes full of adultery, and that cannot cease from sin; beguiling unstable souls: an heart they have exercised with covetous practices; cursed children: Which have forsaken the right way, and are gone astray, following the way of Balaam the son of Bosor, who loved the wages of unrighteousness; But was rebuked for his iniquity: the dumb ass speaking with man's voice forbad the madness of the prophet. **These are wells without water, clouds that are carried with a tempest; to whom the mist of darkness is reserved for ever.** For when they speak great swelling words of vanity, they allure through the lusts of the flesh, through much wantonness, those that were clean escaped from them who live in error. While they promise them liberty, they themselves are the servants of corruption: for of whom a man is overcome, of the same is he brought in bondage. For if after they have escaped the pollutions of the world through the knowledge of the Lord and Saviour

DAVID JENKINS

Jesus Christ, they are again entangled therein, and overcome, the latter end is worse with them than the beginning. For it had been better for them not to have known the way of righteousness, than, after they have known it, to turn from the holy commandment delivered unto them. But it is happened unto them according to the true proverb, The dog is turned to his own vomit again; and the sow that was washed to her wallowing in the mire. (2 Peter 2:1-22)

As you can hear in verse 17, “wells without water, clouds that are carried with a tempest,” David was, or is, a cloud that looks just like any other man on this planet. So now everybody can see how the son of man is coming in the clouds. Just as we have shown you all in Matthew 12, I will be the only sign this generation will have.

Okay, our Father has brought something to my attention that I didn't mention, and I am hoping that I am placing it in the right spot. We showed you all where Egypt is as water that covers the earth. In the last book, we showed how Jonas was a spirit that took about three days' journey in the city of Nineveh. This city is actually the earth that took three days to make in the very beginning. Now that we can see that Egypt is as water and covers the earth, **I can say I watch the Father part the sea all the time.** Have you ever heard the expression “sea of people”? When I am driving and traffic is heavy, I watch how He just causes people to move so that it is a lot easier for me to get into the flow of traffic. Now this will bother a lot, but we all know that Jesus walked on water, right?

And straightway Jesus constrained his disciples to get into a ship, and to go before him unto the other side, while he sent the multitudes away. And when he had sent the multitudes away, he went up into a mountain apart to pray: and when the evening was come, he was there alone. But the ship was now in the midst of the sea, tossed with waves: for the wind was contrary.

And in the fourth watch of the night Jesus went unto them, walking on the sea. And when the disciples saw him walking on the sea, they were troubled, saying, It is a spirit; and they cried out for fear. But straightway Jesus spake unto them, saying, Be of good cheer; it is I; be not afraid. And Peter answered him and said, Lord, if it be thou, bid me come unto thee on the water. And he said, Come. And when Peter was come down out of the ship, he walked on the water, to go to Jesus. But when he saw the wind boisterous, he was afraid; and beginning to sink, he cried, saying, Lord, save me. And immediately Jesus stretched forth his hand, and caught him, and said unto him, O thou of little faith, wherefore didst thou doubt? (Matthew 14:22–31)

Now if you have read the last book, we showed that when we listen to the Bible, it is like we are lifting ourselves above the clouds and listening to conversations going on in heaven. **“For our conversation is in heaven;** from whence also we look for the Saviour, the Lord Jesus Christ” (Philippians 3:20). Then remember that we are to meditate on the Word of God all the time.

Till I come, give attendance to reading, to exhortation, to doctrine. Neglect not the gift that is in thee, which was given thee by prophecy, with the laying on of the hands of the presbytery. **Meditate upon these things; give thyself wholly to them; that thy profiting may appear to all. Take heed unto thyself, and unto the doctrine; continue in them: for in doing this thou shalt both save thyself, and them that hear thee.** (1 Timothy 4:13–16)

I can't stop, nor do I want to stop, meditating on the Word of God. I am talking with our Father when I wake, when I eat, when I

go to the restroom, when I watch television, when I shower, when I am going to bed. It does not matter what I am doing, I cannot stop thinking about the Bible. We showed in the last book it was like I was lifted up above the clouds and listening in.

Remember the hour cometh that the true worshippers of God must worship Him in spirit and truth.

But the hour cometh, and now is, when the true worshippers shall worship the Father in spirit and in truth: for the Father seeketh such to worship him. God is a Spirit: and they that worship him must worship him in spirit and in truth. (John 4:23–24)

Have you ever heard the expression of “sea of people” or the wave at sporting events and such? You have seen that Egypt is deep waters. **“The words of a man’s mouth are as deep waters, and the wellspring of wisdom as a flowing brook”** (Proverbs 18:4). Then listen to James 1:6, “But let him ask in faith, nothing wavering. **For he that wavereth is like a wave of the sea driven with the wind and tossed.**”

Woe unto them! for they have gone in the way of Cain, and ran greedily after the error of Balaam for reward, and perished in the gainsaying of Core. These are spots in your feasts of charity, when they feast with you, feeding themselves without fear: clouds they are without water, carried about of winds; trees whose fruit withereth, without fruit, twice dead, plucked up by the roots; Raging waves of the sea, foaming out their own shame; wandering stars, to whom is reserved the blackness of darkness for ever. (Jude 1:11–13)

Now let us listen to when Jesus walked on water.

JESUS IS HERE

And when he had sent the multitudes away, he went up into a mountain apart to pray: and when the evening was come, he was there alone. **But the ship was now in the midst of the sea, tossed with waves: for the wind was contrary. And in the fourth watch of the night Jesus went unto them, walking on the sea.** And when the disciples saw him walking on the sea, they were troubled, saying, It is a spirit; and they cried out for fear. But straightway Jesus spake unto them, saying, Be of good cheer; it is I; be not afraid. And Peter answered him and said, Lord, if it be thou, bid me come unto thee on the water. And he said, Come. And when Peter was come down out of the ship, **he walked on the water, to go to Jesus. But when he saw the wind boisterous, he was afraid; and beginning to sink, he cried, saying, Lord, save me. And immediately Jesus stretched forth his hand, and caught him, and said unto him, O thou of little faith, wherefore didst thou doubt?** (Matthew 14:23–31)

I will say I am walking on water, and all the boisterous winds and waves do not startle me, and I will not sink. Every time I am walking to or from my truck, I am walking on the water so that I can prepare to be shipped to where our Father needs me next.

I know we are getting a little sidetracked, but our Father has brought something to my attention that needs to be brought up here. Okay, we just read what I was saying about meditating on the Word of God. We just mentioned that when we meditate, it is like we are being lifted about the clouds so that we can hear what they are saying in heaven. This is a level of heaven. This has to do with our conscience. When we meditate all the time on the scriptures, we are being lifted up to a different level of heaven. We know there are levels of heaven just by listening to 2 Corinthians 12:2, “I knew a man in Christ above fourteen years ago, (whether in the body, I cannot tell; or whether out

of the body, I cannot tell: God knoweth;) **such an one caught up to the third heaven.**” We can hear this in Psalm 139:8, **“If I ascend up into heaven, thou art there: if I make my bed in hell, behold, thou art there.”** That is how I can hear the things I hear and see the things I see. Matthew 13:17, **“For verily I say unto you, That many prophets and righteous men have desired to see those things which ye see, and have not seen them; and to hear those things which ye hear, and have not heard them.”** I will say that I have heard this a lot and knew it was about me, but I didn’t understand how it worked exactly until today. This is why we hear what we hear in John 3:13, **“And no man hath ascended up to heaven, but he that came down from heaven, even the Son of man which is in heaven.”** I am in a level of heaven but still not in heaven with our Father.

Now we need to realize why I can see and hear things that others cannot. To do this, we are going to allow the scriptures explain it. **“Awake to righteousness, and sin not; for some have not the knowledge of God: I speak this to your shame. But some man will say, How are the dead raised up? and with what body do they come? Thou fool, that which thou sowest is not quickened, except it die”** (1 Corinthians 15:34–36). David has died and now is quickened with Christ. **“Even when we were dead in sins, hath quickened us together with Christ, (by grace ye are saved;)”** (Ephesians 2:5).

This is where we want to explain a parable spoken of that pertains to this very spiritual death that David went through. We are going to be listening to the parable of putting new wine into old bottles. Before doing this though, we need to note that this wine is knowledge as shown in the second book. It was shown that everybody on this planet is a servant and or vessel of God.

And he spake also a parable unto them; No man putteth a piece of a new garment upon an old; if otherwise, then both the new maketh a rent, and the piece that was taken out of the new agreeth not with the old. And no man putteth new wine into old bottles; else the new wine will burst the bottles,

JESUS IS HERE

and be spilled, and the bottles shall per- ish. But new wine must be put into new bottles; and both are preserved. No man also having drunk old wine straightway desireth new: for he saith, The old is better. (Luke 5:36–39)

With David willingly walking out into the wilderness had to be born again into the kingdom of God. With him being the bottle or vessel of God, he got rid of the old wine so that our Father could fill his vessel with new wine.

Let us get back on the topic. Now I know that there must be others that think about the Bible all the time as I do. So here is my question for you: do you ever have any doubts, within yourself, if what your hearing makes sense to you, or do you still have doubts? Do you feel the love coming from our Father, or does part of you still think of Him being cruel or vindictive? Do you truly believe that He is perfect, righteous, in everything that He has done, doing, and will do? Do you feel like you're sinking, as shown in Psalm 69:2, "I sink in deep mire, where there is no standing: **I am come into deep waters, where the floods overflow me**"?

This is where I say all that came before me have been thieves and robbers, for they sought their own glory. With this being the third and final book of the trilogy our Father has had me write, I share everything to glorify our Father and not me.

All that ever came before me are thieves and robbers: but the sheep did not hear them. I am the door: by me if any man enter in, he shall be saved, and shall go in and out, and find pasture. The thief cometh not, but for to steal, and to kill, and to destroy: I am come that they might have life, and that they might have it more abundantly. (John 10:8–10)

I gave up my life so that the people of this world could learn of what our Father wants from all mankind. These books shorten

the Bible. Because our Father has hidden everything within this two thousand-plus-page book, I have taken the time to learn it and allowed our Father to show how people can do things in such a way that will bring this world out of darkness. I have not added or taken away from the Word. As you will be able to tell when you read any or all of these books, I live by every word that proceedeth out of the mouth of God.

These books are somewhat of a shortcut to our Father. It does not change anything about Him. But without you having to go through all that I have, you get an easier, “plain and simple” way of understanding of what our Father has been saying since the beginning of the world. Now I am sure there are very many that are denying and refusing to hear what you are now hearing. I don’t blame you, for on the ninth, when our Father first connected all of this in my mind, I too totally freaked out. I lost a couple of days of sleep and am still having a hard time sleeping. My mind has Bible verses bouncing around more than they ever have. I was and am still a little worried about putting this in here. Don’t get me wrong, I had a pretty good idea, but I knew I couldn’t say anything. Then on the seventeenth of June, I heard what the Spirit was saying to me. Who is the spirit? **“God is a Spirit:** and they that worship him must worship him in spirit and in truth” (John 4:24). The Father was giving me a direct commandment. I was told that I needed to get this book done. I was procrastinating, for this is huge. Then I heard the Spirit tell me, “Make your name known,” and I was told twice. Yes, our Father did use a servant to tell me this, and this servant didn’t even realize what she had said, but she said it. Okay, I have heard it, and I will do as I am commanded. Now, in closing this chapter, we all know that it takes two or three witnesses to establish a matter, right? Here is the way our Father is making me feel I should do this. In this chapter alone, there is at least seven or eight witnesses. Now, all that came before me, claiming to be Jesus, did not write any books showing an in-depth understanding of the scriptures. So that makes me the vessel in which our Father is using to be the author of our salvation. Who is the author of our salvation? “Looking unto Jesus the author and finisher of our faith; who for the joy that was set before

him endured the cross, despising the shame, and is set down at the right hand of the throne of God” (Hebrews 12:2).

If you read any of the three books our Father has had me write, you will see and hear a completely different doctrine, but this doctrine comes from the Bible. It is our Father’s doctrine and not man’s. “And the Jews marvelled, saying, How knoweth this man letters, having never learned? Jesus answered them, and said, **My doctrine is not mine, but his that sent me.** If any man will do his will, he shall know of the doctrine, whether it be of God, or whether I speak of myself” (John 7:15–17). Now the three books make three more witnesses. Now I realize that we have given a few witnesses, but as we were eating dinner, I was reminded of the scripture asking if Jesus was the son of David. We all know that Joseph and Mary had Jesus. But, let us listen to Matthew 12:22–23, “Then was brought unto him one possessed with a devil, blind, and dumb: and he healed him, insomuch that the blind and dumb both spake and saw. **And all the people were amazed, and said, Is not this the son of David?**” I know there are a lot of speculations on this. Here you go: my dad’s name was David C. Jenkins. The David who died March 8–9 of 2016 is David C. Jenkins II. If this means anything or not, my dad was a carpenter by trade. He went to school and could gut a house and fancy it back up. He preferred factory work and did do this for a living; however, he just didn’t like the hours carpenters put in. He liked being on a set schedule. I do not want any reward while here on earth. If we ever meet, and something happens in which you feel the need to say thank-you to me, I will tell you to thank our Father, for He is my boss, and I try to do what He tells me to do. “**I have raised him up in righteousness, and I will direct all his ways: he shall build my city, and he shall let go my captives, not for price nor reward, saith the Lord of hosts**” (Isaiah 45:13). And this is why I do not want anything on this planet for a reward. “For ye shall not go out with haste, nor go by flight: for the Lord will go before you; **and the God of Israel will be your reward**” (Isaiah 52:12). I trust Him and will wait for Him.

I feel our Father is telling me to share something else. It is kind of like He has told me to lay all my cards on the table, so to speak.

We mentioned a bit ago that shortly after our Father called me to the Bible, I made some videos and such. When I was making my channel, I wanted to use the screen name of THEJENKS. I have always just kind of liked the sound of it; however, YouTube would not let me use this name. They gave me a suggestion of THEJENKS1000. Okay, I can live with that, was what I was thinking, so that is what I named the channel. Our Father was telling me way back then of who I am and where we are at. I was making a few videos to help explain the book *Behold, a Greater Than Jonas Is Here!!!* when He brought something to my attention. That was when He started to let me know that I needed to write another book. I do not know if He will allow me to make more videos or not, but I do know that it is up to Him and not me.

This does not make me any better than any other person on this planet. I am a fellow servant who desires to obey our Father. We all have our own different roles to fulfill, as shown in the second book. Our Father did not choose me because of my works. He didn't choose me because I have always had more knowledge than others. He did not choose me because I am more or have ever been more deserving than others. Our Father chose me simply because He said He will choose whom He will choose and have mercy upon who He will have mercy. "And he said, I will make all my goodness pass before thee, and I will proclaim the name of the Lord before thee; and will be gracious **to whom I will be gracious, and will shew mercy on whom I will shew mercy**" (Exodus 33:19). "For he saith to Moses, **I will have mercy on whom I will have mercy, and I will have compassion on whom I will have compassion.** So then it is not of him that willeth, nor of him that runneth, but of God that sheweth mercy" (Romans 9:15–16). Now I will make one last comment at the very end of this chapter. Before Abraham, I am. AND I AM NOT GOD THE FATHER. I did not create anyone, and I will be darned if I will even think of taking that away from our Father. I assure you though, He is sitting right next to me. I have aches and pains, I have tears, I have fears (only of God the Father), I smoke and cough a lot (will not try to save my life), and most of all, I suffer just as the rest of mankind.

JESUS IS HERE

Now that we have brought all this up and showed you all that I have been learning obedience, there is something that needs to be known. I am very blessed in that our Father has chosen me to fulfill this role. But at the same time, I want to make it known that it is not all fun and games learning this obedience. I love what He is doing with me, and yes, I am extremely thankful. But there are days that are very difficult. He recently reminded me that I am still learning. He had me show this in the first book: Jesus was made perfect as the scriptures say. They do say that he was made perfect by learning obedience through the things in which he suffered.

Who in the days of his flesh, when he had offered up prayers and supplications with strong crying and tears unto him that was able to save him from death, and was heard in that he feared; **Though he were a Son, yet learned he obedience by the things which he suffered;** And being made perfect, he became the author of eternal salvation unto all them that obey him. (Hebrews 5:7–9)

There are some days in which I think it would be easier to just pull all of my teeth out at once. And yes, there are days in which I get very mad because, well, because I get scared. Just like a little child does when they feel they have messed up or are not understanding what their parents want them to do. If Jesus is God, then I would not have days like I do. But I wouldn't trade it for the world.

LET US MAKE MAN IN OUR IMAGE



This is a topic that is covered in all three books and will be covered now. We will be using a lot of what was in this chapter in the first book. Then we will also be covering the second step or level of knowledge our Father gave me for the second book. Then we will be covering what was shared in the third book or third level of knowledge that we shared in the third book. Then finally we will be learning of the fourth level, which came quickly after the last book was published. However, all of this will have more detail in the chapter, for I do have a much better understanding once we start connecting all the levels as one. I realize that there are many people out there today that think this means we look like them.

We need to look at a couple of things before we dive into this chapter so that everybody can clear their minds as to thinking we look like them. First let us listen to when the scriptures say this.

And God said, Let us make man in our image, after our likeness: and let them have dominion over the fish of the sea, and over the fowl of the air, and over the cattle, and over all the earth, and over every creeping thing that creepeth upon the earth. So God created man in his own image, in the image of God created he him; male and female created he them. And God blessed them, and God said unto them, Be fruitful, and multiply, and replenish the earth, and subdue it: and have dominion over the fish

of the sea, and over the fowl of the air, and over every living thing that moveth upon the earth. And God said, Behold, I have given you every herb bearing seed, which is upon the face of all the earth, and every tree, in the which is the fruit of a tree yielding seed; to you it shall be for meat. And to every beast of the earth, and to every fowl of the air, and to every thing that creepeth upon the earth, wherein there is life, I have given every green herb for meat: and it was so. And God saw every thing that he had made, and, behold, it was very good. And the evening and the morning were the sixth day. (Genesis 1:26–31)

Now that we have heard what the scriptures say, let us venture to Colossians 1:12–15.

Giving thanks unto the Father, which hath made us meet to be partakers of the inheritance of the saints in light: Who hath delivered us from the power of darkness, and hath translated us into the kingdom of his dear Son: In whom we have redemption through his blood, even the forgiveness of sins: **Who is the image of the invisible God, the firstborn of every creature.**

Okay, there is something that we need to bring up, and yes, it might be out of topic, but it must be said. Notice the first part of Genesis 1:26, “**And God said, Let us make man in our image, after our likeness:** and let them have dominion over the fish of the sea, and over the fowl of the air, and over the cattle, and over all the earth, and over every creeping thing that creepeth upon the earth.” I have brought this up in the last two books and am bringing it up again because many people I speak with just do not seem to grasp this. Who is God talking to when He says this? Now listen to Philippians 3:20, “**For our conversation is in heaven;** from whence also we look

for the Saviour, the Lord Jesus Christ.” Now let us picture this in your mind so that you can really see what we are talking about. Let us imagine you and I are talking face-to-face. Let us imagine we are talking from heaven somewhere. I tell you, “Let us make man in our image”; am I talking about us, or am I talking about those that are on earth? When we read or listen to the Bible, we are listening to their conversations that took place in heaven and not here on earth. That is why so many people cannot grasp the Bible in a language in which we can understand right away. They speak with a much better intelligence than man can comprehend. This is one of the foremost reasons we are told to seek God with all of our heart. **“But if from thence thou shalt seek the Lord thy God, thou shalt find him, if thou seek him with all thy heart and with all thy soul”** (Deuteronomy 4:29). **“And ye shall seek me, and find me, when ye shall search for me with all your heart”** (Jeremiah 29:13). And where can you be sure to know where all about God is? The Bible, and not all other books that man thinks the Bible means.

God the Father is invisible, and so are those He is talking with here. We can see each other unless someone has an eye impairment or something; we are not invisible. So, when we listen, we should be knowing now that this is not about us looking like them. Now if you have read the last two books, hopefully you know that this is the **angels**, spirits, kings, and even Satan. They all are invisible, and we all can be seen. This is also in the very beginning of the Bible, so we need to look at what our Father tells us in Isaiah 46:10, **“Declaring the end from the beginning, and from ancient times the things that are not yet done, saying,** My counsel shall stand, and I will do all my pleasure.” This is our Father telling us on the very first page of the Bible that we are reading what they are saying in heaven. We will be going over this in more detail later in the book, but try to keep that in mind as you read through this book. This is why our Father had me name the first book *Father, Forgive Us, We Haven't Been Listening*. Now with that being said, let us dive into this chapter, for it is not at all what people have been thinking.

Let us notice one other thing before we go any further. Notice how I put *angels* in bold above? If you have read the second book our Father had me write, *Behold, a Greater Than Jonas Is Here!!!*, then you should be understanding that everybody on the planet makes up the one son of God or Jesus. Let us look as to when Jesus was placed a little lower than the angels. “But we see Jesus, **who was made a little lower than the angels for the suffering of death, crowned with glory and honour; that he by the grace of God should taste death for every man**” (Hebrews 2:9). And yes, this means even Adam in the very beginning. “For he shall give his angels charge over thee, to keep thee in all thy ways” (Psalm 91:11). Not showing all of the attempted temptations of Satan but will show one in Luke 4:8–10.

And Jesus answered and said unto him, Get thee behind me, Satan: for it is written, Thou shalt worship the Lord thy God, and him only shalt thou serve. And he brought him to Jerusalem, and set him on a pinnacle of the temple, and said unto him, If thou be the Son of God, cast thyself down from hence: **For it is written, He shall give his angels charge over thee, to keep thee.**

We are going to start this off with listening to what Jesus said in Luke 18:15–17.

And they brought unto him also infants, that he would touch them: but when his disciples saw it, they rebuked them. But Jesus called them unto him, and said, Suffer little children to come unto me, and forbid them not: for of such is the kingdom of God. **Verily I say unto you, Whosoever shall not receive the kingdom of God as a little child shall in no wise enter therein.**

JESUS IS HERE

We bring this one up first, for this is the only time that this is said with the infant child. Now let us think about this infant child. We are not going to look at skin color, race, nationalism, size, or shape. We are going to notice the left shoulder, then the right shoulder, then we are going to look at this child's face, and then finally notice this child's belly button. We noticed the very same cross this child will carry until the time of death. This is the cross that is in every person on this planet. That is how every person on the planet makes up the one son of God, as shown in the second book. It is a spiritual cross and not wooden, metal, or made of any material that can be felt or seen. It is not made with hands.

However, this is the cross that Jesus tells us to take up and follow him with.

Then said Jesus unto his disciples, If any man will come after me, **let him deny himself, and take up his cross, and follow me.** For whosoever will save his life shall lose it: and whosoever will lose his life for my sake shall find it. For what is a man profited, if he shall gain the whole world, and lose his own soul? or what shall a man give in exchange for his soul?
(Matthew 16:24–26)

Notice how we are to deny ourselves and take up our cross and follow Jesus? This cross should have invisible rays of love and compassion going in all directions and for all mankind, just as Jesus did.

Now we need to listen to when we are told that Jesus had to bear his own cross.

Then delivered he him therefore unto them to be crucified. And they took Jesus, and led him away. **And he bearing his cross went forth into a place called the place of a skull,** which is called in the Hebrew Golgotha. (John 19:16–17)

Every person on this planet is carrying his or her own cross. Now notice how they went into a place called the place of the skull. What is inside of your skull? When we try to make someone be something other than they are or, better said, to make someone think that they are not right by God, we crucify them daily. We put a spiritual nail in their hand or foot.

Now just think about this infant child. He or she does not usually complain about how things are in their life. Yes, they cry when they need a diaper changed, when they need to be fed, need some sleep, or maybe starting to cut teeth. This infant does not judge anybody, nor does he or she condemn others. This infant is always thankful when their needs are met. Notice we said needs are met and not their wants. Let us listen to what we are told about being thankful. **“In every thing give thanks: for this is the will of God in Christ Jesus concerning you”** (1 Thessalonians 5:18). “Continue in prayer, and watch in the same with thanksgiving” (Colossians 4:2). We are not being told to watch with thanksgiving at only particular times—it is constant; in all things, give thanksgiving.

Now we are going to listen to when Jesus tells us that we must become as little children.

And said, Verily I say unto you, Except ye be converted, and become as little children, ye shall not enter into the kingdom of heaven. Whosoever therefore shall humble himself as this little child, the same is greatest in the kingdom of heaven.

And whoso shall receive one such little child in my name receiveth me. But whoso shall offend one of these little ones which believe in me, it were better for him that a mill-stone were hanged about his neck, and that he were drowned in the depth of the sea.
(Matthew 18:3–6)

Now let us imagine twenty three- or four-year-old children playing together at the park on a summer day. These children are

playing together and not looking at skin color, race, nationalism, size, or shape. They are generally just happy to be around others of the same age range. They are not judging or condemning others for being who they are. And if one or two of the children get hurt, they usually have compassion for the injured. They just love without thinking about it.

Now that we just brought up the infant and the little children, we need to do something before going on. What we are doing is introducing the unwritten laws that we all follow every day without thinking about or realizing it. When a child is born, they know how to feed on breast milk or formula. Then they must learn to chew as they get older. Then they start to roll over, crawl, walk, and eventually run. I will ask you as you are reading this, how much do you think about chewing, walking, or running daily? You don't, it just comes naturally. Believe it or not, there are physics laws involved in every move you make.

Now I realize that there are probably a few that do not realize this, so let us do a Google search on here and let us look at the three laws of physics. What are the three laws of physics? Newton's three laws of motion may be stated as follows: **Every object in a state of uniform motion will remain in that state of motion unless an external force acts on it. Force equals mass times acceleration. For every action, there is an equal and opposite reaction.** (Newton's Three Laws of Motion—CCRMA—Stanford University https://ccrma.stanford.edu/~jos/pasp/Newton_s_Three_Laws_Motion). Now can you see how every movement someone takes is following some kind of unwritten law? Well, I call them unwritten laws, for we never took classes or such to learn how to do these things.

Let us look at Isaiah 56:1-7.

Thus saith the Lord, Keep ye judgment, and do justice: for my salvation is near to come, and my righteousness to be revealed. Blessed is the man that doeth this, and the son of man that layeth hold on it; that keepeth the sabbath from polluting it, and keepeth his hand from doing any evil. Neither let the son of the stranger,

that hath joined himself to the Lord, speak, saying, The Lord hath utterly separated me from his people: neither let the eunuch say, Behold, I am a dry tree. For thus saith the Lord unto the eunuchs that keep my sabbaths, and choose the things that please me, and take hold of my covenant; Even unto them will I give in mine house and within my walls a place and a name better than of sons and of daughters: I will give them an everlasting name, that shall not be cut off. Also the sons of the stranger, that join themselves to the Lord, to serve him, and to love the name of the Lord, to be his servants, every one that keepeth the sabbath from polluting it, and taketh hold of my covenant; **Even them will I bring to my holy mountain, and make them joyful in my house of prayer: their burnt offerings and their sacrifices shall be accepted upon mine altar; for mine house shall be called an house of prayer for all people.**

Then again, we listen to when Jesus is telling us how that we have made the house of prayer a den of thieves. **“And he taught, saying unto them, Is it not written, *My house shall be called of all nations the house of prayer?* but ye have made it a den of thieves”** (Mark 11:17).

Now for us to think of a house that has been built in one particular spot on the earth would be thinking foolishly or, better said, is to be thinking carnally. And we all know that to think carnally is enmity with God.

For to be carnally minded is death; but to be spiritually minded is life and peace. **Because the carnal mind is enmity against God: for it is not subject to the law of God, neither indeed can be.** So then they that are in the flesh cannot please God. (Romans 8:6–8)

JESUS IS HERE

We know without a doubt that there are many people that do not, cannot, and will not travel to other areas of the world. So, with us knowing that our Father is love, we can be certain He did not make it impossible for all to come to Him. We can know this when we listen to 2 Peter 3:9, “The Lord is not slack concerning his promise, as some men count slackness; but is longsuffering to us-ward, **not will- ing that any should perish, but that all should come to repentance.**”

Now we are going to use MySword Bible. It is the same as e-Sword but only on Android, so I had to copy it on my tablet and send it to myself so that I could post it in this book. It is an online Bible concordance, so that we can look at all the definitions for *house*.

H1004 Original: בַּיִת Transliteration: bayith Phonetic: bah'-yith BDB Definition: house, house, **dwelling habitation**, shelter or abode of animals, human bodies (figuratively), of Sheol, of abode of light and darkness, of land of Ephraim, place, receptacle, home, **house as containing a family**, household, family, those belonging to the same household, family of descendants, **descendants as organized body**, household affairs, inward (metaphorically), (TWOT) tem- ple, on the inside, Within, Origin: probably from H1129 abbreviated. Strong's Definition: Probably from H1129 abbreviated; a house (in the greatest variation of applications, especially family, etc.):— court, daughter, door, + dungeon, family, + forth of, X great as would contain, hangings. home[born], [winter]house (-hold), inside(-ward), palace, place, + **prison**, + steward, + tablet, temple, web, + within (-out).

I am going to say here that we will be doing a lot on the house of God in this chapter. But for now, we are not going to be looking into how each person is the house of God. We will be looking at the earth as one house and then try to picture each continent as a house. Then

try to notice how states can be a house and then even cities. These are boundaries in which we live. Just as you have a house that you go home to all the time. Then next I ask you to reflect back to the last book and try to remember how we showed that we are in prison now. We are in their image, so everything that happens on this planet is what happens in heaven. Let us listen to how we are told to pray.

After this manner therefore pray ye: **Our Father which art in heaven, Hallowed be thy name. 10 Thy kingdom come, Thy will be done in earth, as it is in heaven.** 11 Give us this day our daily bread. 12 And forgive us our debts, as we forgive our debtors. 13 And lead us not into temptation, but deliver us from evil: For thine is the kingdom, and the power, and the glory, for ever. Amen. (Matthew 6:9–13)

Right there in verse 10, “Thy kingdom come, **Thy will be done in earth, as it is in heaven.**” When someone goes to prison on this planet, they are kept somewhere in which they cannot leave. And are kept away from loved ones and such. Our souls are kept here on earth and are not with our loved ones, and we cannot get back to our Father until the end of our sentence. Or better said, until all things be fulfilled.

Think not that I am come to destroy the law, or the prophets: I am not come to destroy, but to fulfil. For verily I say unto you, Till heaven and earth pass, one jot or one tittle shall in no wise pass from the law, till all be fulfilled. (Matthew 5:17–18)

Let us listen to a couple of times that we can hear that we are in prison.

For he hath looked down from the height of his sanctuary; from heaven did the Lord behold the earth; **To hear the groaning of the prisoner; to loose**

JESUS IS HERE

those that are appointed to death; To declare the name of the Lord in Zion, and his praise in Jerusalem. (Psalm 102:19–21)

Attend unto my cry; for I am brought very low: deliver me from my persecutors; for they are stronger than I. **Bring my soul out of prison, that I may praise thy name: the righteous shall compass me about; for thou shalt deal bountifully with me.** (Psalm 142:6–7)

When we truly listen, we must question as to how our Father can bring us out of prison, if we are not in prison now. This is the planet we have been sentenced to.

Without going into so many other areas of the Bible and getting way off track now, let us just realize that the earth is the house. In the next few examples we will be using, you will notice how we are going to be using a lot of different houses per se. And we are going to be realizing that we all follow laws every day. I am not just talking about the laws that keep us out of jail, but there are several unwritten laws that we all follow each day, and we do not even think about it or even realize it for that matter.

I realize that many realize that just by following the law, does not justify anyone.

Therefore by the deeds of the law there shall no flesh be justified in his sight: for by the law is the knowledge of sin. But now the righteousness of God without the law is manifested, being witnessed by the law and the prophets. (Romans 3:20–21)

But then we need to listen to what we are told in James 2:1–26.

My brethren, have not the faith of our Lord Jesus Christ, the Lord of glory, with respect of persons.

For if there come unto your assembly a man with a gold ring, in goodly apparel, and there come in also a poor man in vile raiment; And ye have respect to him that weareth the gay clothing, and say unto him, Sit thou here in a good place; and say to the poor, Stand thou there, or sit here under my footstool: Are ye not then partial in yourselves, and are become judges of evil thoughts? Hearken, my beloved brethren, Hath not God chosen the poor of this world rich in faith, and heirs of the kingdom which he hath promised to them that love him? But ye have despised the poor. Do not rich men oppress you, and draw you before the judgment seats? Do not they blaspheme that worthy name by the which ye are called? If ye fulfil the royal law according to the scripture, Thou shalt love thy neighbour as thyself, ye do well: But if ye have respect to persons, ye commit sin, and are convinced of the law as transgressors. For whosoever shall keep the whole law, and yet offend in one point, he is guilty of all. For he that said, Do not commit adultery, said also, Do not kill. Now if thou commit no adultery, yet if thou kill, thou art become a transgressor of the law. So speak ye, and so do, as they that shall be judged by the law of liberty. For he shall have judgment without mercy, that hath shewed no mercy; and mercy rejoiceth against judgment. What doth it profit, my brethren, though a man say he hath faith, and have not works? can faith save him? If a brother or sister be naked, and destitute of daily food, And one of you say unto them, Depart in peace, be ye warmed and filled; notwithstanding ye give them not those things which are needful to the body; what doth it profit? **Even so faith, if it hath not works, is dead, being alone. Yea, a man may say, Thou hast faith, and I have works: shew me thy faith without thy**

works, and I will shew thee my faith by my works. Thou believest that there is one God; thou doest well: the devils also believe, and tremble. But wilt thou know, O vain man, that faith without works is dead? Was not Abraham our father justified by works, when he had offered Isaac his son upon the altar? Seest thou how faith wrought with his works, and by works was faith made perfect? And the scripture was fulfilled which saith, Abraham believed God, and it was imputed unto him for righteousness: and he was called the Friend of God. Ye see then how that by works a man is justified, and not by faith only. Likewise also was not Rahab the harlot justified by works, when she had received the messengers, and had sent them out another way? For as the body without the spirit is dead, so faith without works is dead also.

This is when we realize that this is a spiritual works in which we are justified. If we do not have these spiritual works, then we are not justified by any means. You will be seeing this through the next few examples. These spiritual works cannot be seen with the eye. These spiritual works cannot be faked or put on for show, for they are continuances without hesitation. They just come naturally, just as you do when you chew your food, walk, run, or even open a door. You do not think about how to do it, you just do it. These spiritual works are the works of a love for God and everyone around you. Let us listen to the two greatest commandments.

Master, which is the great commandment in the law? Jesus said unto him, Thou shalt love the Lord thy God with all thy heart, and with all thy soul, and with all thy mind. This is the first and great commandment. And the second is like unto it, Thou shalt love thy neighbour as thyself. On these two

commandments hang all the law and the prophets.
(Matthew 22:36–40)

Then we need to realize that this love needs to truly come from our own heart and not a love to be seen by others. When we tend to want to be seen of our works by man, we desire to be rewarded by man instead of our Father.

Before getting into distinct examples, we need to listen to one example that pertains to all. Let us use an example: let us say you are sitting in a chair right now reading this book. Put the book down, get up, walk across the room, and come back. Now that you did that, how much did you think about how much muscle it would take to lift yourself? How much did you think about how much muscle it would take for each step? Did you think about how long each step should be? Did you think about where you needed to aim your foot for every step? Did you think about how you needed to pivot your feet so that your thighs and knees would use the correct amount of force to turn around and come back? Did you think about how fast you need to get up or sit back down so that you wouldn't get a head rush or tip the chair over when sitting down? You had to learn these laws as you grew from an infant to who you are today. When you were a child, you had to learn to chew and eat solid foods; you had to learn to crawl and then walk and run. You had to learn how to dress yourself and so on. After learning these things way back then, you just naturally do them today. That is what it is like when we truly let the Word of God teach us. We learn to naturally love God and others as ourselves without thinking about it. We naturally start to truly treat God and others as we would have them treat us, as shown in Matthew 7:12, **“Therefore all things whatsoever ye would that men should do to you, do ye even so to them: for this is the law and the prophets.”**

Now we are going to look at a few more examples of how we follow unwritten laws without even thinking about it. We will start with my life for an example. I am a truck driver and drive across the country. To drive a truck, I did have to go to a truck driving school back in 1991. Remember how in Galatians that the law is our school- master?

“Wherefore the law was our schoolmaster to bring us unto Christ, that we might be justified by faith” (Galatians 3:24). Try to keep that in mind as you read through this. I had to go to school so that I could learn of the laws and such to drive an 18-wheeler. I must keep up with the changes in the laws for driving so that I can continue to do my job. This is where we need to remember that the new laws that are coming in for truck drivers are actually being made by our Father—and not man, as many think.

Let every soul be subject unto the higher powers. For there is no power but of God: the powers that be are ordained of God. Whosoever therefore resisteth the power, resisteth the ordinance of God: and they that resist shall receive to themselves damnation. For rulers are not a terror to good works, but to the evil. Wilt thou then not be afraid of the power? do that which is good, and thou shalt have praise of the same. (Romans 13:1–3)

Everything in which happens in your life is a lesson. Now when I drive across country, I must obey city, state, and federal laws at all times. If I do not, I will be punished or chastised. **“But if ye be without chastisement, whereof all are partakers, then are ye bastards, and not sons”** (Hebrews 12:8). Let us imagine that I get pulled over for doing 70 mph in a 55-mph speeding zone. The first thing that I must accept is that it is my own fault for breaking the speed limit. No matter what, it is no one else’s fault that I was breaking the law. Now that I am getting a ticket, I will have to pay the fine. I will have to pay a higher insurance rate because I didn’t obey the law. If I do not pay the fine, then I will lose my license. When I pay the fine and continue to speed, I will continue to get tickets until my license is suspended. Now we need to think about other factors involved when I speed. What if someone in front of me stops all of a sudden, and I can’t. Is it fair to them that I put their life in danger because I don’t want to follow the speed limit?

Now if I continue to break the speed limit and ignore the chastisement coming from above, I will get my license suspended or revoked. I lose my job. My job is the spiritual house in which I live. What I mean is that my job is my income in which I live and would use to help support my immediate family if I wasn't by myself. All my children are grown and on their own now. I am with the Father all the time. Yes, these laws are written, but I do not look at them daily or very often for that matter. They have become so well known within me that I just naturally try to obey them all the time. And if by some chance I allow my truck to roll over the speed limit rolling down a hill or something and do get a ticket, I must pay the fine and learn from my mistake. Or I will be kicked out of the house. This house could be a city, state, or even the United States. I must obey the law, or I will not be allowed to drive the truck in the spiritual house of the United States.

Just listen to what we are being told in 1 Peter 2:5, **“Ye also, as lively stones, are built up a spiritual house, an holy priesthood, to offer up spiritual sacrifices, acceptable to God by Jesus Christ.”** Now realizing that this house is spiritual, we can know that if I choose not to obey the laws, I will be kicked out of this house. My blood will still be pumping; I will continue to breathe but will no longer be able to work in this spiritual house of the United States. Now listen to what we are being told in 2 Corinthians 5:1, “For we know that if our earthly house of this tabernacle were dissolved, we have a building of God, **an house not made with hands, eternal in the heavens.**”

Now this is something that I showed in the last book, but I really feel that we need to bring this up again so that we can see that these houses are spiritual houses. We are going to be venturing off topic with keeping the same topic. Please bear with me. Now when I had the car accident on March 28 (Good Friday), 1986, I was living in the town of Macon, Missouri. The center of the United States is around Lebanon, Kansas. I was living 333 miles away from the center of the country. Then when I was baptized with the Holy Ghost on March 8–9 of 2016, almost thirty years later to the day, I was living in Osage Beach, Missouri, a town close to Lake Ozark, Missouri. This was

JESUS IS HERE

just a little over four hundred miles away from the very center of the country. Now listen to what we hear in Ezekiel 12:1–5.

The word of the Lord also came unto me, saying, 2 *Son of man, thou dwellest in the midst of a rebellious house, which have eyes to see, and see not; they have ears to hear, and hear not: for they are a rebellious house.* 3 Therefore, thou son of man, prepare thee stuff for removing, and remove by day in their sight; and thou shalt remove from thy place to another place in their sight: it may be they will consider, though they be a rebellious house. 4 Then shalt thou bring forth thy stuff by day in their sight, as stuff for removing: and thou shalt go forth at even in their sight, as they that go forth into captivity. 5 **Dig thou through the wall in their sight, and carry out thereby.**

When we listen, we can realize that our Father is not talking about a physical house but rather a spiritual house. The physical house in which I lived at the time did not rebel at all. We also want to bring up what is being said in verse 5. This wall that I have had to dig through is on the inside of each one of us. This is the same wall that after we have learned of our Father, as noted in John 6, Jesus knocks down.

That at that time ye were without Christ, being aliens from the commonwealth of Israel, and strangers from the covenants of promise, having no hope, and without God in the world: But now in Christ Jesus ye who sometimes were far off are made nigh by the blood of Christ. For he is our peace, who hath made both one, **and hath broken down the middle wall of partition between us.** (Ephesians 2:12–14)

Now I realize that there are many that believe that the wall has been torn down for all, but this is the process of the entire Bible.

Remember we are hearing conversations that are in heaven. “**For our conversation is in heaven;** from whence also we look for the Saviour, the Lord Jesus Christ” (Philippians 3:20). Then listen to 1 Peter 2:21, “For the prophecy came not in old time by the will of man: but holy men of God spake as they were moved by the Holy Ghost.” These scriptures were actually written through holy men only writing what they were being told to write by our Father.

So now we are going to jump back to the book of Ezekiel and listen to some of the abominations listed.

Then said he unto me, *Son of man, dig now in the wall: and when I had digged in the wall, behold a door.* And he said unto me, Go in, and behold the wicked abominations that they do here. **So I went in and saw; and behold every form of creeping things, and abominable beasts, and all the idols of the house of Israel, pourtrayed upon the wall round about.** And there stood before them seventy men of the ancients of the house of Israel, and in the midst of them stood Jaazaniah the son of Shaphan, with every man his censer in his hand; and a thick cloud of incense went up. (Ezekiel 8:8–11)

Pausing here for a minute, we need to look at the scriptures in which Jesus flipped the tables. “**And Jesus went into the temple of God, and cast out all them that sold and bought in the temple, and overthrew the tables of the moneychangers, and the seats of them that sold doves, And said unto them, It is written, My house shall be called the house of prayer; but ye have made it a den of thieves**” (Matthew 21:12–13). Now we need to look as to where the temple of God is. “**Know ye not that ye are the temple of God,** and that the Spirit of God dwelleth in you? If any man defile the temple of God, him shall God destroy; for the temple of God is holy, which temple ye are” (1 Corinthians 3:16–17). How many people still think that having statues and figures of animals and such is not disappointing our

JESUS IS HERE

Father? Let us look at a couple of spots we are told that these tables that get flipped are on our hearts.

My son forget not my law; but let thine heart keep my commandments: For length of days, and long life, and peace, shall they add to thee. Let not mercy and truth forsake thee: bind them about thy neck; write them upon the table of thine heart. (Proverbs 3:1–3)

My son, keep my words, and lay up my commandments with thee. Keep my commandments, and live; and my law as the apple of thine eye. Bind them upon thy fingers, write them upon the table of thine heart. (Proverbs 7:1–3)

Do we begin again to commend ourselves? or need we, as some others, epistles of commendation to you, or letters of commendation from you? Ye are our epistle written in our hearts, known and read of all men: Forasmuch as ye are manifestly declared to be the epistle of Christ ministered by us, written not with ink, but with the Spirit of the living God; not in tables of stone, but in fleshy tables of the heart. (2 Corinthians 3:1–3)

These tables are on your heart; if your heart still desires to have these things placed around you at all times, then Jesus has not been raised up inside of you to flip your table yet. You have been defiling the temple of God by not allowing our Father to lead you to Jesus. So instead, you have been listening to man or another god that tells you that you need to have these things to bring you peace, which the only one that gives us true peace on the inside is our Father.

Then said he unto me, Son of man, hast thou seen what the ancients of the house of Israel do in the dark, every

DAVID JENKINS

man in the chambers of his imagery? for they say, the Lord seeth us not; the Lord hath forsaken the earth. He said also unto me, Turn thee yet again, and thou shalt see greater abominations that they do. Then he brought me to the door of the gate of the Lord's house which was toward the north; and, behold, there sat women weeping for Tammuz. Then said he unto me, Hast thou seen this, O son of man? turn thee yet again, and thou shalt see greater abominations than these. And he brought me into the inner court of the Lord's house, and, behold, at the door of the temple of the Lord, between the porch and the altar, were about five and twenty men, with their backs toward the temple of the Lord, and their faces toward the east; and they worshipped the sun toward the east. Then he said unto me, Hast thou seen this, O son of man? Is it a light thing to the house of Judah that they commit the abominations which they commit here? for they have filled the land with violence, and have returned to provoke me to anger: and, lo, they put the branch to their nose. Therefore will I also deal in fury: mine eye shall not spare, neither will I have pity: and though they cry in mine ears with a loud voice, yet will I not hear them. (Ezekiel 8:12-18)

Has your wall been brought down, or do you still think that having graven images or materials things is what you need? Now let us listen to 1 Timothy 6:1-8.

Let as many servants as are under the yoke count their own masters worthy of all honour, that the name of God and his doctrine be not blasphemed. And they that have believing masters, let them not despise them, because they are brethren; but rather do them service, because they are faithful and beloved, partakers of the

JESUS IS HERE

benefit. These things teach and exhort. If any man teach otherwise, and consent not to wholesome words, even the words of our Lord Jesus Christ, and to the doctrine which is according to godliness; He is proud, knowing nothing, but doting about questions and strifes of words, whereof cometh envy, strife, railings, evil surmisings, Perverse disputings of men of corrupt minds, and destitute of the truth, supposing that gain is godliness: from such withdraw thyself. **But godliness with contentment is great gain. For we brought nothing into this world, and it is certain we can carry nothing out. And having food and raiment let us be therewith content.**

Now I want to use an example of someone who works at a factory. I am not going to go over many professions, for this was covered in the first book that our Father had me write. And there are many areas in which we need to cover, so in order to keep the book from being six to eight hundred pages long, we will only cover a few, and we can know that this is how it works for everybody and not just some. Let us picture someone who works at a factory of some sort. I will use a factory that I worked in when I was nineteen years old. We used to make toasters. I would have to be to work on time. I worked toward the end of the line in which I worked on. I tested the product to make sure the product was functioning in the way it was designed to before getting packed into the box and then shipped off to wherever it was going. Now to the job I did, I would put the two sides on the toaster and then plug it in so that I could know that it was working properly.

This was a long time ago, so my memory of it is not all the greatest, but with the knowledge of the Bible and all that our Father has taught me, I can remember enough to relate it to the Bible. I would say there were ten to twelve people on the line before me, and everything had to be put together at a certain time so that the finished product would make it to the very end of the line. Now a lot of the parts that my line put together were assembled somewhere else in the plant before

they came to our line. And then there had to be many parts that were shipped to the factory for us to be able to assemble the parts to make a finished product. This was really laid out in the second book our Father had me write.

Now when I first applied for this job, I made an agreement with the employer that I would do what they needed me to do for the agreed hourly wage. Then once placed on the line, I had to be taught how to do my job. We were given one break before lunch and one break after lunch. My shift was eight and a half hours long, with a half-hour lunch. Now I had to obey the laws of the company I was working for. This agreement required me to be on work on time. It required me to work at least five days a week, and maybe six if overtime was needed. It required me to wait until the bell would go off for any of the breaks, and it required me to be back in my area when the break was done. They had rules such as “no eating on the line,” for that could cause food to fall into the toasters. Now if I chose not to obey these rules, I would be chastised by my boss; and if I continued to break the rules, I would have been fired or kicked out of that house. The factory being the house. I had to obey all the laws of the house if I wanted to continue being in this house.

I want to pause here for a minute because I am really feeling that we need to look at when I was supposed to be at work and when the breaks took place. I am not talking about the actual time of the day but rather being at my job until the break started and being back to my job when the breaks were finished. We bring this up, for it really connects with Matthew 7:12, “Therefore all things whatsoever ye would that men should do to you, do ye even so to them: for this is the law and the prophets.” Now if I choose to leave for break early or choose to come back from break late, my part or my role does not get completed. Then the person or persons behind me can’t do their job unless they come and do my job for me. First, this would be me stealing from the company because I made an agreement to be there but am not. I am getting paid an hourly wage set on an agreement that I would be there at that time. If I am not there and still getting that same wage, I am stealing. Then if someone comes and does my

JESUS IS HERE

job while I am out goofing or something, then I am still getting paid for someone else to do my job. Now in my mind, I have to ask, how would I feel if someone else did this to me?

Then we need to realize that I did work toward the end of the line. I had to wait until all the other parts were properly put into place before I could do my part. I couldn't put my parts on and test the product until everything else had already been done. This is what we are being told in Matthew 5:17-18, "Think not that I am come to destroy the law, or the prophets: I am not come to destroy, but to fulfil. **For verily I say unto you, Till heaven and earth pass, one jot or one tittle shall in no wise pass from the law, till all be fulfilled.**" Okay, think about this for a minute: how satisfied would you be if you buy a new toaster from the store, and when you open it, you find only the shell to the toaster and without any electrical parts to it? It won't work, it is not complete. That is why we are told that not one jot or tittle in no wise will pass from the law until all be fulfilled. If that toaster would be shipped without all of its components, you will be very disappointed. That is the same thing going on in the spiritual realm of things. Our Father is not going to change one thing of the law or the Bible until the finished product is ready. And that is the temple of the body of Christ.

Then answered the Jews and said unto him, What sign shewest thou unto us, seeing that thou doest these things? Jesus answered and said unto them, Destroy this temple, and in three days I will raise it up. Then said the Jews, Forty and six years was this temple in building, and wilt thou rear it up in three days? **But he spake of the temple of his body.** (John 2:18-21)

Now I realize that many people believe that Jesus came here, and the law of God has changed. I am telling you right now I wouldn't want to change anything of our Father, and I know without a doubt that if anything did change, then this would not work the way it is. To picture this, we need to think about these toasters that I used to

help manufacture. Now let us just picture me putting the side panels on a two-slice toaster. This toaster is approximately eight inches long and about six inches high. Let us just say that I decide I do not need to follow the law, if you will, and decide to use side panes of seven inches long and five inches in height. They won't fit, and the finished product is not actually finished. Or the person before me decided that he or she didn't want to place the electrical cord on the toaster. Are you starting to see how everything must be put into the proper spot at the proper time, or the finished product will not be proper at the time it is shipped?

Now this brings to mind of when Jesus tells us of the world to come. "And whosoever speaketh a word against the Son of man, it shall be forgiven him: but whosoever speaketh against the Holy Ghost, it shall not be forgiven him, **neither in this world, neither in the world to come**" (Matthew 12:32). After this world ends, we will be shipped to another world. This is not telling us that we all will go to the same world, for we all have different roles to fulfill, and we all will be sent or shipped to the next world when this one ends. Without getting way off topic here, we need to be going over one more example in which I believe to be my favorite of this area. We are going to be thinking of a child that goes to school. We will start this child off in the kindergarten. We all have been brought here from somewhere, our souls and not our flesh. Each one of us came from somewhere and cleaved unto the Father somehow or another. "**But ye that did cleave unto the Lord your God are alive every one of you this day**" (Deuteronomy 4:4). Unbeknownst to us, we came here to go to school. This is where we need to realize that the law is our schoolmaster to bring us unto Christ. "**Wherefore the law was our schoolmaster to bring us unto Christ, that we might be justified by faith**" (Galatians 3:24).

Now when this child goes to school, they learn the basics of the learning the curve. And as they are going to school, they must obey the house rules (the school being the house), or they will be punished or chastised. The parents might be called if the problem cannot be resolved. Now we will just assume that this child does well in class

JESUS IS HERE

and then advances to the next level of school. Let us imagine that this child goes all the way through grade school and now is going into junior high. There isn't much of a difference, but at the same time, it is different than grade school. The years spent in grade school were somewhat of preparing this child for junior high. Then it is the same thing when this child goes to high school. The junior high is preparation for the high school. During this entire time this child is in school, he or she must obey house rules, or he will be suspended or expelled from school. He must maintain a certain grade average, or he will be held back.

It works the same with the Bible. But here is the catch. Many believe that after reading the Bible, they need to go find all kinds of other books to see what the Bible is actually saying. The truth is the Bible is the only true place that we can learn of our Father, and yes, we must learn of the Father just as Jesus tells in John 6:43–45.

Jesus therefore answered and said unto them, Murmur not among yourselves. No man can come to me, except the Father which hath sent me draw him: and I will raise him up at the last day. **It is writ- ten in the prophets, And they shall be all taught of God. Every man therefore that hath heard, and hath learned of the Father, cometh unto me.**

There are so many people that think that they do not need the Old Testament because Jesus supposedly came here a couple thousand years ago and changed or did away with the law of God. Now let us picture this with this child going to kindergarten. This child did great throughout the year and is ready for the first grade. Well, hold on, let us do like most do today. Let us take this five- to six-year- old child and throw him or her into one of the best known colleges and expect them to know everything that they should have learned in each step of schooling so that they are ready to attend one of the best known colleges in the country. Now hold on, they will not allow this child in because they will not have the proper credentials that they need

to obtain before even applying to such a college. Now why would our Father allow someone into His house if they do not even want anything to do with Him while they are here in the flesh?

Now listen to what our Father tells us in Malachi 3:6, “For I am the Lord, **I change not; therefore ye sons of Jacob are not consumed.**” If perfect changes, then it is no longer perfect. This is the main reason I will tell you that I am doing better than I deserve if we ever meet in person. I know without a doubt that myself and every other person on this planet is doing better than they deserve, for we all have equally transgressed our Father’s law and deserve total annihilation. Just listen to what we are told in Psalm 103:1–13.

Bless the Lord, O my soul: and all that is within me, bless his holy name. Bless the Lord, O my soul, and forget not all his benefits: Who forgiveth all thine iniquities; who healeth all thy diseases; Who redeemeth thy life from destruction; who crowneth thee with lovingkindness and tender mercies; Who satisfieth thy mouth with good things; so that thy youth is renewed like the eagle’s. The Lord executeth righteousness and judgment for all that are oppressed. He made known his ways unto Moses, his acts unto the children of Israel. The Lord is merciful and gracious, slow to anger, and plenteous in mercy. He will not always chide: neither will he keep his anger for ever. **He hath not dealt with us after our sins; nor rewarded us according to our iniquities. For as the heaven is high above the earth, so great is his mercy toward them that fear him.** As far as the east is from the west, so far hath he removed our transgressions from us. **Like as a father pitieth his children, so the Lord pitieth them that fear him.**

There are so many teachers that teach that the Old Testament is not relevant for us today. If this was the case, then we wouldn’t hear

things like 1 Peter 2:1–2, “Wherefore laying aside all malice, and all guile, and hypocrisies, and envies, and all evil speakings, *As newborn babes, desire the sincere milk of the word, that ye may grow thereby.*” How many teachers do not teach that this milk is knowledge? You are at an age in which you can read now, so now is the time to desire this milk just as when you were a baby and have become the person you are. This milk of the Word will help you grow in your relationship with our Father. Please note that we just placed a verse out of the New Testament speaking about desiring the milk of the Word. Now let us listen to another area of the New Testament pointing us in the direction of where the Word begins. **“In the beginning was the Word, and the Word was with God, and the Word was God. The same was in the beginning with God”** (John 1:1–2).

Notice how we are being told that the beginning was the Word? What, the beginning of the New Testament? No, the beginning of the Bible. So now let us say that you have started your education from the beginning of the Bible but decide to go and search out a bunch of other books about different areas of the Bible instead of just continuing your education in the Bible only. First thing we need to consider is that our Father is not the author of confusion. “For God is not the author of confusion, but of peace, as in all churches of the saints” (1 Corinthians 14:33). Then we need to listen to 2 Peter 1:20–21, “Knowing this first, that no prophecy of the scripture is of any private interpretation. **For the prophecy came not in old time by the will of man: but holy men of God spake as they were moved by the Holy Ghost.**” Now that we have listened to these two areas of the Bible, we can know without a doubt that all we need to know about our Father is in the Bible and was actually written by our Father. When we drift off into other books, we tend to start to listen to man instead of our Father. Yes, that means this book as well. I am in the flesh, and yes, I am sharing what our Father has taught me, but I will never be the teacher that He is.

This is where everybody needs to take the vail off their hearts when it comes to reading of the Old Testament.

Seeing then that we have such hope, we use great plainness of speech: And not as Moses, which put a veil over his face, that the children of Israel could not stedfastly look to the end of that which is abolished: **But their minds were blinded: for until this day remaineth the same veil untaken away in the reading of the old testament; which veil is done away in Christ. But even unto this day, when Moses is read, the veil is upon their heart. Nevertheless when it shall turn to the Lord, the veil shall be taken away.** (2 Corinthians 3:12–16)

Notice how we are told “when it shall turn to the Lord, the veil shall be taken away.” This is not telling us to turn to the lord Jesus but the Lord of the Old Testament.

Here is where we need to be listening to when people will seek Teacher with their itching ears.

I charge thee therefore before God, and the Lord Jesus Christ, who shall judge the quick and the dead at his appearing and his kingdom; Preach the word; be instant in season, out of season; reprove, rebuke, exhort with all long suffering and doctrine. **For the time will come when they will not endure sound doctrine; but after their own lusts shall they heap to themselves teachers, having itching ears; And they shall turn away their ears from the truth, and shall be turned unto fables.** (2 Timothy 4:1–4)

Now instead of me trying to explain what this means, we will listen to a little of Isaiah 30:1–14.

Woe to the rebellious children, saith the Lord, that take counsel, but not of me; and that cover with a covering, but not of my spirit, that they may add sin

to sin: That walk to go down into Egypt, and have not asked at my mouth; to strengthen themselves in the strength of Pharaoh, and to trust in the shadow of Egypt! Therefore shall the strength of Pharaoh be your shame, and the trust in the shadow of Egypt your confusion. For his princes were at Zoan, and his ambassadors came to Hanes. They were all ashamed of a people that could not profit them, nor be an help nor profit, but a shame, and also a reproach. The burden of the beasts of the south: into the land of trouble and anguish, from whence come the young and old lion, the viper and fiery flying serpent, they will carry their riches upon the shoulders of young asses, and their treasures upon the bunches of camels, to a people that shall not profit them. For the Egyptians shall help in vain, and to no purpose: therefore have I cried concerning this, Their strength is to sit still. Now go, write it before them in a table, and note it in a book, that it may be for the time to come for ever and ever: **That this is a rebellious people, lying children, children that will not hear the law of the Lord: Which say to the seers, See not; and to the prophets, Prophecy not unto us right things, speak unto us smooth things, prophesy deceits: Get you out of the way, turn aside out of the path, cause the Holy One of Israel to cease from before us. Wherefore thus saith the Holy One of Israel, Because ye despise this word, and trust in oppression and perverseness, and stay thereon: Therefore this iniquity shall be to you as a breach ready to fall, swelling out in a high wall, whose breaking cometh suddenly at an instant. And he shall break it as the breaking of the potters' vessel that is broken in pieces; he shall not spare: so that there shall not be found in the bursting of it a sherd**

**to take fire from the hearth, or to take water withal
out of the pit.**

Then once we take that veil off our hearts, we start to truly desire to start learning of our Father. Our Father will start teaching us the milk that will turn into honey, meat, and eventually the flesh and blood of Christ, which are all different levels of knowledge. If you do not take that veil off of your heart, then our Father will not draw you to Jesus. Now if you think that you do not need to do this, then you even make the so-called Jesus that you worship a liar, as we pointed out to you in John 6.

I think this will be a good time to mention this or, better said, to show this.

And Joshua gathered all the tribes of Israel to Shechem, and called for the elders of Israel, and for their heads, and for their judges, and for their officers; and they presented themselves before God. 2 And Joshua said unto all the people, Thus saith the Lord God of Israel, Your fathers dwelt on the other side of the flood in old time, even Terah, the father of Abraham, and the father of Nachor: and they served other gods. 3 **And I took your father Abraham from the other side of the flood, and led him throughout all the land of Canaan, and multiplied his seed, and gave him Isaac.** 4 And I gave unto Isaac Jacob and Esau: and I gave unto Esau mount Seir, to possess it; but Jacob and his children went down into Egypt. 5 I sent Moses also and Aaron, and I plagued Egypt, according to that which I did among them: and afterward I brought you out. 6 And I brought your fathers out of Egypt: and ye came unto the sea; and the Egyptians pursued after your fathers with chariots and horsemen unto the Red sea. 7 And when they cried unto the Lord, he put darkness between you

JESUS IS HERE

and the Egyptians, and brought the sea upon them, and covered them; and your eyes have seen what I have done in Egypt: and ye dwelt in the wilderness a long season. 8 And I brought you into the land of the Amorites, which dwelt on the other side Jordan; and they fought with you: and I gave them into your hand, that ye might possess their land; and I destroyed them from before you. 9 Then Balak the son of Zippor, king of Moab, arose and warred against Israel, and sent and called Balaam the son of Beor to curse you: 10 But I would not hearken unto Balaam; therefore he blessed you still: so I delivered you out of his hand. 11 And you went over Jordan, and came unto Jericho: and the men of Jericho fought against you, the Amorites, and the Perizzites, and the Canaanites, and the Hittites, and the Girgashites, the Hivites, and the Jebusites; and I delivered them into your hand. 12 And I sent the hornet before you, which drave them out from before you, even the two kings of the Amorites; but not with thy sword, nor with thy bow. 13 And I have given you a land for which ye did not labour, and cities which ye built not, and ye dwell in them; of the vineyards and oliveyards which ye planted not do ye eat. 14 **Now therefore fear the Lord, and serve him in sincerity and in truth: and put away the gods which your fathers served on the other side of the flood, and in Egypt; and serve ye the Lord.** 15 **And if it seem evil unto you to serve the Lord, choose you this day whom ye will serve; whether the gods which your fathers served that were on the other side of the flood, or the gods of the Amorites, in whose land ye dwell: but as for me and my house, we will serve the Lord.** (Joshua 24:1–15)

Now notice in verse 3 that our Father took Abraham from the other side of the flood. Abraham was born after Noah's flood. That is the flood that I showed in the last book that covers this earth today. In a later chapter will be on this flood, for I have now seen it with my own two eyes. Now notice what we are being told in verses 14–15. You can decide to serve our Father, who created you and everyone else, anything you can think of in the heavens, earth, or water below. Or you can continue to serve the god that has been telling all of us that our Creator has changed. Your decision!

Then we need to be paying attention to Romans 10:17, **“So then faith cometh by hearing, and hearing by the word of God.”** Notice again of how we are seeing the Word of God again. That too is referring us back to the beginning of the Bible. We showed you all in the last book that there is absolutely nowhere in the Bible that encourages us in any way to ignore the Old Testament. In fact, nowhere in any of the books that our Father has had me write encourage anyone to ignore the Old Testament. Then when we start realizing that we need to hear the Word of God in order to further our education, we need to realize that this is not what someone is saying about God, but we are hearing what God is saying. For me, I have the Internet to listen to the Bible online, and I also have the Bible on CD so that I can listen to the Word of God as I am driving my truck across the country. I truly believe this is how we hear the engrafted word that can save our souls. **“Wherefore lay apart all filthiness and superfluity of naughtiness, and receive with meekness the engrafted word, which is able to save your souls”** (James 1:21). Please note that it does say that it is able and does not guarantee. That is why we are told many will be called but few chosen. **“For many are called, but few are chosen”** (Matthew 22:14). This is because many do and will refuse to lift that veil off of their hearts and just calmly listen to every word that proceedeth out of the mouth of God.

Now that we start listening to the Word of God from the beginning, we start to hear that engrafted word that can save our souls. **“Wherefore lay apart all filthiness and superfluity of naughtiness, and receive with meekness the engrafted word, which is able to save**

your souls” (James 1:21). This is not saying that once you start to hear the engrafted word that your soul will automatically be saved, as you can hear when we see the later part of the verse, “which is able to save your souls.” There is a very good chance that if you hear it, you might not like what you hear, and you might not listen anymore.

I only say this for I have seen this happen firsthand. I will not mention any names or even mention the time frame in which I had seen it, but I did see someone start to hear it, and it just totally freaked him out, and he stopped listening. Let me explain how that worked. This person has seen how I was constantly listening to the Bible, which made him desire to do the same. He would listen for about three hours or so a day. Then one day, his family went to the grocery store. When he got back, he started to yell at me for he started to look at the ingredients in food to see if there was any pork in it. He had not done this before and could not understand why he started to do this. That is how powerful it is to just listen to the Bible. He heard the engrafted word and got scared for it was changing his life, and he did not want to change.

I am going to give a brief demonstration of how this happened with me, but I will not give every detail, for this was explained in the second and third books. It was 2011 when our Father called me to the Bible. I was driving my truck listening to music and really got burned out on hearing the same songs all the time. I decided to try and find a talk show. This was unusual for me because if I had the radio on, I wanted to listen to music. I found a late-night radio program, and they happened to be talking about a comet that was going to be coming close to earth. A lot of the people that were calling in were talking about the rapture, and I had never heard of such a thing, so I decided to investigate this theory. I got home and watched to some areas on YouTube on where people were thinking this, and I decided to go and buy a Bible. I was led straight to the KJV of the Bible. After some time of debating back and forth about the rapture concept, I decided to read the Bible from the very beginning. The first time I read it, I noticed some areas that made me believe that it was about us and not the people of the past (explained in the third book). I had read the Bible

two times or was really close to finishing it for the second time. I very much believe the writings of Moses, and yes, I did everything that I could to try and obey every law. It was sometime during the second time of reading the Bible from the beginning that I realized that our Father never told us to celebrate birthdays or holidays. I immediately stopped celebrating these days and even acknowledging them for anyone else. I stopped because I believe that our Father is perfect. **“Be ye therefore perfect, even as your Father which is in heaven is perfect”** (Matthew 5:48). I trusted and do still trust that if He thought we needed to celebrate these days, He would have told us to celebrate them or honor them. And yes, that means even Christmas. As shown in the second book, everybody on the planet makes the one son of God, so that means every day is Christmas. It was on my forty-fifth birthday in which I received a gift from above and not man. **“Every good gift and every perfect gift is from above, and cometh down from the Father of lights, with whom is no variableness, neither shadow of turning”** (James 1:17). That is the knowledge in the first book our Father had me write.

I want to note that we are commanded to honor holy days as shown in Leviticus 23. Now I do know that these are a shadow of things to come in the next world, but at the same time, they are required for the schooling with our Father. **“For the law having a shadow of good things to come, and not the very image of the things, can never with those sacrifices which they offered year by year continually make the comers thereunto perfect”** (Hebrews 10). I did my best to honor these days, and yes, I lost a couple of jobs because of it. That didn't matter to me, for I was obeying my Father, and I knew that He would provide for me. I will say I did not realize that I was in school with our Father at that time. I will say it was the latter part of 2015 when it started to lie on my conscience about faith come by hearing the Word of God. I looked it up as to where that is in the Bible. I will not show it again, for we just went over that a few minutes ago. Then I started to listen to the Bible online. I started with Genesis 1. This was our Father telling me to listen to the Bible instead

of just reading it. That is how our Father talks to each person on this planet. To your conscience.

When I got to the chapter of Ezekiel, I heard something that almost made the hair on the back of my neck stand up. I heard, “Tell them that you are their sign.”

And in the morning came the word of the Lord unto me, saying, Son of man, hath not the house of Israel, the rebellious house, said unto thee, What doest thou? Say thou unto them, Thus saith the Lord God; This burden concerneth the prince in Jerusalem, and all the house of Israel that are among them. *Say, I am your sign: like as I have done, so shall it be done unto them: they shall remove and go into captivity.* (Ezekiel 12:8–11)

I kept rewinding or starting the chapter over and listening to it over and over. No, at this time, I did not know or had not been taught that I am the son of man, but I knew without a doubt this is something that I was supposed to do. I immediately sent hundreds of messages out on Facebook, quoting these exact verses. Not to say that I wasn't already hooked on the Bible, but this took me to the point in which I could not stop. It was and is like a drug not known to man. I was addicted and became a complete Bible junky, if you will.

Now I am not sure of what grade I was in at that time, but I am figuring this was the latter parts of high school with our Father. But I do know that I was and still am truly enrolled in school and will be until the day I give up my ghost. Then it was January or February of 2016 when I started hearing things like “Take nothing for your journey.”

Provide neither gold, nor silver, nor brass in your purses, Nor scrip for your journey, neither two coats, neither shoes, nor yet staves: for the workman is worthy of his meat. And into whatsoever city

or town ye shall enter, enquire who in it is worthy; and there abide till ye go thence. And when ye come into an house, salute it. And if the house be worthy, let your peace come upon it: but if it be not worthy, let your peace return to you. And whosoever shall not receive you, nor hear your words, when ye depart out of that house or city, shake off the dust of your feet. (Matthew 10:9–14)

And commanded them that they should take nothing for their journey, save a staff only; no scrip, no bread, no money in their purse: But be shod with sandals; **and not put on two coats.** (Mark 6:8–9)

And he said unto them, Take nothing for your journey, neither staves, nor scrip, neither bread, neither money; neither have two coats apiece. (Luke 9:3)

This is when I gave everything that I owned, including all monies, away to the poor and needy. I thought I was going out into the wilderness to die so that I could be with our Father and Jesus. Unbeknownst to me at the time, this was me being baptized with the Holy Ghost. I was called out on March 8 of 2016, at 4:13 a.m. I was awakened by a dream in which I was called to duty. I was out in the wilderness with no food or water for about forty hours before deciding to head back toward town. This is the journey that David took in which he willingly laid down his life so that the spirit of the invisible Jesus could take over his vessel of God.

In whom we have redemption through his blood, even the forgiveness of sins: **Who is the image of the invisible God, the firstborn of every creature.** (Colossians 1:14–15)

JESUS IS HERE

Our Father sent me to my mom's for three weeks to get it through my head that I was not actually supposed to die. During these three weeks, I think I listened to the Bible twice. Oh, our Father showed me so much in which a lot of that is posted in the second book our Father had me write. Then He sent me to my brother's in South Dakota for seven weeks to fast for forty days and nights. This was explained in the third book and will not be explained in this book. I will say that after I was at my brother's place, our Father sent me to work for the company I am with now. And as soon as I had the money to get a Bible on CD, I started listening to the Bible again. And then I heard this: "Then went king David in, and sat before the Lord, and he said, Who am I, O Lord God? and what is my house, that thou hast brought me hitherto?" (2 Samuel 7:18). So, I asked the Father the same thing. The next morning when I awoke, I couldn't get the so-called car accident (no such thing as an accident) I had when I was sixteen. Then about thirty years later to the day is when I was baptized with the Holy Ghost (the forty hours in the wilderness with no food or water). I remembered the scriptures teaching that God gives us our instructions while we sleep.

For God speaketh once, yea twice, yet man perceiveth it not. **In a dream, in a vision of the night, when deep sleep falleth upon men, in slumberings upon the bed; Then he openeth the ears of men, and sealeth their instruction,** That he may withdraw man from his purpose, and hide pride from man. He keepeth back his soul from the pit, and his life from perishing by the sword. (Job 33:14–18)

Then I remembered that Jesus was about thirty years of age when he was baptized, so I started to know who I was then. I just couldn't connect all the dots, so to speak, until June 9 of 2019. Then the third book was written quickly, for our Father gave me a strong commandment with a kind of "do it or else" sound to it on June 17.

What we are doing is showing how I have been in school just like the schooling we go through when we are children. Notice how I had to be taught different levels at different times, just like school.

Whom shall he teach knowledge? and whom shall he make to understand doctrine? them that are weaned from the milk, and drawn from the breasts. For precept must be upon precept, precept upon precept; line upon line, line upon line; here a little, and there a little: For with stammering lips and another tongue will he speak to this people. (Isaiah 28:9–11)

Then it was spring of 2018 that our Father sent me to Israel for the first time. When I first went, I did not think I was coming back. At this time, I was remembering the scriptures that teach that a prophet cannot die outside of Jerusalem. **“Nevertheless I must walk to day, and to morrow, and the day following: for it cannot be that a prophet perish out of Jerusalem”** (Luke 13:33).

Unbeknownst to me, I was being sent there to be baptized in the Jordan River. I was touring the area and went to the Jordan River, and the tour guides asked if I wanted to get baptized. My immediate thought was that I was baptized with water in 2011, and then I was baptized with the Holy Ghost back in 2016, so I replied no. That evening I really felt bad for not getting baptized and was worried that I had messed up. The next morning, as I told you all in the last book, the verse of the day was Philippians 1:6, “Being confident of this very thing, that he which hath begun a good work in you will perform it until the day of Jesus Christ.” I knew that the Father was telling me that I did mess up, but He was saying He would still work with me. When I did return back to the United States, I just knew I had to go back to Israel, which did happen six months later. The only reason I went this time was to be baptized in the Jordan River. So that the scriptures wouldn’t be broken.

Then cometh Jesus from Galilee to Jordan unto John, to be baptized of him. But John forbad him, saying, I have need to be baptized of thee, and comest thou to me? And Jesus answering said unto him, Suffer it to be so now: for thus it becometh us to fulfil all righteousness. Then he suffered him. (Matthew 3:13–15)

As I showed you all in the last book, it is a spirit that comes to our conscience to be baptized. I finished the second book while I was in Israel. I bring this up so that we all can understand that our Father does not expect us to be perfect at whatever He commands of each person, but we must have that desire to be obedient.

Now that we can see how I have been in school with our Father, we can know that all of us have been and are in school of some sort. But now we are going to go on the next stage of Genesis 1:26, “And God said, **Let us make man in our image, after our likeness:** and let them have dominion over the fish of the sea, and over the fowl of the air, and over the cattle, and over all the earth, and over every creeping thing that creepeth upon the earth.” This is what our Father showed me in the second book. We are on something like a model of what they have in heaven. We have oceans, seas, rivers, countries, states, cities, and such. They have oceans or seas, rivers, countries, cities, and such. If we have it here, they have it there. It is like when you build a model car. Let us imagine that you go to the store and buy a model car. You paint it and place all of the parts together, and when it is finished, it looks pretty much like the real thing, except it is a lot smaller and it will not function like a real car. But it is in an image of the real thing.

Now I am going to bring something up that will truly offend many. There are millions or billions of people that believe Israel the country and Jerusalem in Israel is what man calls the “holy land” because Jesus supposedly was there two thousand years ago. As we showed you all in the other books, Jesus was in Adam. The very beginning of the Bible. Remember what Jesus tells us in John 14:6, “Jesus saith unto him, I am the way, the truth, and the life: no man

cometh unto the Father, but by me.” Now go back to Genesis 2:7, “And the Lord God formed man of the dust of the ground, **and breathed into his nostrils the breath of life; and man became a living soul.**” As we showed you all in the last book, man was man even before our Father put part of Himself into Adam. That piece of Himself is the life that is breathed into man or woman as soon as they come out of the womb.

Then we need to listen to when Jesus tells us how many hours there are in a day. “Jesus answered, **Are there not twelve hours in the day?** If any man walk in the day, he stumbleth not, because he seeth the light of this world” (John 11:9). I am asking you now, how many hours are there in a day? There is twenty-four, but if we do a Google search, we find that the day was twelve hours long about 3.5 billion years ago or so. When a day lasted only four hours (en—IEA USP www.iea.usp.br › news › when-a-day-lasted-only-four-hours).

Mar 16, 2016—According to it, the first evidence of life, 3.5 billion years ago, happened when the day lasted 12 hours. The emergence of photosynthesis, 2.5 billion years ago, happened when the day lasted 18 hours. 1.7 billion years ago the day was 21 hours long and the eukaryotic cells emerged.

I will not post the entire article on this matter, but I do encourage you to do your own search on your time. But notice how it starts out with when the day was only four hours long? If you do your own research, you will see this was around 4.5 billion years ago. Now this is not confirmed by our Father, but if we just think about how they lived so long in the beginning of the Bible, it would make sense. Methuselah lived to be 969 years of age. If when he was alive and the day was only four hours long, that would be six of their years to one of ours today. When we do the math, it comes to 161.5 of our years. Still longer than we live today but still not like 950 of our years today.

Now we can certainly figure that when Jesus first walked the earth was not two thousand years ago but rather billions of years ago. The

JESUS IS HERE

main reason people want to believe this is so that they can have a god that changed our Father, and that is truly taking the name of God in vain. Now because man tends to listen to the imagination of his heart instead of just listening to the Bible, our Father has sent a great delusion so that these people won't seek out the truth.

For the mystery of iniquity doth already work: only he who now letteth will let, until he be taken out of the way. And then shall that Wicked be revealed, whom the Lord shall consume with the spirit of his mouth, and shall destroy with the brightness of his coming: Even him, whose coming is after the working of Satan with all power and signs and lying wonders, **And with all deceivableness of unrighteousness in them that perish; because they received not the love of the truth, that they might be saved. And for this cause God shall send them strong delusion, that they should believe a lie: That they all might be damned who believed not the truth, but had pleasure in unrighteousness.** (2 Thessalonians 2:7–12)

I have been to Israel twice, and I will say this: Jesus did not get baptized in the Jordan River until 2018. The people over there are absolutely no different than we are here in the United States. The land over there is no holier than it is here or anywhere else on the planet. They are stuck here just the same as we are, and they too walk through that spiritual fire just as we do. If Israel was just some little country as we see it on the globe or map, then why do we hear things like this? “He shall cause them that come of Jacob to take root: **Israel shall blossom and bud, and fill the face of the world with fruit**” (Isaiah 27:6). Now with hearing that, we can now call the world the “holy land.” Israel is a spirit that covers the earth just as the spirit of Egypt covers the earth, as shown in the last book and will be shown in detail in a later chapter.

Now we need to be paying attention to when we are told that the law is a shadow of things to come. **“For the law having a shadow of good things to come, and not the very image of the things,** can never with those sacrifices which they offered year by year continually make the comers thereunto perfect” (Hebrews 10:1). “Let no man therefore judge you in meat, or in drink, or in respect of an holyday, **or of the new moon, or of the sabbath days: Which are a shadow of things to come; but the body is of Christ**” (Colossians 2:16–17). Now as part of the schooling we must go through, we should be trying to understand these days. These days and such are listed in Leviticus 23 and other areas of the Bible.

We will not post these areas but will be looking at how these are truly an image of things to come. Let us look as to how long a day is in our Father’s eyes. “But, beloved, be not ignorant of this one thing, **that one day is with the Lord as a thousand years, and a thousand years as one day**” (2 Peter 3:8). Now with us being in their image, we can now start to understand that we truly do not have any concept of time in our Father’s world or house. Now we see a day as being twenty-four hours long, but we just heard that in our Father’s world, each twenty-four-hour period lasts a thousand years. So how many years are there in a week, month, or year from our Father’s point of view? “But **pray ye that your flight be not in the winter, neither on the sabbath day**” (Matthew 24:20). Yes, we are told to pray that our fight be not on the Sabbath or the winter, but when is the Sabbath for those above us? Or when is the winter in our Father’s world? This does not give everyone a free pass as to say that we need not to worry about this until the next world. But once again, if you’re not willing to do such in this world, why would our Father believe you have any desire to do so in the next? So, with having this in mind, can we really know how long an hour is in our Father’s world when we hear things like in the same hour? “And when they bring you unto the synagogues, and unto magistrates, and powers, take ye no thought how or what thing ye shall answer, or what ye shall say: **For the Holy Ghost shall teach you in the same hour what ye ought to say**” (Luke 12:11–12). I personally feel this hour is about twelve of our hours or so. There have been many

instances in which I have been persecuted, and I wasn't told of what to say for about twelve hours. One instance for example would be when my brother and his wife tried their hardest to convince me that we could eat the unclean things listed in Leviticus 11 (explained in the last book). It was the next morning, just as I awoke, when our Father told me to tell them that He never said the unclean things listed in Leviticus 11 to be food. Yes, there is your forbidden fruit as man calls it (explained in detail in the second book and later in this book).

Now we need to bring up something else. We all know that we have directions. What I mean is we have north, south, east, and west, right? Well, guess what, this too is in their image. They have a north, south, east, and west. So, when we hear that a country from the north will cause destruction, we can know it isn't a country here on this planet. Let us listen to a couple of times we are told that a country from the north will do this.

For out of the north there cometh up a nation against her, which shall make her land desolate, and none shall dwell therein: they shall remove, they shall depart, both man and beast. In those days, and in that time, saith the Lord, the children of Israel shall come, they and the children of Judah together, going and weeping: they shall go, and seek the Lord their God. They shall ask the way to Zion with their faces thitherward, saying, Come, and let us join ourselves to the Lord in a perpetual covenant that shall not be forgotten. My people hath been lost sheep: their shepherds have caused them to go astray, they have turned them away on the mountains: they have gone from mountain to hill, they have forgotten their restingplace. All that found them have devoured them: and their adversaries said, We offend not, because they have sinned against the Lord, the habitation of justice, even the Lord, the hope of their fathers. Remove out of the midst of Babylon, and go

forth out of the land of the Chaldeans, and be as the he goats before the flocks. **For, lo, I will raise and cause to come up against Babylon an assembly of great nations from the north country:** and they shall set themselves in array against her; from thence she shall be taken: their arrows shall be as of a mighty expert man; none shall return in vain. (Jeremiah 50:3–9)

Thus saith the Lord, Behold, a people cometh from the north country, and a great nation shall be raised from the sides of the earth. They shall lay hold on bow and spear; they are cruel, and have no mercy; their voice roareth like the sea; and they ride upon horses, set in array as men for war against thee, O daughter of Zion. (Jeremiah 6:22–23)

Now when we look at a map, we know north is at the top, right? The next time you think of north, try to think above or on top of the world.

Now let us listen to some of Isaiah 13.

The burden of Babylon, which Isaiah the son of Amoz did see. Lift ye up a banner upon the high mountain, exalt the voice unto them, shake the hand, that they may go into the gates of the nobles. I have commanded my sanctified ones, I have also called my mighty ones for mine anger, even them that rejoice in my highness. The noise of a multitude in the mountains, like as of a great people; a tumultuous noise of the kingdoms of nations gathered together: the Lord of hosts mustereth the host of the battle. *They come from a far country, from the end of heaven, even the Lord, and the weapons of his indignation, to destroy the whole land.* Howl ye; for the day of the Lord is at hand; it shall come as a destruction from the Almighty. Therefore

JESUS IS HERE

shall all hands be faint, and every man's heart shall melt: And they shall be afraid: pangs and sorrows shall take hold of them; they shall be in pain as a woman that travaileth: they shall be amazed one at another; their faces shall be as flames. (Isaiah 13:1–8)

This is why we are told in John 4:23–24, “But the hour cometh, and now is, when the true worshippers shall worship the Father in spirit and in truth: for the Father seeketh such to worship him. God is a Spirit: and they that worship him must worship him in spirit and in truth.” We look at things as we see them with our eyes. But we must remember that our Father is a spirit, and we just heard a while ago that *He* is invisible. This world has been taught by man that the city of Jerusalem over in Israel is the holy land. Let us listen to what we are told in Galatians 4:26, “**But Jerusalem which is above is free, which is the mother of us all.**” Now I want to note that I mentioned earlier that the first time I went to Israel, I thought I was going to stay because I kept remembering the scriptures saying that a prophet shall not pass outside of Jerusalem. I learned that Jerusalem is above a lot later. Now let us listen to Malachi 2:10, “**Have we not all one father? hath not one God created us? why do we deal treacherously every man against his brother, by profaning the covenant of our fathers?**” Now that we can see who our mother and Father are, let us look at the fifth commandment. “**Honour thy father and thy mother: that thy days may be long upon the land which the Lord thy God giveth thee**” (Exodus 20:12). I have to ask, how can you honor your mother and Father if you won't even acknowledge who they are? “**A son honoureth his father, and a servant his master: if then I be a father, where is mine honour?** and if I be a master, where is my fear? saith the Lord of hosts unto you, O priests, that despise my name. And ye say, Wherein have we despised thy name?” (Malachi 1:6). How many people today give the glory to Jesus and not our Father? Our Father is the one that created Jesus and not the other way around.

This is where I want to reflect back to the book of Ezekiel to the greatest abomination listed.

And he brought me into the inner court of the Lord's house, and, behold, at the door of the temple of the Lord, **between the porch and the altar, were about five and twenty men, with their backs toward the temple of the Lord, and their faces toward the east; and they worshipped the sun toward the east.** Then he said unto me, Hast thou seen this, O son of man? Is it a light thing to the house of Judah that they commit the abominations which they commit here? for they have filled the land with violence, and have returned to provoke me to anger: and, lo, they put the branch to their nose. Therefore will I also deal in fury: mine eye shall not spare, neither will I have pity: and though they cry in mine ears with a loud voice, yet will I not hear them. (Ezekiel 8:16–18)

These five and twenty men have dominion over a lot today. of people

These men look to the east and worship the sun and not our Father. This was shown in the second book, but we all know that the sun is only in the east for a couple of hours a day. So, this is when that engrafted word is shown again. *Sun* and *son* sound just alike. We all know the wise men looked for the star in the east. Let us look at this. “Now when Jesus was born in Bethlehem of Judaea in the days of Herod the king, behold, there came wise men from the east to Jerusalem, Saying, Where is he that is born King of the Jews? **for we have seen his star in the east,** and are come to worship him” (Matthew 2:1–2). How many people worship Jesus rather than our perfect Father who created him? As shown in the second book, there is a star for every person that has been cast down from heaven.

As we have explained in all the books that our Father has had me write, Jesus is not God the Father; and when people look to him and worship him for everything, they are worshipping a different god, other than the Father. Let us listen to the end of Amos 5:25–27.

JESUS IS HERE

Have ye offered unto me sacrifices and offerings in the wilderness forty years, O house of Israel? **But ye have borne the tabernacle of your Moloch and Chiun your images, the star of your god, which ye made to yourselves.** Therefore will I cause you to go into captivity beyond Damascus, saith the Lord, whose name is The God of hosts.

There is that star that is made into a god that cannot save. Yes, I am Jesus Christ in the flesh, but the only way I become your savior in by you reading and believing the books our Father has had me write. That is how Jesus became the author of our faith. “Looking unto Jesus the author and finisher of our faith; who for the joy that was set before him endured the cross, despising the shame, and is set down at the right hand of the throne of God” (Hebrews 12:2). Jesus did not write any books in the Bible, but yet now our Father is having me write the fourth book.

Now let us listen to another part of when our Father created us. “Therefore shall a man leave his father and his mother, and shall cleave unto his wife: **and they shall be one flesh**” (Genesis 2:24). We all know that this is man and woman becoming married unto each other and becoming one flesh. When they become one flesh, they live together, and they tend to do everything together. What I mean is that they take care of the house as one person. They pay the bills as one, they take care of the children as one. You do everything as one person, hence you become one. You pretty much take care of one another. Now I want to point out something that was shown in the second book. “**What? know ye not that he which is joined to an harlot is one body? for two, saith he, shall be one flesh**” (1 Corinthians 6:16). Man teaches that if a woman has a baby out of wedlock, this child is a bastard. If this is the case, then every person born in the Bible is a bastard. How absurd, just another example of how people do not listen to all of the Bible and run with their imaginations. We just read a bit ago that it is being without chastisement is what makes a person a bastard. Nowhere in the Bible does it tell us to go to a priest,

pastor, minister, judge, or any other means of making a marriage legal. But this in 1 Corinthians is not talking about becoming one flesh in the present. It is referring to when a man and woman have sex. It is talking about what is shown in Ephesians 5:31–32, “For this cause shall a man leave his father and mother, and shall be joined unto his wife, and they two shall be one flesh. **This is a great mystery: but I speak concerning Christ and the church.**” This was shown in the second book. This becoming of one flesh is about the next life. If you have agreeable sex with a woman, you two will be joined together as one person, once both or all have finished fulfilling whatever roles you have to fulfill in this life. I am not absolutely certain that our Father has confirmed this with me, but it truly explains multiple personalities.

Now we need to listen to where our Father tells us that we are married to Him or that He is married unto us.

They say, If a man put away his wife, and she go from him, and become another man's, shall he return unto her again? shall not that land be greatly polluted? but thou hast played the harlot with many lovers; yet return again to me, saith the Lord. 2 Lift up thine eyes unto the high places, and see where thou hast not been lien with. In the ways hast thou sat for them, as the Arabian in the wilderness; and thou hast polluted the land with thy whoredoms and with thy wickedness. 3 Therefore the showers have been withholden, and there hath been no latter rain; and thou hadst a whore's forehead, thou refusedst to be ashamed. 4 **Wilt thou not from this time cry unto me, My father, thou art the guide of my youth?** 5 Will he reserve his anger for ever? will he keep it to the end? Behold, thou hast spoken and done evil things as thou couldest. 6 The Lord said also unto me in the days of Josiah the king, Hast thou seen that which backsliding Israel hath done? she is gone

JESUS IS HERE

up upon every high mountain and under every green tree, and there hath played the harlot. 7 And I said after she had done all these things, Turn thou unto me. But she returned not. And her treacherous sister Judah saw it. 8 And I saw, when for all the causes whereby backsliding Israel committed adultery I had put her away, **and given her a bill of divorce; yet her treacherous sister Judah feared not, but went and played the harlot also.** 9 And it came to pass through the lightness of her whoredom, that she defiled the land, and committed adultery with stones and with stocks. 10 And yet for all this her treacherous sister Judah hath not turned unto me with her whole heart, but feignedly, saith the Lord. 11 And the Lord said unto me, The backsliding Israel hath justified herself more than treacherous Judah. 12 Go and proclaim these words toward the north, and say, Return, thou backsliding Israel, saith the Lord; and I will not cause mine anger to fall upon you: for I am merciful, saith the Lord, and I will not keep anger for ever. 13 Only acknowledge thine iniquity, that thou hast transgressed against the Lord thy God, and hast scattered thy ways to the strangers under every green tree, and ye have not obeyed my voice, saith the Lord. 14 Turn, O backsliding children, saith the Lord; **for I am married unto you: and I will take you one of a city, and two of a family, and I will bring you to Zion.** (Jeremiah 3:1-14)

Now this was spoken of in the first book our Father had me write. And I realize that many think that our Father has divorced us. If this was the case, why then after He mentions the bill of divorce-ment in verse 8, and then in verse 14, He mentions that He is married unto us? Then again in Isaiah 50:1-2.

Thus saith the Lord, **Where is the bill of your mother's divorcement, whom I have put away? or which of my creditors is it to whom I have sold you?** Behold, for your iniquities have ye sold yourselves, and for your transgressions is your mother put away. Wherefore, when I came, was there no man? when I called, was there none to answer? Is my hand shortened at all, that it cannot redeem? or have I no power to deliver? behold, at my rebuke I dry up the sea, I make the rivers a wilderness: their fish stinketh, because there is no water, and dieth for thirst.

Now we need to be thinking of this as a spiritual marriage. It is us allowing our Father to be the husbandman for us. "I am the true vine, **and my Father is the husbandman**" (John 15:1). This husbandman leads us or guides us, as shown in verse 4 above. We in return do everything that we can to love Him back just as He loved us first. "We love him, **because he first loved us**" (1 John 4:19). He is the one that did not make this about Himself. If He had, we all would be annihilated, as I just showed a bit ago. As a marriage is done today in the flesh, a married couple do all things together as one. They take care of one another; they take care of or they raise the children as one and so on. How can you allow our Father to be your husbandman if you do not want anything to do with Him?

Let us look at Ephesians 5:30–33, "For we are members of his body, of his flesh, and of his bones. **For this cause shall a man leave his father and mother, and shall be joined unto his wife, and they two shall be one flesh.** This is a great mystery: but I speak concerning Christ and the church. Nevertheless let every one of you in particular so love his wife even as himself; and the wife see that she reverence her husband." This is where I must ask, if we are married to the husband, how can you join with Him and become one flesh if you do not want anything to do with Him?

Now we are going to place the entire chapter of Isaiah 9 so we can hear that our Father's hand is still stretched out. And I really need to

JESUS IS HERE

say this: we can truly start to really feel His love even though we all have done so wrong by Him. This is a true husband if we want Him to be our husband.

Nevertheless the dimness shall not be such as was in her vexation, when at the first he lightly afflicted the land of Zebulun and the land of Naphtali, and afterward did more grievously afflict her by the way of the sea, beyond Jordan, in Galilee of the nations. The people that walked in darkness have seen a great light: they that dwell in the land of the shadow of death, upon them hath the light shined. Thou hast multiplied the nation, and not increased the joy: they joy before thee according to the joy in harvest, and as men rejoice when they divide the spoil. For thou hast broken the yoke of his burden, and the staff of his shoulder, the rod of his oppressor, as in the day of Midian. For every battle of the warrior is with confused noise, and garments rolled in blood; but this shall be with burning and fuel of fire. For unto us a child is born, unto us a son is given: and the government shall be upon his shoulder: and his name shall be called Wonderful, Counsellor, The mighty God, The everlasting Father, The Prince of Peace. Of the increase of his government and peace there shall be no end, upon the throne of David, and upon his kingdom, to order it, and to establish it with judgment and with justice from henceforth even for ever. The zeal of the Lord of hosts will perform this. The Lord sent a word into Jacob, and it hath lighted upon Israel. And all the people shall know, even Ephraim and the inhabitant of Samaria, that say in the pride and stoutness of heart, The bricks are fallen down, but we will build with hewn stones: the sycomores are cut down, but we will change them into cedars. Therefore the

Lord shall set up the adversaries of Rezin against him, and join his enemies together; The Syrians before, and the Philistines behind; and they shall devour Israel with open mouth. **For all this his anger is not turned away, but his hand is stretched out still.** For the people turneth not unto him that smiteth them, neither do they seek the Lord of hosts. Therefore the Lord will cut off from Israel head and tail, branch and rush, in one day. The ancient and honourable, he is the head; and the prophet that teacheth lies, he is the tail. For the leaders of this people cause them to err; and they that are led of them are destroyed. Therefore the Lord shall have no joy in their young men, neither shall have mercy on their fatherless and widows: for every one is an hypocrite and an evildoer, and every mouth speaketh folly. For all this his anger is not turned away, **but his hand is stretched out still.** For wickedness burneth as the fire: it shall devour the briers and thorns, and shall kindle in the thickets of the forest, and they shall mount up like the lifting up of smoke. Through the wrath of the Lord of hosts is the land darkened, and the people shall be as the fuel of the fire: no man shall spare his brother. And he shall snatch on the right hand, and be hungry; and he shall eat on the left hand, and they shall not be satisfied: they shall eat every man the flesh of his own arm: Manasseh, Ephraim; and Ephraim, Manasseh: and they together shall be against Judah. **For all this his anger is not turned away, but his hand is stretched out still.** (Isaiah 9:1–21)

“The Lord is not slack concerning his promise, as some men count slackness; but is longsuffering to us-ward, **not willing that any should perish, but that all should come to repentance**” (2 Peter 3:9). This is

JESUS IS HERE

why His hand is stretched out still and will be till the end of the world. Then the divorce is final for all those that do not come to repentance.

So now that we are really starting to grasp how much He loves us, we need to be listening to the two greatest commandments.

Master, which is the great commandment in the law? Jesus said unto him, **Thou shalt love the Lord thy God with all thy heart, and with all thy soul, and with all thy mind. This is the first and great commandment. And the second is like unto it, Thou shalt love thy neighbour as thy- self. On these two commandments hang all the law and the prophets.** (Matthew 22:36–40)

Now we are going to be looking at this woman that our Father is married to from a different perspective. We are going to be looking at the earth from somewhere in the heavens. “And there appeared a great wonder in heaven; **a woman clothed with the sun, and the moon under her feet, and upon her head a crown of twelve stars: And she being with child cried, travailing in birth, and pained to be delivered**” (Revelation 12:1–2).

As we read through this, let us try looking as if we are lifted up in heaven and we are looking down on the earth. Are we not clothed with the sun? Our Father causes the sun to rise on the evil and the good. “That ye may be the children of your Father which is in heaven: **for he maketh his sun to rise on the evil and on the good**, and sendeth rain on the just and on the unjust” (Matthew 5:45). And now that we are in heaven looking down on the earth, we can also know that the moon is under our feet. And we all know that the earth is crowned with the stars. Which twelve, we can only wonder. Remember we are looking at this from a spiritual perspective.

I want to make a quick sidenote here. Remember how we have been showing that we are hearing conversations in heaven? Take note that the earth is clothed with the sun. Now listen to Ecclesiastes 10:5–20.

There is an evil which I have seen under the sun, as an error which proceedeth from the ruler: Folly is set in great dignity, and the rich sit in low place. I have seen servants upon horses, and princes walking as servants upon the earth. He that diggeth a pit shall fall into it; and whoso breaketh an hedge, a serpent shall bite him. Whoso removeth stones shall be hurt therewith; and he that cleaveth wood shall be endangered thereby. If the iron be blunt, and he do not whet the edge, then must he put to more strength: but wisdom is profitable to direct. Surely the serpent will bite without enchantment; and a babbler is no better. The words of a wise man's mouth are gracious; but the lips of a fool will swallow up himself. The beginning of the words of his mouth is foolishness: and the end of his talk is mischievous madness. A fool also is full of words: a man cannot tell what shall be; and what shall be after him, who can tell him? The labour of the foolish wearieth every one of them, because he knoweth not how to go to the city. Woe to thee, O land, when thy king is a child, and thy princes eat in the morning! Blessed art thou, O land, when thy king is the son of nobles, and thy princes eat in due season, for strength, and not for drunkenness! By much slothfulness the building decayeth; and through idleness of the hands the house droppeth through. A feast is made for laughter, and wine maketh merry: but money answereth all things. Curse not the king, no not in thy thought; and curse not the rich in thy bedchamber: for a bird of the air shall carry the voice, and that which hath wings shall tell the matter.

How can he see all this from our point of view? He is talking from above the earth in which is clothed with the sun.

JESUS IS HERE

Now we realize that there are many that believe that this is to come at the end of the world, but try and recall one of the key factors brought up in the last book: Satan does not get cast out of heaven over and over. This is actually the first time that the son of God was born.

And there appeared another wonder in heaven; and behold a great red dragon, having seven heads and ten horns, and seven crowns upon his heads. 4 And his tail drew the third part of the stars of heaven, and did cast them to the earth: and the dragon stood before the woman which was ready to be delivered, for to devour her child as soon as it was born. 5 And she brought forth a man child, who was to rule all nations with a rod of iron: and her child was caught up unto God, and to his throne. 6 And the woman fled into the wilderness, where she hath a place prepared of God, that they should feed her there a thousand two hundred and threescore days. 7 And there was war in heaven: Michael and his angels fought against the dragon; and the dragon fought and his angels, 8 And prevailed not; neither was their place found any more in heaven. 9 And the great dragon was cast out, that old serpent, called the Devil, and Satan, which deceiveth the whole world: he was cast out into the earth, and his angels were cast out with him. 10 And I heard a loud voice saying in heaven, Now is come salvation, and strength, and the kingdom of our God, and the power of his Christ: for the accuser of our brethren is cast down, which accused them before our God day and night. 11 And they overcame him by the blood of the Lamb, and by the word of their testimony; and they loved not their lives unto the death. 12 Therefore rejoice, ye heavens, and ye that dwell in them. Woe to the inhabitants of the earth and of the sea! for the devil is come down unto you,

having great wrath, because he knoweth that he hath but a short time. 13 And when the dragon saw that he was cast unto the earth, he persecuted the woman which brought forth the man child. 14 And to the woman were given two wings of a great eagle, that she might fly into the wilderness, into her place, where she is nourished for a time, and times, and half a time, from the face of the serpent. 15 And the serpent cast out of his mouth water as a flood after the woman, that he might cause her to be carried away of the flood. 16 And the earth helped the woman, and the earth opened her mouth, and swallowed up the flood which the dragon cast out of his mouth. 17 And the dragon was wroth with the woman, and went to make war with the remnant of her seed, which keep the commandments of God, and have the testimony of Jesus Christ. (Revelation 12:3–17)

Now that we have read through this, we need to be listening to verse 17. Let us recall some areas in which we are told that only a remnant will be saved.

Except the Lord of hosts had left unto us a very small remnant, we should have been as Sodom, and we should have been like unto Gomorrah. (Isaiah 1:9)

And it shall come to pass in that day, **that the remnant of Israel, and such as are escaped of the house of Jacob, shall no more again stay upon him that smote them; but shall stay upon the Lord, the Holy One of Israel, in truth. 21 The remnant shall return, even the remnant of Jacob, unto the mighty God.** (Isaiah 10:20–21)

And it shall come to pass in that day, *that the Lord shall set his hand again the second time to recover the remnant of his people, which shall be left, from Assyria, and from Egypt, and from Pathros, and from Cush, and from Elam, and from Shinar, and from Hamath, and from the islands of the sea.* 12 And he shall set up an ensign for the nations, and shall assemble the outcasts of Israel, and gather together the dispersed of Judah from the four corners of the earth. 13 The envy also of Ephraim shall depart, and the adversar- ies of Judah shall be cut off: Ephraim shall not envy Judah, and Judah shall not vex Ephraim. 14 But they shall fly upon the shoulders of the Philistines toward the west; they shall spoil them of the east together: they shall lay their hand upon Edom and Moab; and the children of Ammon shall obey them. 15 **And the Lord shall utterly destroy the tongue of the Egyptian sea; and with his mighty wind shall he shake his hand over the river, and shall smite it in the seven streams, and make men go over dryshod.** 16 **And there shall be an highway for the remnant of his people, which shall be left, from Assyria; like as it was to Israel in the day that he came up out of the land of Egypt.** (Isaiah 11:11–16)

There is the remnant spoken of in verse 17 that Satan has been at war with. Remember this is a spiritual war and not a physical war. **“For we wrestle not against flesh and blood, but against principalities, against powers, against the rulers of the darkness of this world, against spiritual wickedness in high places”** (Ephesians 6:12). But we are getting ready to give birth to the son of God again. Note how in verse 11 of Isaiah 11 that our Father shall set His hand for the second time? This is why we are told that all men will be in travail as in labor.

Ask ye now, and see whether a man doth travail with child? wherefore do I see every man with his hands on his loins, as a woman in travail, and all faces are turned into paleness? Alas! for that day is great, so that none is like it: it is even the time of Jacob's trouble, but he shall be saved out of it. (Jeremiah 30:6–7)

Howl ye; for the day of the Lord is at hand; it shall come as a destruction from the Almighty. Therefore shall all hands be faint, and every man's heart shall melt: And they shall be afraid: pangs and sorrows shall take hold of them; they shall be in pain as a woman that travaileth: they shall be amazed one at another; their faces shall be as flames. Behold, the day of the Lord cometh, cruel both with wrath and fierce anger, to lay the land desolate: and he shall destroy the sinners thereof out of it. (Isaiah 13:6–9)

We are getting ready to give birth of the son of God into our Father's world. We will be doing this as one. Just as a man and woman do as one. This is where you need to decide if you want the husbandman there for the birth or do you just want Him to sit aside and watch you give birth because you have chosen not to have the perfect Father and husbandman be there.

Now we all know that the mother of Jesus was—or is—a virgin, right?

Now the birth of Jesus Christ was on this wise: When as his mother Mary was espoused to Joseph, before they came together, she was found with child of the Holy Ghost. Then Joseph her husband, being a just man, and not willing to make her a public example, was minded to put her away privily. But while he thought on these things, behold, the angel of the Lord appeared unto him in a dream, saying, Joseph, thou

JESUS IS HERE

son of David, fear not to take unto thee Mary thy wife: for that which is conceived in her is of the Holy Ghost. And she shall bring forth a son, and thou shalt call his name Jesus: for he shall save his people from their sins. Now all this was done, that it might be fulfilled which was spoken of the Lord by the prophet, saying, **23 Behold, a virgin shall be with child, and shall bring forth a son, and they shall call his name Emmanuel, which being interpreted is, God with us.** (Matthew 1:18–23)

To understand this, we need to venture back to Ecclesiastes 1:9–10, **“The thing that hath been, it is that which shall be; and that which is done is that which shall be done: and there is no new thing under the sun. 10 Is there any thing whereof it may be said, See, this is new? it hath been already of old time, which was before us.”**

Being how we just heard our Father say He would recover the remnant, we can know that the virgin is getting ready to give birth again. We can know that we are the virgin when we listen to Amos 5:1–3, “Hear ye this word which I take up against you, even a lamentation, O house of Israel. **The virgin of Israel is fallen; she shall no more rise: she is forsaken upon her land; there is none to raise her up. For thus saith the Lord God; The city that went out by a thousand shall leave an hundred, and that which went forth by an hundred shall leave ten, to the house of Israel.**”

Okay, we hope that everybody is starting to really understand how we are married to our Father. What generally happens when we get married? The woman conceives, and nine months later, a child is born. We have been pregnant, so to speak, since the beginning. Now that the end is approaching, we are getting ready to give birth to the son of God. Therefore, we are told that our Father will look onto men as a woman in travail with child.

The word that came to Jeremiah from the Lord, saying, Thus speaketh the Lord God of Israel, saying,

Write thee all the words that I have spoken unto thee in a book. For, lo, the days come, saith the Lord, that I will bring again the captivity of my people Israel and Judah, saith the Lord: and I will cause them to return to the land that I gave to their fathers, and they shall possess it. And these are the words that the Lord spake concerning Israel and concerning Judah. For thus saith the Lord; We have heard a voice of trembling, of fear, and not of peace. **Ask ye now, and see whether a man doth travail with child? wherefore do I see every man with his hands on his loins, as a woman in travail, and all faces are turned into paleness?** (Jeremiah 30:1–6)

They come from a far country, from the end of heaven, even the Lord, and the weapons of his indignation, to destroy the whole land. Howl ye; for the day of the Lord is at hand; it shall come as a destruction from the Almighty. **Therefore shall all hands be faint, and every man's heart shall melt: And they shall be afraid: pangs and sorrows shall take hold of them; they shall be in pain as a woman that travaileth:** they shall be amazed one at another; their faces shall be as flames. Behold, the day of the Lord cometh, cruel both with wrath and fierce anger, to lay the land desolate: and he shall destroy the sinners thereof of it. (Isaiah 13:6–9)

I have been sharing with you all in this book and others that I have had some rough days, and for a couple of months now, it seems things have been going...well...in a really tough way. Last night I begged our Father to give me wisdom and understanding of why things have been going the way they have. As I have shown in other books and again in this book, our Father gives us our instructions for the day while we sleep.

JESUS IS HERE

For God speaketh once, yea twice, yet man perceiveth it not. **In a dream, in a vision of the night, when deep sleep falleth upon men, in slumberings upon the bed;** Then he openeth the ears of men, and sealeth their instruction, That he may withdraw man from his purpose, and hide pride from man. He keepeth back his soul from the pit, and his life from perishing by the sword. (Job 33:14–18)

I awoke this morning from a dream of seeing myself on a gurney and being wheeled into the delivery room. I was pointing at myself and saying my water has broken.

I bring this up because I do realize that I am coming into my kingdom, but I completely ignored the tribulations and trials that I will be going through to get to this point. With this dream, I now understand that we all are getting extremely close to giving birth to the son of God as a whole. And I will say, without a doubt, it is going to be painful. We will be covering this in much more detail in a later chapter.

Now we are going to be looking at what our Father had me put in the third book in which He had me write. It was introduced in the second book and covered more in detail in the third book. So, let us listen again to what was said.

And God said, Let us make man in our image, after our likeness: **and let them have dominion over the fish of the sea, and over the fowl of the air, and over the cattle, and over all the earth, and over every creeping thing that creepeth upon the earth.** So God created man in his own image, in the image of God created he him; male and female created he them. (Genesis 1:26–27)

Before we really get started on this next area, we are going to have to cover something that is going to seem to have nothing to do with

this topic but have everything to do with this topic. We are going to be looking at a few spots in which there are command-ments to sacrifice animals. There are a lot of things to cover to show here in which should become its own chapter, but I feel we need to talk about this before we really show how they that are above have dominion over our bodies.

And the Lord called unto Moses, and spake unto him out of the tabernacle of the congregation, saying, Speak unto the children of Israel, and say unto them, If any man of you bring an offering unto the Lord, ye shall bring your offering of the cattle, even of the herd, and of the flock. If his offering be a burnt sacrifice of the herd, let him offer a male without blemish: he shall offer it of his own volun- tary will at the door of the tabernacle of the con- gregation before the Lord. (Leviticus 1:1-3)

An altar of earth thou shalt make unto me, and shalt sacrifice thereon thy burnt offerings, and thy peace offerings, thy sheep, and thine oxen: in all places where I record my name I will come unto thee, and I will bless thee. (Exodus 20:24)

Thou shalt not sacrifice unto the Lord thy God any bullock, or sheep, wherein is blemish, or any evilfavouredness: for that is an abomination unto the Lord thy God. (Deuteronomy 17:1)

Now we need to be listening to a few times in which we can hear that we are counted as animals. First let us listen to Jeremiah 11:19, **“But I was like a lamb or an ox that is brought to the slaughter;** and I knew not that they had devised devices against me, saying, Let us destroy the tree with the fruit thereof, and let us cut him off from the land of the living, that his name may be no more remembered.” “In

their heat I will make their feasts, and I will make them drunken, that they may rejoice, and sleep a perpetual sleep, and not wake, saith the Lord. **I will bring them down like lambs to the slaughter, like rams with he goats**" (Jeremiah 51:39–40). "Yea, for thy sake are we killed all the day long; we are counted as sheep for the slaughter" (Psalm 44:22). "And the men of Israel turned again upon the children of Benjamin, and smote them with the edge of the sword, **as well the men of every city, as the beast, and all that came to hand:** also they set on fire all the cities that they came to" (Judges 20:48).

Let us listen to how we are counted as the fowls of the heavens also.

When I would have healed Israel, then the iniquity of Ephraim was discovered, and the wickedness of Samaria: for they commit falsehood; and the thief cometh in, and the troop of robbers spoileth without. And they consider not in their hearts that I remember all their wickedness: now their own doings have beset them about; they are before my face. They make the king glad with their wickedness, and the princes with their lies. They are all adulterers, as an oven heated by the baker, who ceaseth from raising after he hath kneaded the dough, until it be leavened. In the day of our king the princes have made him sick with bottles of wine; he stretched out his hand with scorners. For they have made ready their heart like an oven, whiles they lie in wait: their baker sleepeth all the night; in the morning it burneth as a flaming fire. They are all hot as an oven, and have devoured their judges; all their kings are fallen: there is none among them that calleth unto me. Ephraim, he hath mixed himself among the people; Ephraim is a cake not turned. Strangers have devoured his strength, and he knoweth it not: yea, gray hairs are here and there upon him, yet he knoweth not. And the pride of Israel

testifieth to his face: and they do not return to the Lord their God, nor seek him for all this. Ephraim also is like a silly dove without heart: they call to Egypt, they go to Assyria. **When they shall go, I will spread my net upon them; I will bring them down as the fowls of the heaven; I will chastise them, as their congregation hath heard.** (Hosea 7:1–12)

Now that we can definitely see that we are counted as the animals of the sacrifices, let us listen to when we can hear that some are even counted as the fat of animals. “**But the wicked shall perish, and the enemies of the Lord shall be as the fat of lambs:** they shall consume; into smoke shall they consume away” (Psalm 37:20). Then listen to how the enemies will be driven away as smoke is. “Let God arise, let his enemies be scattered: let them also that hate him flee before him. **As smoke is driven away, so drive them away: as wax melteth before the fire, so let the wicked perish at the presence of God**” (Psalm 68:1–2).

Now let us listen to something Moses said. “And Moses said, It is not meet so to do; for we shall sacrifice the abomination of the Egyptians to the Lord our God: lo, shall we sacrifice the abomination of the Egyptians before their eyes, and will they not stone us?” (Exodus 8:26). Now do you remember how we showed some of the abominations of the Lord earlier? Who do you think Moses is talking about here?

Let us listen to a few times in which we can hear that we are to be without blemish and such. First listen to when we are told to give spiritual sacrifices.

Ye also, as lively stones, are built up a spiritual house, an holy priesthood, **to offer up spiritual sacrifices,** acceptable to God by Jesus Christ. (1 Peter 2:5)
Husbands, love your wives, even as Christ also loved the church, and gave himself for it; That he might sanctify and cleanse it with the washing of water

JESUS IS HERE

by the word, **That he might present it to himself a glorious church, not having spot, or wrinkle, or any such thing; but that it should be holy and without blemish.** (Ephesians 5:25–27)

But with the precious blood of Christ, **as of a lamb without blemish and without spot.** (1 Peter 1:19)

That thou keep this commandment without spot, unrebukable, until the appearing of our Lord Jesus Christ. (1 Timothy 6:14)

Wherefore, beloved, seeing that ye look for such things, be diligent that ye may be found of him in peace, **without spot, and blameless.** (2 Peter 3:14)

Now let us listen to when we can be spots and blemishes.

And shall receive the reward of unrighteousness, as they that count it pleasure to riot in the day time. Spots they are and blemishes, sporting themselves with their own deceivings while they feast with you. (2 Peter 2:13)

But these speak evil of those things which they know not: but what they know naturally, as brute beasts, in those things they corrupt themselves. Woe unto them! for they have gone in the way of Cain, and ran greedily after the error of Balaam for reward, and perished in the gainsaying of Core. **These are spots in your feasts of charity, when they feast with you, feeding themselves without fear: clouds they are without water, carried about of winds; trees whose fruit withereth, without fruit, twice dead, plucked up by the roots.** (Jude 1:10–12)

We are only showing a few areas in which we can hear that we are counted or considered to be the animals in the Bible. But look again to what we just read in Jude. **People are counted as clouds without water, trees that withereth and without fruit, and twice dead.** Can you see how much symbolism there is in the Bible? And what causes all these spots and blemishes to be upon us is the lack of love for our Father and others.

Now I am going to be sharing with you all of how our Father taught me that we are counted as the animals. As I have stated, I am in hands-on training, one-on-one schooling with our Father. This was shown in other books and was one of the first things that our Father taught me once He sent me to work for the company that I am with. This probably happened within six months of our Father putting me back in a truck.

This was a time in which I had been sending money to my son so that I could help him out. Then it got to the point that I realized that my son spent a lot of time talking about playing video games and such. At the same time, it seemed he was losing any job that he had. He didn't seem to mind losing these jobs but at the same time seemed to find great enjoyment out of these video games. I started remembering the scriptures saying not to feed the lazy.

For even when we were with you, this we commanded you, **that if any would not work, neither should he eat. For we hear that there are some which walk among you disorderly, working not at all, but are busybodies. Now them that are such we command and exhort by our Lord Jesus Christ, that with quietness they work, and eat their own bread.** But ye, brethren, be not weary in well doing. And if any man obey not our word by this epistle, note that man, and have no company with him, that he may be ashamed. Yet count him not as an enemy, but admonish him as a brother. (2 Thessalonians 3:10–15)

JESUS IS HERE

Now he was living close to his other family members at the time, and I knew that he wasn't truly going without. It did get to the point that I would not give him any money to help out. I would not tell him of what I was feeling, but I would tell him that if he got a job, I would help again, but if he wasn't going to work, I wasn't going to help. He has his own family, and I felt the Father was telling me that he was responsible for his family and not me. I would talk to him on the phone but wouldn't help him financially at all.

As this was going on, I kept talking to him, for as the scriptures say, do not count him as an enemy but admonish him as a brother. Then after a couple of months or so, I got a call from him. He told me that he had got a job and was going in for orientation the next day or so. I was relieved and figured I could start helping him out again. Then the same day that my son called, about an hour later, my brother called me. He told me that he was stuck at Walmart and wanted \$100. Currently, he and his wife and son were in between homes living in the car. He told me that they had food for making cold sandwiches and such, but their son wanted a hot meal. I told him that I would have to ask our Father because, as I tell everyone, He is the one that handles my finances and my true boss. And I knew that the money that our Father allows me to have is to help the poor and needy and not to those that have but want better.

I got off the phone with my brother and immediately started recalling some scriptures. Now we are going to post these.

And it came to pass after these things, that God did tempt Abraham, and said unto him, Abraham: and he said, Behold, here I am. And he said, Take now thy son, thine only son Isaac, whom thou lovest, and get thee into the land of Moriah; and offer him there for a burnt offering upon one of the mountains which I will tell thee of. And Abraham rose up early in the morning, and saddled his ass, and took two of his young men with him, and Isaac his son, and clave the wood for the burnt offering, and rose up, and went

unto the place of which God had told him. Then on the third day Abraham lifted up his eyes, and saw the place afar off. And Abraham said unto his young men, Abide ye here with the ass; and I and the lad will go yonder and worship, and come again to you. And Abraham took the wood of the burnt offering, and laid it upon Isaac his son; and he took the fire in his hand, and a knife; and they went both of them together. And Isaac spake unto Abraham his father, and said, My father: and he said, Here am I, my son. And he said, Behold the fire and the wood: but where is the lamb for a burnt offering? And Abraham said, My son, God will provide himself a lamb for a burnt offering: so they went both of them together. And they came to the place which God had told him of; and Abraham built an altar there, and laid the wood in order, and bound Isaac his son, and laid him on the altar upon the wood. **And Abraham stretched forth his hand, and took the knife to slay his son.** And the angel of the Lord called unto him out of heaven, and said, Abraham, Abraham: and he said, Here am I. And he said, Lay not thine hand upon the lad, neither do thou any thing unto him: for now I know that thou fearest God, seeing thou hast not withheld thy son, thine only son from me. **And Abraham lifted up his eyes, and looked, and behold behind him a ram caught in a thicket by his horns: and Abraham went and took the ram, and offered him up for a burnt offering in the stead of his son.** And Abraham called the name of that place Jehovahjireh: as it is said to this day, In the mount of the Lord it shall be seen. And the angel of the Lord called unto Abraham out of heaven the second time, **And said, By myself have I sworn, saith the Lord, for because thou hast done**

this thing, and hast not withheld thy son, thine only son. (Genesis 22:1–16)

Now that we have read through this, we are going to be looking at how I did the same thing as Abraham. I want to explain a little about myself first. I do have four sons, but the son in which this happened with is the only one that communicates with me. Without explaining all the details, through the divorce with my second wife, things happened that made the boys with her not want anything to do with me. This was done this way so that the son that communicates with me could be like my only son. Everything that has happened in my life has happened for a reason and that I could relate my life to the Bible. If anyone wants to do the research, you will find that Abraham had more than one son, just the same as me.

Now I wouldn't help my son out financially, but at the same time, I knew that he wasn't going to die physically. Then on the same day in which my son called to tell me that he had got a job, about an hour later, my brother called and asked for money he did not need. I knew that I could now help my son, and at the same time, I knew that my brother was the ram caught in the bushes by his horns. Just for fun, let us look at e-Sword to see the definition of *ram*.

H352 'ayil ah'-yil From the same as H193; properly strength; hence anything strong; specifically a chief (politically); also a ram (from his strength); a pilaster (as a strong support); an oak or other strong tree:—**mighty (man)**, lintel, oak, post, ram, tree.

These sacrifices are made from above. They have dominion over us, and when we are doing something that is not of what we are supposed to be doing, they do these sacrifices so that we will change the way we are going. Needless to say, my son is working now, and my brother has his own business and seems to be doing well; both are doing pretty good. Now as you read through the rest of this area,

think of how you can relate your own life to some sacrifices that might have gotten you to do things in a different way.

This is where we are going to be looking at how they above us have dominion over our bodies just as our Father gave us dominion over the fish of the sea, over the fowl of the air and the cattle. Yes, they have dominion over us. First, we need to understand that our Father has the ultimate dominion overall.

Canst thou bind the sweet influences of Pleiades,
or loose the bands of Orion? Canst thou bring
forth Mazzaroth in his season? or canst thou guide
Arcturus with his sons? Knowest thou the ordinances
of heaven? **canst thou set the dominion thereof in
the earth?** (Job 38:31–33)

But let us look at a few areas that tell us that they have dominion over our bodies. Now we are getting ready to hear about spirits and kings that have dominion over our bodies, but we must realize they are only doing what our Father is commanding them to do. First, we need to be listening to who is the king of all kings.

For the Lord your God is God of gods, and Lord
of lords, a great God, a mighty, and a terrible,
which regardeth not persons, nor taketh reward.
(Deuteronomy 10:17)

The Lord God of gods, the Lord God of gods, he
knoweth, and Israel he shall know; if it be in rebellion,
or if in transgression against the Lord, (save us not
this day,). (Joshua 22:22)

First, we need to realize that Jesus is inside each of us, and we all have different roles to fulfill. I will use my life for an example. I have shown this in other books but will explain again to show how those above us have dominion over my body. Let us recall as to when I had

the non-accidental accident on March 28, 1986, Good Friday, and was in a coma for three days and three nights. I use this first because this is truly showing how they have a very strong dominion over our bodies. When I got released from the hospital, the doctors asked the school to make my classes very easy because of my head injury. I got held back in school the next year because I missed the last quarter of school. So, I was starting the tenth grade for the second time. Before the accident, I was doing okay in algebra 1, then when I started again, they put me in basic math. This was an insult to me at this time and really bothered me. I quit school the second day. Well, there was a little more to it, but that was the main reason I quit. Unbeknownst to me, that was our Father causing me to quit.

My childhood dream was to drive a semi. I have wanted to drive a semi since I was four years old. When I turned twenty-one, I got my CDL and have been driving for the better part of my adult life, and yes, I still love driving today. But there have been times that I have tried to get away from driving for family purposes, but I always seemed to come right back to driving. There have been two times in which I attended college, but never finished. I tried a technical college once but didn't finish that either. It was 2011 when I was driving to Fargo, North Dakota, from Rock Island, Illinois, when I was called to the Bible. I was listening to the radio and just got burned out on hearing the same songs all the time. I decided to find a talk show, and that is when they were talking about the rapture concept, and I decided to investigate this theory.

Let us pause for a minute and just think about this: who do you think it was that caused me to desire to find a talk show? I got back from North Dakota and started my journey as to looking into this concept. I could see things in the Bible that just totally went against this theory and started to dig deeper and harder. Then it was on my forty-fifth birthday that I received the knowledge from above (which is in the first book). At this time, I was living in a cabin home in La Plata, Missouri. Just a couple of months prior to this, my wife of the time and I were staying with my mom so that we could help her with bills and such. Then all of a sudden, my mom wanted us to move out,

so that is when we found the place in La Plata in which was way out in the country. It was those from above that caused my mom to want us out. I remember this distinctly because soon after we moved, my mom couldn't remember exactly why she wanted us out. She did not have Alzheimer's or anything like that. We played card games and double 15 dominoes all the time.

Now I am going to share something in this book that I have only told three or four people since it happened. I wasn't going to say anything about it at all, but it seems our Father is telling me to; and if you haven't figured it out, I will do whatever I feel our Father is telling me to do. This is not in the Bible and is way off topic, but this is the time frame in which this happened, and I strongly feel this is when our Father sent His son down here to take over my body. Now I have explained to you all that I went out in the wilderness on March 8 at 4:13 a.m. But this took place sometime before that. My wife and I were living in La Plata, Missouri. We had just taken my daughter to the meeting spot with her mom. We had just finished with a weekend visit. It might have even been a little more than just a weekend. I think it was around November of 2014. My wife and I were traveling back at about 9:00 p.m. or so. All of a sudden, there was a circle of little balls of light that lit up in front of us on the left side. Just guessing, they looked to be about one thousand feet in the air. There were no trees blocking the view or anything like that. This circle of lights probably seemed to be between ten and fifteen feet in circumference. These balls of light were probably about the size of a bowling ball. It only lit up for a few seconds—maybe ten or fifteen seconds, but we were traveling around 60 mph, so we really couldn't tell. We both had seen this happen and we both, at the same time, asked what the heck that was. We talked about it for a few days, but not much after that.

Now the reason I bring this up is because it was in February, on my birthday, in which I awoke knowing what is put into the first book our Father had me write. I believe this is when our Father sent His son into this world.

JESUS IS HERE

Now I say, That the heir, as long as he is a child, differeth nothing from a servant, though he be lord of all; But is under tutors and governors until the time appointed of the father. Even so we, when we were children, were in bondage under the elements of the world: **But when the fulness of the time was come, God sent forth his Son, made of a woman, made under the law,** To redeem them that were under the law, that we might receive the adoption of sons. (Galatians 4:1-5)

Over the last six months or so, this has been on my mind a lot. Obviously, I cannot be certain of this. But with all that has happened since that took place, it just makes sense. As we showed you all in the last book, Jesus took over David's body on March 8-9, 2016. But when we saw this was when, I am thinking, our Father sent Jesus into this world. There is a reason He made sure that I had seen that happen.

Then two months after the book was published or so, my wife left me. I talked with the Father about it and was given the commandment of "go to where she is, and just love your wife." So, I did. I quit my nice-paying job and found an apartment near Lake Ozark, Missouri. That is where she was. At the same time, I found a job that paid just a bit over \$9 an hour in a factory.

Without explaining everything to the detail again, we will just say that I tried everything in my power to make her want to still be with me. I changed everything about myself that she didn't like when she left. Then after about eight months or so, she couldn't stand that either. It was as if whatever I did, it was not good enough. I didn't know it at the time, but it wasn't her, per se, it was the spirit or those that have dominion over her, causing her to do what she was doing. Then I was called out on March 8, 2016, at 4:13 a.m.; this was when I was called to the wilderness to be baptized with the Holy Ghost. Then sent to my mom's house for three weeks and then to my brother's so that I could fast for forty days and nights. For more details on this, it is explained in detail in the third book.

Then once our Father led me to the company I am with now, He told me who I am, as I explained earlier. Then He brought to my attention something that is said in Revelation 2:18–21.

And unto the angel of the church in Thyatira write; These things saith the Son of God, who hath his eyes like unto a flame of fire, and his feet are like fine brass; I know thy works, and charity, and service, and faith, and thy patience, and thy works; and the last to be more than the first. Notwithstanding I have a few things against thee, because thou sufferest that woman Jezebel, which calleth herself a prophetess, to teach and to seduce my servants to commit fornication, and to eat things sacrificed unto idols.
And I gave her space to repent of her fornication; and she repented not.

This is something that I have not told anyone before. I just spent eight months doing everything in my power to make my wife happy, but it could not be done. That eight months that I spent trying to patch things up with my wife was so that I could relate my life to the scriptures. At the time, I thought this meant my wife was Jezebel, but as time went on with me digging into the scriptures more and more, I realized it was just another lesson for me, and it wasn't her doing what she did, but those that have dominion over her.

Now I could put a lot more details into this, but I think we have enough so that we can see how they above have had dominion over my body. To put it all into one picture, do you think that when this so-called accident I had on March 28, Good Friday, of 1986, was planned by me? Do you think that me being in a coma for three days and three nights was planned by me? Is it possible that I planned from that time that I would be called to the Bible in 2011? Is it possible that maybe I planned that almost thirty years to the day, after being in a coma for three days and nights, that I would be baptized with the Holy Ghost? During this time, is it possible that I dropped out

JESUS IS HERE

of high school and attended three colleges but failed to complete any and yet today understand the Bible the way that I do? As shown in the second book, this is how our Father uses the foolishness of this world.

Because the foolishness of God is wiser than men; and the weakness of God is stronger than men. For ye see your calling, brethren, how that not many wise men after the flesh, not many mighty, not many noble, are called: But God hath chosen the foolish things of the world to confound the wise; and God hath chosen the weak things of the world to confound the things which are mighty; And base things of the world, and things which are despised, hath God chosen, yea, and things which are not, to bring to nought things that are. (1 Corinthians 1:25–28)

I can say with all certainty that it was those above us that are the ones that had dominion over me so that I would not be educated in anything. I am a foolish man that only knows the Bible and not what everyone thinks the Bible is saying. I listen to the Word of God from the beginning to the end and nothing else. Now I know that there are a lot of people that go to college and do not finish or never do what they attended college for. Is it actually them who is choosing for them not to do what they originally set out to do, or is it those above that have dominion over them causing them to go down a different path?

Now we need to look into something else. There are several areas that we can hear that some cities are for those that kill unaware. I am only going to post a few.

Then ye shall appoint you cities to be cities of refuge for you; that the slayer may flee thither, **which killeth any person at unawares.** (Numbers 35:11)

That the slayer might flee thither, **which should kill his neighbour unawares**, and hated him not in times past; and that fleeing unto one of these cities he might live. (Deuteronomy 4:42)

These were the cities appointed for all the children of Israel, and for the stranger that sojourneth among them, **that whosoever killeth any person at unawares might flee thither, and not die by the hand of the avenger of blood**, until he stood before the congregation. (Joshua 20:9)

Now we need to be asking ourselves, how can someone kill someone and not be aware of it? When we condemn someone, we kill them. Not physically, but rather spiritually. We are telling this person that they cannot be the person that they are, which is putting to death the person they think they are supposed to be. Now when someone kills someone and is unaware of what they have done, those that have dominion over us tell their conscience to move to one of these cities. This can be better understood in the second book our Father had me write. Here is the catch: when you are being led to these cities, you won't be aware of it either. This is all being done in ways that cannot be seen, for we are being led by the spirit that is invisible.

Let us look at one of the parables spoken by Jesus that shows another way of killing.

And, behold, a certain lawyer stood up, and tempted him, saying, Master, what shall I do to inherit eternal life? He said unto him, What is written in the law? how readest thou? And he answering said, Thou shalt love the Lord thy God with all thy heart, and with all thy soul, and with all thy strength, and with all thy mind; and thy neighbour as thyself. And he said unto him, Thou hast answered right: this do, and thou shalt live. But he, willing to justify himself, said unto Jesus,

JESUS IS HERE

And who is my neighbour? And Jesus answering said, A certain man went down from Jerusalem to Jericho, and fell among thieves, which stripped him of his raiment, and wounded him, and departed, leaving him half dead. **And by chance there came down a certain priest that way: and when he saw him, he passed by on the other side. And likewise a Levite, when he was at the place, came and looked on him, and passed by on the other side.** But a certain Samaritan, as he journeyed, came where he was: and when he saw him, he had compassion on him, And went to him, and bound up his wounds, pouring in oil and wine, and set him on his own beast, and brought him to an inn, and took care of him. And on the morrow when he departed, he took out two pence, and gave them to the host, and said unto him, Take care of him; and whatsoever thou spendest more, when I come again, I will repay thee. Which now of these three, thinkest thou, was neighbour unto him that fell among the thieves? **And he said, He that shewed mercy on him. Then said Jesus unto him, Go, and do thou likewise.** (Luke 10:25–37)

This priest and the Levite thought that whatever they were doing was more important than helping this man out. They had no love or compassion for this man's problems. Even though this man needing of some help was down and out, they put their own lives in front of his. This man is a child of God also, so they had no love for a fellow brother of their own. They spiritually killed him.

We need to be looking at another way that they have dominion over us. This is something that our Father has brought to my attention recently, and we are going to explain how He did this and why He did. A few weeks ago, I was approached by a colored person, and as we were talking about the scriptures, he started to explain to me that he believed that only Black people were chosen by our Father. He

believed this way for slavery is talked about in our Bible, and Black people were slaves many years ago.

We had our conversation and parted ways. Three or four days later, another Black man approached me with the same doctrine. This really seemed to be odd in my opinion, so I did what I do: I asked our Father why He had these two servants do as they did. He immediately let me know that I needed to show this in this chapter. Let us look at a couple of different areas of the Bible that we can hear how some are slaves. “Is Israel a servant? is he a homeborn slave? why is he spoiled?” (Jeremiah 2:14).

Now these are the judgments which thou shalt set before them. If thou buy an Hebrew servant, six years he shall serve: and in the seventh he shall go out free for nothing. If he came in by himself, he shall go out by himself: if he were married, then his wife shall go out with him. If his master have given him a wife, and she have born him sons or daughters; the wife and her children shall be her master's, and he shall go out by himself. And if the servant shall plainly say, I love my master, my wife, and my children; I will not go out free: Then his master shall bring him unto the judges; he shall also bring him to the door, or unto the door post; and his master shall bore his ear through with an aul; and he shall serve him for ever. And if a man sell his daughter to be a maidservant, she shall not go out as the menservants do. If she please not her master, who hath betrothed her to himself, then shall he let her be redeemed: to sell her unto a strange nation he shall have no power, seeing he hath dealt deceitfully with her. And if he have betrothed her unto his son, he shall deal with her after the manner of daughters. If he take him another wife; her food, her raiment, and her duty of marriage, shall he not diminish. And if he do not these three unto her, then

JESUS IS HERE

shall she go out free without money. He that smiteth a man, so that he die, shall be surely put to death. And if a man lie not in wait, but God deliver him into his hand; then I will appoint thee a place whither he shall flee. But if a man come presumptuously upon his neighbour, to slay him with guile; thou shalt take him from mine altar, that he may die. And he that smiteth his father, or his mother, shall be surely put to death. And he that stealeth a man, and selleth him, or if he be found in his hand, he shall surely be put to death. (Exodus 21:1–16)

Now that we can hear our Bible talk about slavery, we need to explain how we are slaves while here on earth. This, too, is us being in their image. Let us listen again to how not one jot or tittle of the law will pass. “Think not that I am come to destroy the law, or the prophets: I am not come to destroy, but to fulfil. For verily I say unto you, Till heaven and earth pass, one jot or one tittle shall in no wise pass from the law, till all be fulfilled” (Matthew 5:17–18). What is being fulfilled? This is the body of Christ, which is invisible. “Jesus answered and said unto them, Destroy this temple, and in three days I will raise it up. Then said the Jews, Forty and six years was this temple in building, and wilt thou rear it up in three days? But he spake of the temple of his body” (John 2:19–21).

Now if we just recall how everything that happened to me was done from above and they caused things to work the way they did, then recall how people will be led to different areas of the earth. With them having dominion over our bodies, we are like slaves of those above us. We realize that there are many that think everyone is doing the will of the Father then. To that, I say that is correct and incorrect. It is correct for this body of Christ will be built, whether you realize it or not. This is what we are hearing in Romans.

Thou wilt say then unto me, **Why doth he yet find fault? For who hath resisted his will?** Nay but, O man, who art thou that repliest against God? Shall the thing formed say to him that formed it, Why hast thou made me thus? Hath not the potter power over the clay, of the same lump to make one vessel unto honour, and another unto dishonour? What if God, willing to shew his wrath, and to make his power known, endured with much longsuffering the vessels of wrath fitted to destruction: And that he might make known the riches of his glory on the vessels of mercy, which he had afore prepared unto glory, Even us, whom he hath called, not of the Jews only, but also of the Gentiles? As he saith also in Osee, I will call them my people, which were not my people; and her beloved, which was not beloved. And it shall come to pass, that in the place where it was said unto them, Ye are not my people; there shall they be called the children of the living God. Esaias also crieth concerning Israel, Though the number of the children of Israel be as the sand of the sea, a remnant shall be saved: For he will finish the work, and cut it short in righteousness: because a short work will the Lord make upon the earth. And as Esaias said before, Except the Lord of Sabaoth had left us a seed, we had been as Sodoma, and been made like unto Gomorrha. What shall we say then? That the Gentiles, which followed not after righteousness, have attained to righteousness, even the righteousness which is of faith. But Israel, which followed after the law of righteousness, hath not attained to the law of righteousness. Wherefore? Because they sought it not by faith, but as it were by the works of the law. For they stumbled at that stumblingstone; As it is written, Behold, I lay in Sion a stumblingstone and rock

JESUS IS HERE

of offence: and whosoever believeth on him shall not be ashamed. (Romans 9:19–33)

As you can hear now, many are building this body without knowing it. We do not know if anyone is doing right or wrong by our Father. He is the only one that knows for this body is invisible to our eyes. Our Father is the only one that knows what each person is supposed to be doing, and He is the only one that has the right to judge. I truly feel that we will be judged on how we did our part of building this body with love. That is why we are told to do whatever we do, do it in the name of Christ. “And whatsoever ye do in word or deed, do all in the name of the Lord Jesus, giving thanks to God and the Father by him” (Colossians 3:17). Christ is a love for all, for it is him that died for all and not just you or me.

This is where it is going to get intense and probably upset a lot of people. This was shown in the second book in more detail, but we are going to show some of it here. The first thing we need to realize is something we just read a while ago.

I am the Lord, and there is none else, there is no God beside me: I girded thee, though thou hast not known me: That they may know from the rising of the sun, and from the west, that there is none beside me. I am the Lord, and there is none else. **I form the light, and create darkness: I make peace, and create evil: I the Lord do all these things.** (Isaiah 45:5–7)

Then we need to listen to when we can hear some say they will do whatever God commands of them even if it is evil.

Then all the captains of the forces, and Johanan the son of Kareah, and Jezaniah the son of Hoshaiah, and all the people from the least even unto the greatest, came near, And said unto Jeremiah the prophet, Let, we beseech thee, our supplication be accepted before

thee, and pray for us unto the Lord thy God, even for all this remnant; (for we are left but a few of many, as thine eyes do behold us:) That the Lord thy God may shew us the way wherein we may walk, and the thing that we may do. Then Jeremiah the prophet said unto them, I have heard you; behold, I will pray unto the Lord your God according to your words; and it shall come to pass, that whatsoever thing the Lord shall answer you, I will declare it unto you; I will keep nothing back from you. **Then they said to Jeremiah, The Lord be a true and faithful witness between us, if we do not even according to all things for the which the Lord thy God shall send thee to us. Whether it be good, or whether it be evil, we will obey the voice of the Lord our God, to whom we send thee; that it may be well with us, when we obey the voice of the Lord our God.** (Jeremiah 42:1–6)

Notice how these men are saying they will do whatever they are told to do whether it be good or evil? Notice how if they do whatever they are commanded to do, it will be well with them when they obey the voice of our Father? Let us think about the car wreck I had when I was sixteen. Does that seem like that was evil for them to cause me to be wrecked and be in a coma for three days and nights? It had to be done so that the scriptures would not be broken. Now we all know that there have been people that kill someone physically and say that God told them to do it. People automatically assume this person is insane, but after hearing what you just did, can you really think that? These people that made this vow to God have dominion over us as well. Yes, that means those above us can cause us to do things in which we would have never dreamed of doing, but because they have dominion over us, we do what they make us do. Now this does not mean that everything that does go wrong or offends you is coming from above, but at the same time, it is up to you to seek the truth out with our Father. Then listen to what we can hear in 1 Peter 2:8, “And a

JESUS IS HERE

stone of stumbling, and a rock of offence, even to them which stumble at the word, being disobedient: whereunto also they were appointed.” Now if they are assigned to be disobedient, then are not they obeying?

This also means that those above us could be causing people to steal from others. They could be causing some to lie to others.

And the Lord said unto him, Wherewith? And he said, I will go forth, and I will be a lying spirit in the mouth of all his prophets. And he said, Thou shalt persuade him, and prevail also: go forth, and do so. Now therefore, behold, **the Lord hath put a lying spirit in the mouth of all these thy prophets, and the Lord hath spoken evil concerning thee.**

(1 Kings 22:22–23)

They may cause someone to lose their job, or something that is said in Ezra 7 can happen. “And whosoever will not do the law of thy God, and the law of the king, **let judgment be executed speedily upon him, whether it be unto death, or to banishment, or to confiscation of goods, or to imprisonment**” (Ezra 7:26). This is being said to those that have dominion over our bodies and not to us.

Then we need to be listening to when we are told that our Father will send us to the land of those we despise. “For thus saith the Lord God; Behold, I will deliver thee into the hand of them whom thou hatest, into the hand of them from whom thy mind is alienated” (Ezekiel 23:28). This is where you must realize that reincarnation is very real. This was laid out in detail in the second and third books, so without explaining it in its entirety in this book, we will just show the basics. God said the covenant is good for a thousand generations. Or better said, a thousand lives. When we finish with whatever roles we have to fulfill in this life, we pass away and come back into captivity by being born as someone else. We grow up from a baby again. Now we will just use a few examples. Let us say that a White man just totally couldn’t stand Black people in his or her last life. This person is now living as a Black person. If someone in their last life couldn’t

stand heavy people, this person is now a heavy person. If someone couldn't stand White people, then they are living as a White person now. If someone couldn't stand people that had cancer or needed other medical attention all the time, they have cancer and such in this life. If someone couldn't stand homosexuality in their last life, that person is a homosexual in this life. I think your starting to get the picture. Our Father will send us to the land of those we despise.

I realize that there are a lot of people asking why our Father would do this. This is how He is justified in all of His works. It happens this way so that a soul can learn what it feels like to have the world to condemn them for just being the person that our Father is causing them to be. That is because we live in Satan's world, and the ways of the world are to condemn, judge, think of themselves before others, and to think they are more deserving than others. These people do not realize what is going on nor do they remember it from each life. That is what we are told in Ecclesiastes 1:11, "There is no remembrance of former things; neither shall there be any remembrance of things that are to come with those that shall come after." How can someone remember something that is to come if they haven't already lived it somehow?

Now I realize that a lot of people think that Jesus is king of all kings, but we need to listen to what we are told in Isaiah 45:5-25.

I am the Lord, and there is none else, there is no God beside me: I girded thee, though thou hast not known me: That they may know from the rising of the sun, and from the west, that there is none beside me. I am the Lord, and there is none else. I form the light, and create darkness: I make peace, and create evil: I the Lord do all these things. Drop down, ye heavens, from above, and let the skies pour down righteousness: let the earth open, and let them bring forth salvation, and let righteousness spring up together; I the Lord have created it. Woe unto him that striveth with his Maker! Let the potsherd

JESUS IS HERE

strive with the potsherds of the earth. Shall the clay say to him that fashioneth it, What makest thou? or thy work, He hath no hands? Woe unto him that saith unto his father, What begettest thou? or to the woman, What hast thou brought forth? Thus saith the Lord, the Holy One of Israel, and his Maker, Ask me of things to come concerning my sons, and concerning the work of my hands command ye me. I have made the earth, and created man upon it: I, even my hands, have stretched out the heavens, and all their host have I commanded. I have raised him up in righteousness, and I will direct all his ways: he shall build my city, and he shall let go my captives, not for price nor reward, saith the Lord of hosts. Thus saith the Lord, The labour of Egypt, and merchandise of Ethiopia and of the Sabeans, men of stature, shall come over unto thee, and they shall be thine: they shall come after thee; in chains they shall come over, and they shall fall down unto thee, they shall make supplication unto thee, saying, Surely God is in thee; and there is none else, there is no God. Verily thou art a God that hidest thyself, O God of Israel, the Saviour. They shall be ashamed, and also confounded, all of them: they shall go to confusion together that are makers of idols. But Israel shall be saved in the Lord with an everlasting salvation: ye shall not be ashamed nor confounded world without end. For thus saith the Lord that created the heavens; God himself that formed the earth and made it; he hath established it, he created it not in vain, he formed it to be inhabited: I am the Lord; and there is none else. I have not spoken in secret, in a dark place of the earth: I said not unto the seed of Jacob, Seek ye me in vain: I the Lord speak righteousness, I declare things that are right. **Assemble yourselves and come; draw near**

together, ye that are escaped of the nations: they have no knowledge that set up the wood of their graven image, and pray unto a god that cannot save. Tell ye, and bring them near; yea, let them take counsel together: who hath declared this from ancient time? who hath told it from that time? have not I the Lord? and there is no God else beside me; a just God and a Saviour; there is none beside me. Look unto me, and be ye saved, all the ends of the earth: for I am God, and there is none else. I have sworn by myself, the word is gone out of my mouth in righteousness, and shall not return, That unto me every knee shall bow, every tongue shall swear. Surely, shall one say, in the Lord have I righteousness and strength: even to him shall men come; and all that are incensed against him shall be ashamed. In the Lord shall all the seed of Israel be justified, and shall glory.

This is where we will be learning who Jesus really is. I know a lot of people think that Jesus is only in this world to do good unto others, but again, this is only because people are not listening to everything the Bible tells us. This is going to really disturb a lot of people. Let us listen to something we are told in Colossians.

And Jesus, which is called Justus, who are of the circumcision. These only are my fellowworkers unto the kingdom of God, which have been a comfort unto me. (Colossians 4:11)

Now, we need to be listening to the engrafted word again. What I mean is, at the first sentence of this verse, we can hear, "And Jesus, which is called Justus." Now, I ask you to read that sentence out loud, and then read this out loud: "And Jesus, which is called justice." When we read both sentences out loud, we can hear that they sounded alike. Jesus, in which is spread throughout the entire earth and dwells

JESUS IS HERE

in each person, does unto others as they do unto others. It is like that poker game that I explained earlier. I won with the nut full house, and the very next time I played, I lost to the nut full house. It was done unto me as I did unto others in the previous game. This goes further; if someone kills someone, Jesus will make sure this person will be killed. If a person steals from others, Jesus will make sure that this person will be robbed. He justifies our actions. Therefore, we are told to do unto others as you would have others do unto you.

Therefore all things whatsoever ye would that men should do to you, do ye even so to them: for this is the law and the prophets. (Matthew 7:12)

Now this is where it is going to get a little tricky and at the same time will explain as to why so many people give glory to Jesus rather than our Father. First, let us look at a few spots that we are told that Jesus is the king of kings or, better said, where many misunderstand what is being said.

I give thee charge in the sight of God, who quickeneth all things, and before Christ Jesus, who before Pontius Pilate witnessed a good confession; That thou keep this commandment without spot, unrebukable, until the appearing of our Lord Jesus Christ: **Which in his times he shall shew, who is the blessed and only Potentate, the King of kings, and Lord of lords.** (1 Timothy 6:13–15)

These shall make war with the Lamb, and the Lamb shall overcome them: for he is Lord of lords, and King of kings: and they that are with him are called, and chosen, and faithful. (Revelation 17:14)

And I saw heaven opened, and behold a white horse; and he that sat upon him was called Faithful and

DAVID JENKINS

True, and in righteousness he doth judge and make war. His eyes were as a flame of fire, and on his head were many crowns; and he had a name written, that no man knew, but he himself. And he was clothed with a vesture dipped in blood: and his name is called The Word of God. And the armies which were in heaven followed him upon white horses, clothed in fine linen, white and clean. And out of his mouth goeth a sharp sword, that with it he should smite the nations: and he shall rule them with a rod of iron: and he treadeth the winepress of the fierceness and wrath of Almighty God. And he hath on his vesture and on his thigh a name written, King Of Kings, And Lord Of Lords. (Revelation 19:11–16)

If Jesus is the king of kings, then why do we hear that King Nebuchadnezzar is the king of kings in the book of Daniel? I am looking over the chapter and am feeling as if I do not want to post all of that chapter right now, so we are going to just show a couple different areas so that we can hear Nebuchadnezzar is being called king of kings.

And in the second year of the reign of Nebuchadnezzar Nebuchadnezzar dreamed dreams, wherewith his spirit was troubled, and his sleep brake from him. Then the king commanded to call the magicians, and the astrologers, and the sorcerers, and the Chaldeans, for to shew the king his dreams. So they came and stood before the king. And the king said unto them, I have dreamed a dream, and my spirit was troubled to know the dream. (Daniel 2:1–3)

Now we will skip down to later verses.

This is the dream; and we will tell the interpretation thereof before the king. **Thou, O king, art a king of kings: for the God of heaven hath given thee a kingdom, power, and strength, and glory.** And wheresoever the children of men dwell, the beasts of the field and the fowls of the heaven hath he given into thine hand, and hath made thee ruler over them all. Thou art this head of gold. (Daniel 2:36–38)

In the last book we wrote, we broke down the interpretation of this dream (and will be again later in this book), but for now, let us just understand that Nebuchadnezzar is shown as a king of kings and that he has been given rule of all of the earth by our Father. So let us look on e-Sword to see who he is.

H5019 nebûkadne'tsarsar nebûkadre'tsarsar nebû kadre'tsôr neb-oo-kad-nets-tsar', neb-oo-kad-rets-tsar', neb-oo-kad-tsore Of foreign derivation; Nebukadnettsar (or rettsar, or rettsor), **king of Babylon**:—Nebuchadnezzar, Nebuchadrezzar.

I will confess this now: I stated that this is where it fully gets tricky, and I mean that. I am pacing the room asking our Father how I can explain this because I understand in my mind very well, but I need to show you all the way I understand it through the scriptures, and I really need to place them in the right order. Just a quick sidenote: I need to explain, for all should know by now that I have nowhere to lay my head or nowhere to call home. Yet I say I am pacing the room. My truck is broken down, so I am in a motel for a few days. And yes, our Father caused my truck to break down so that I would get it through my thick skull to get a good start on this book. He has dominion over me and everything that I do. “Then answered Jesus and said unto them, Verily, verily, I say unto you, The Son can do nothing of himself, but what he seeth the Father do: for what things soever he doeth, these also doeth the Son likewise” (John 5:19).

Let us first recall that our Father breathed life into man so that man became a living soul. “And the Lord God formed man of the dust of the ground, and breathed into his nostrils the breath of life; and man became a living soul” (Genesis 2:7). As explained in the third book our Father had me write, “Jesus Christ in the flesh!”; this was the process of Satan being locked away inside of man during the thousand-year reign with Christ. This was our Father putting a piece of Himself into each person that has or is living.

Now remember how Jesus and the Father are invisible? “In whom we have redemption through his blood, even the forgiveness of sins: **Who is the image of the invisible God, the firstborn of every creature**” (Colossians 1:14–15). Now we are going to do a little mind experiment. Let us put ourselves out into space looking down on the earth. Then let us listen to some of Isaiah 8.

Moreover the Lord said unto me, Take thee a great roll, and write in it with a man’s pen concerning Mahershalalhashbaz. And I took unto me faithful witnesses to record, Uriah the priest, and Zechariah the son of Jeberechiah. And I went unto the prophetess; and she conceived, and bare a son. Then said the Lord to me, Call his name Mahershalalhashbaz. For before the child shall have knowledge to cry, My father, and my mother, the riches of Damascus and the spoil of Samaria shall be taken away before the king of Assyria. The Lord spake also unto me again, saying, Forasmuch as this people refuseth the waters of Shiloah that go softly, and rejoice in Rezin and Remaliah’s son; Now therefore, behold, the Lord bringeth up upon them the waters of the river, strong and many, even the king of Assyria, and all his glory: and he shall come up over all his channels, and go over all his banks: **And he shall pass through Judah; he shall overflow and go over, he shall reach even to the neck; and the stretching out of his wings**

shall fill the breadth of thy land, O Immanuel.

(Isaiah 8:1–8)

Now we all know that *Emmanuel* is interpreted as “God with us,” right? “Behold, a virgin shall be with child, and shall bring forth a son, and they shall call his name Emmanuel, which being interpreted is, God with us” (Matthew 1:23). Now let us look on e-Sword so that we can see the definition of *Immanuel*.

H6005 ‘immânû’êl im-maw-noo-ale’ From H5973
and H410 with suffix pronoun inserted; **with us (is)**
God; Immanuel, a name of Isaiah’s son:—Immanuel.

There is that engrafted word again. They are spelled differently but sound exactly the same when you hear them pronounced. Notice how Immanuel covers the entire earth? He has about eight billion functioning body parts; those body parts are us. Remember how Jesus said he would build the temple of his body in three days? “Jesus answered and said unto them, Destroy this temple, and in three days I will raise it up. Then said the Jews, Forty and six years was this temple in building, and wilt thou rear it up in three days? But he spake of the temple of his body. But we know that he is invisible, so this temple too, must be invisible” (John 2:19–21).

But we know that Jesus is at the right side of God, right? “And said, Behold, I see the heavens opened, and the Son of man standing on the right hand of God” (Acts 7:56). “Who is he that condemneth? It is Christ that died, yea rather, that is risen again, who is even at the right hand of God, who also maketh intercession for us” (Romans 8:34). “Which he wrought in Christ, when he raised him from the dead, and set him at his own right hand in the heavenly places” (Ephesians 1:20). “If ye then be risen with Christ, seek those things which are above, where Christ sitteth on the right hand of God” (Colossians 3:1). But we need to remember that we have shown that Christ is all and in all. “Where there is neither Greek nor Jew, circumcision nor uncircumcision, Barbarian, Scythian, bond nor free: **but Christ is**

all, and in all” (Colossians 1:11). Remember what we just heard in Isaiah 8? Immanuel covers the entire earth with almost eight billion body parts. Now picture that you are looking at the earth from space or the heavens. Imagine looking to the left of the earth. There is the Father, and we are standing on the right side of our Father. Now picture this: these two are standing there in heaven next to one another. Jesus is covering the earth, and his Father is standing right there next to him.

These spirits are a lot larger than you and I. Okay, I had to step away from the computer for a minute. I have been reminded of a dream that I had when I was at my mom’s for the three weeks after being baptized with the Holy Ghost. I felt I was being told to tell you all this dream, and my first reaction was “no way.” But as I stepped away with that attitude, I was told within seconds to put it in. So, I am going to do as I am told, but many of you will be offended. I was sleeping on the couch at this time and was awoken from a dream that just truly puzzled me for a long time. I was ascended up into where the King is. We were in what we would call a courtroom-style room, but this room was humongous. I hope I can paint this picture in your mind as I had seen it in this dream. I realize that there are many people that are going to say that it was just a dream, but when I put everything together that has happened in my life—bull malarkey, I know exactly what is going on in my life. This was right after I was baptized or went to the wilderness to die. Probably three or four days. With everything that had just happened, I was in the state of mind that the world was going to end very soon, and I had to do all that I could to get my mom and brother to understand the same things I was seeing and hearing within the Bible.

I was watching myself in this dream. In this dream I was standing on a platform, something like a floor. I only looked to be like two inches tall or so in this room. There was like a humongous bench in front of me. Then all of a sudden, I look up to just over the top of the bench. I did not see a face, but I did see this right arm starting to come over the top of me. I could see his chest area and His left arm at rest on the top of the desk. Just putting it into a size of something that you

JESUS IS HERE

can imagine, this arm was at least as long as my tractor-trailer combination. Which happens to be about seventy-three feet long if you can't picture it. Probably the thickness of a tree trunk. He was wearing a blue robe with banded white stripes on the sleeves. As this arm was coming over the top of me, I could see His hand with His index finger pointing to something behind me. As his arm was directly above me, and as I was turning around to see what He was pointing at, I heard Him say, "These people make little or no difference to Me." Just as I completed turning around, I was looking at an open book. This book was open to what I would guess to be about the center, equal pages on either side. This book was bigger than a two- or three-story house.

This is the part I didn't want to mention, for I know a lot of people have just put this book down. But I am going to explain this just as our Father had me explain it to the few people in the flesh that our Father had me explain it to. Naturally, a lot of people will assume that this means that they do not matter to our Father, and yes, it did take some time before I truly understood what it meant. He loves each and every person on this planet equally, and everybody has their own different roles to fulfill. What was being said to me was that He was not wanting others to learn what I was learning at the time. This is because I am the son of man that is prophesied about in the Bible, and I had just enrolled into the very last grades of my hard-core, hands-on training with our Father, one-on-one. This is why He severed me from others, for it was just for me, so that I could write these books without the interference of man.

Now we need to be looking at the fourth chapter of Daniel so that we can truly understand who has rule or the true dominion over every person on the planet. We will be posting the entire chapter of Daniel 4, and as you read through it, try to recall that Nebuchadnezzar is a king of kings.

Nebuchadnezzar the king, unto all people, nations,
and languages, that dwell in all the earth;

Peace be multiplied unto you. I thought it good to shew the signs and wonders that the high God hath wrought toward me. How great are his signs! and how mighty are his wonders! his kingdom is an everlasting kingdom, and his dominion is from generation to generation. I Nebuchadnezzar was at rest in mine house, and flourishing in my palace: I saw a dream which made me afraid, and the thoughts upon my bed and the visions of my head troubled me. Therefore made I a decree to bring in all the wise men of Babylon before me, that they might make known unto me the interpretation of the dream. Then came in the magicians, the astrologers, the Chaldeans, and the soothsayers: and I told the dream before them; but they did not make known unto me the interpretation thereof. But at the last Daniel came in before me, whose name was Belteshazzar, according to the name of my God, and in whom is the spirit of the holy gods: and before him I told the dream, saying, O Belteshazzar, master of the magicians, because I know that the spirit of the holy gods is in thee, and no secret troubleth thee, tell me the visions of my dream that I have seen, and the interpretation thereof. Thus were the visions of mine head in my bed; I saw, and behold a tree in the midst of the earth, and the height thereof was great. The tree grew, and was strong, and the height thereof reached unto heaven, and the sight thereof to the end of all the earth: The leaves thereof were fair, and the fruit thereof much, and in it was meat for all: the beasts of the field had shadow under it, and the fowls of the heaven dwelt in the boughs thereof, and all flesh was fed of it. I saw in the visions of my head upon my bed, and, behold, a watcher and an holy one came down from heaven; He cried aloud, and said thus, Hew down the tree, and

JESUS IS HERE

cut off his branches, shake off his leaves, and scatter his fruit: let the beasts get away from under it, and the fowls from his branches: Nevertheless leave the stump of his roots in the earth, even with a band of iron and brass, in the tender grass of the field; and let it be wet with the dew of heaven, and let his portion be with the beasts in the grass of the earth: Let his heart be changed from man's, and let a beast's heart be given unto him; and let seven times pass over him. This matter is by the decree of the watchers, and the demand by the word of the holy ones: to the intent that the living may know that the most High ruleth in the kingdom of men, and giveth it to whomsoever he will, and setteth up over it the basest of men. This dream I king Nebuchadnezzar have seen. Now thou, O Beltshazzar, declare the interpretation thereof, forasmuch as all the wise men of my kingdom are not able to make known unto me the interpretation: but thou art able; for the spirit of the holy gods is in thee. Then Daniel, whose name was Beltshazzar, was astonied for one hour, and his thoughts troubled him. The king spake, and said, Beltshazzar, let not the dream, or the interpretation thereof, trouble thee. Beltshazzar answered and said, My lord, the dream be to them that hate thee, and the interpretation thereof to thine enemies. The tree that thou sawest, which grew, and was strong, whose height reached unto the heaven, and the sight thereof to all the earth; Whose leaves were fair, and the fruit thereof much, and in it was meat for all; under which the beasts of the field dwelt, and upon whose branches the fowls of the heaven had their habitation: It is thou, O king, that art grown and become strong: for thy greatness is grown, and reacheth unto heaven, and thy dominion to the end of the earth. And whereas the king saw a

watcher and an holy one coming down from heaven, and saying, Hew the tree down, and destroy it; yet leave the stump of the roots thereof in the earth, even with a band of iron and brass, in the tender grass of the field; and let it be wet with the dew of heaven, and let his portion be with the beasts of the field, till seven times pass over him; This is the interpretation, O king, and this is the decree of the most High, which is come upon my lord the king: That they shall drive thee from men, and thy dwelling shall be with the beasts of the field, and they shall make thee to eat grass as oxen, and they shall wet thee with the dew of heaven, and seven times shall pass over thee, till thou know that the most High ruleth in the kingdom of men, and giveth it to whom- soever he will. And whereas they commanded to leave the stump of the tree roots; thy kingdom shall be sure unto thee, after that thou shalt have known that the heavens do rule. Wherefore, O king, let my counsel be acceptable unto thee, and break off thy sins by righteousness, and thine iniquities by shewing mercy to the poor; if it may be a lengthening of thy tranquillity. All this came upon the king Nebuchadnezzar. At the end of twelve months he walked in the palace of the kingdom of Babylon. The king spake, and said, Is not this great Babylon, that I have built for the house of the kingdom by the might of my power, and for the honour of my majesty? While the word was in the king's mouth, there fell a voice from heaven, saying, O king Nebuchadnezzar, to thee it is spoken; The kingdom is departed from thee. And they shall drive thee from men, and thy dwelling shall be with the beasts of the field: they shall make thee to eat grass as oxen, and seven times shall pass over thee, until thou know that the most High ruleth in the kingdom of men, and giveth it to

whomsoever he will. The same hour was the thing fulfilled upon Nebuchadnezzar: and he was driven from men, and did eat grass as oxen, and his body was wet with the dew of heaven, till his hairs were grown like eagles' feathers, and his nails like birds' claws. **And at the end of the days I Nebuchadnezzar lifted up mine eyes unto heaven, and mine understanding returned unto me, and I blessed the most High, and I praised and honoured him that liveth for ever, whose dominion is an everlasting dominion, and his kingdom is from generation to generation: And all the inhabitants of the earth are reputed as nothing: and he doeth according to his will in the army of heaven, and among the inhabitants of the earth: and none can stay his hand, or say unto him, What doest thou?** At the same time my reason returned unto me; and for the glory of my kingdom, mine honour and brightness returned unto me; and my counsellors and my lords sought unto me; and I was established in my kingdom, and excellent majesty was added unto me. **Now I Nebuchadnezzar praise and extol and honour the King of heaven, all whose works are truth, and his ways judgment: and those that walk in pride he is able to abase.** (Daniel 4:1–37)

This is where we really start to understand the name *Jehovah*. Let us look on e-Sword again to see the definition of *Jehovah*. “And I appeared unto Abraham, unto Isaac, and unto Jacob, by the name of God Almighty, but by my name Jehovah was I not known to them” (Exodus 6:3). I wanted to show this in Exodus, for we have shown it in a couple of the other books, but now we are really looking as to what it truly means.

H3068 yehôvâh yeh-ho-vaw'From H1961; (the) **self Existent** or eternal; Jehovah, Jewish national name of God:—Jehovah, the Lord. Compare H3050, H3069.

This is when we truly need to be thinking about when our Father breathed life into man. This breath is a little of Himself. Just as when a man and a woman have a child. This child is little of both parents. Yes, this is another part of man and woman becoming one flesh, but this is not what we are talking about here. Now we all know that Jesus and our Father are one, right? “My Father, which gave them me, is greater than all; and no man is able to pluck them out of my Father’s hand. **I and my Father are one**” (John 10:29–30).

Let us think of a little boy that is only of the age of two or three. This boy generally does everything that he can to please his mom and dad. This is what the invisible Jesus, who dwells inside of us, is doing. If it wasn’t for Jesus laying his life down the first time, none of us would be here. We all would still be in the lowest form of hell that exists. Now that we are thinking about God putting a little of Himself inside of each person to make the one son of God or Immanuel, we need to be thinking about this son only doing what his Father is commanding him to do. Now let us remember that we all are the temple of God. “Know ye not that ye are the temple of God, and that the Spirit of God dwelleth in you?” (1 Corinthians 3:16). Remember how we are told that Jesus is in the heavens standing on the right side of God? “And said, Behold, I see the heavens opened, and the Son of man standing on the right hand of God” (Acts 7:56). Look at all the functioning body parts of Jesus standing in the heavens, and then notice that his Father is standing right there next to him holding his hand and showing or commanding him of how to do all.

This is why we hear Jesus say that if we see him, we see the Father. “Jesus saith unto him, Have I been so long time with you, and yet hast thou not known me, Philip? **he that hath seen me hath seen the Father**; and how sayest thou then, Show us the Father?” (John 14:9). Now you can see Jehovah, the creator of everything in the heavens, earth, and under the earth. He is in all of us, and yet so many people

condemn people for being who they are. Our Father is invisible and so is His son, but when our Father put a piece of Himself into each one of us, His son became visible, but many cannot see him, for they look to a god that changed our Father.

This is really when we need to understand what was in the last book. Our Father locked Satan up on the inside of us so that His love could create everything we see today, and yes, that means things in which we do not see. When our Father locked Satan up inside of man, that is when the thousand-year reign with Christ began. “It is a faithful saying: For if we be dead with him, we shall also live with him: If we suffer, we shall also reign with him: if we deny him, he also will deny us: If we believe not, yet he abideth faithful: **he cannot deny himself**” (2 Timothy 2:11–13). Now with hearing this we all can be certain that Christ dwells in all of us, but many just do not understand what is going on because they do not believe. As shown in the second book, it doesn’t matter if you believe or not, he that is inside of you is going to do exactly as our Father commands him to do, and yes, that means good or bad. Not because his Father is far away and will come back later to check on him to see how he is doing, but his Father is sitting inside each of us controlling it all. So, the next time you think of a group of people of any color, race, nationalism, size, or shape, try to remember that you are actually seeing the Father because He dwells in all, just as His son does as well.

Now this is where we need to be listening to an area of Ezekiel to show where Jesus is sitting at on the holy mountain, which is above us. I don’t want to show everything of this mountain, for it includes chapters 40–46, so I am only going to show where the prince, or Jesus, is sitting, for he is the only one reporting to our Father directly.

Then he brought me back the way of the gate of the outward sanctuary which looketh toward the east; and it was shut. **Then said the Lord unto me; This gate shall be shut, it shall not be opened, and no man shall enter in by it; because the Lord, the God of Israel, hath entered in by it, therefore it shall be**

shut. It is for the prince; the prince, he shall sit in it to eat bread before the Lord; he shall enter by the way of the porch of that gate, and shall go out by the way of the same. Then brought he me the way of the north gate before the house: and I looked, and, behold, the glory of the Lord filled the house of the Lord: and I fell upon my face. And the Lord said unto me, Son of man, mark well, and behold with thine eyes, and hear with thine ears all that I say unto thee concerning all the ordinances of the house of the Lord, and all the laws thereof; and mark well the entering in of the house, with every going forth of the sanctuary. (Ezekiel 44:1–5)

This mountain was completely shown in the first and third books we wrote.

Now this is where we need to reflect back on an area in which we just read a bit ago.

I give thee charge in the sight of God, who quickeneth all things, and before Christ Jesus, who before Pontius Pilate witnessed a good confession; **That thou keep this commandment without spot, unrebukable, until the appearing of our Lord Jesus Christ: Which in his times he shall shew, who is the blessed and only Potentate, the King of kings, and Lord of lords.** (1 Timothy 6:13–15)

We showed you all in the last book and have touched on it in this chapter a bit. As it is shown in Luke, it will be as the days of Noah when the son of man be revealed. The flood in which covers the earth today.

For as the lightning, that lighteneth out of the one part under heaven, shineth unto the other part

under heaven; so shall also the Son of man be in his day. But first must he suffer many things, and be rejected of this generation. **And as it was in the days of Noe, so shall it be also in the days of the Son of man.** They did eat, they drank, they married wives, they were given in marriage, until the day that Noah entered into the ark, and the flood came, and destroyed them all. Likewise also as it was in the days of Lot; they did eat, they drank, they bought, they sold, they planted, they builded; But the same day that Lot went out of Sodom it rained fire and brimstone from heaven, and destroyed them all. **Even thus shall it be in the day when the Son of man is revealed.**
(Luke 17:24–30)

This world is covered with a spiritual flood, and that was revealed in the last book and will be shown in a later chapter. That is what it means when we hear it will be just as the days of Noah. It was revealed in the last book.

Now as shown in 1 Timothy 6:15, “Which in his times he shall shew, who is the blessed and only Potentate, the King of kings, and Lord of lords,” notice how we are being told that the lord Jesus Christ, in his time, he shall shew “who is the blessed and only Potentate, the King of Kings, and Lord of Lords.” It is Jehovah; He is the only true King of kings, Lord of lords. It is Jehovah, for He is the creator of everybody, everything in the heavens, everything in the earth, and everything in the waters beneath the earth. Do not take glory away from our Father, for He will not share His glory. **“I am the Lord: that is my name: and my glory will I not give to another, neither my praise to graven images”** (Isaiah 42:8). Now remember Matthew 7:12, “Therefore all things whatsoever ye would that men should do to you, do ye even so to them: for this is the law and the prophets.” You won’t give glory to another for things you have done yourself, so don’t do that to our Father. This is something that I have pointed out in the three previous books and, of course, this one. This is one of the

DAVID JENKINS

very first things our Father brought to my attention and is really laid out in the first and second books.

In conclusion of this chapter, I want to ask if you can see how man has misunderstood the Bible from the beginning. When we hear “let us make man in our image,” it has nothing to do with the way we look.

THE FORBIDDEN FRUIT



In this chapter, we are going to consider the very beginning of the Bible. I know there are a lot of people that think that the Old Testament is not relevant for us today. But if we take the time to listen to our Father, we will realize that the Old Testament is very relevant for us today. One of the first things we should be paying attention to is Isaiah 46:10, **“Declaring the end from the beginning, and from ancient times the things that are not yet done, saying, My counsel shall stand, and I will do all my pleasure.”** Then let us look at what we are being told in Ecclesiastes 1:9–11, **“The thing that hath been, it is that which shall be; and that which is done is that which shall be done: and there is no new thing under the sun. Is there any thing whereof it may be said, See, this is new? it hath been already of old time, which was before us.** There is no remembrance of former things; neither shall there be any remembrance of things that are to come with those that shall come after.” If it happened before, it is happening now. This is what has been going on since our Father created man. It is not a looking at the Bible as it was for the people of ancient times; however, it is for our lives today. A letter of instructions on how we should live our lives.

I do want to mention that this chapter is in the second book our Father had me write. It is called “The Garden of Eden” in that book. We are adding it to this book, for as we can see, the sorrows are now beginning. I know that this is very important, for we would not be told “not to touch any unclean thing” in the New Testament if it wasn’t.

And what agreement hath the temple of God with idols? for ye are the temple of the living God; as God hath said, I will dwell in them, and walk in them; and I will be their God, and they shall be my people. Wherefore come out from among them, and be ye separate, saith the Lord, **and touch not the unclean thing; and I will receive you. And will be a Father unto you, and ye shall be my sons and daughters, saith the Lord Almighty.** (2 Corinthians 6:16–18)

If we truly want to know how these last days are going to be, we must go back to the beginning. But because we cannot hop into a time machine, we must go to the one thing that has been left for us that explains the beginning. And there is only one thing available to us that explains the beginning. This is that long letter that our Father has left us. And to truly understand it, we must go back to the beginning of the Bible. I will be using the King James Bible.

So, let us go back to Genesis 2:15–17, “And the Lord God took the man, and put him into the garden of Eden to dress it and to keep it. **And the Lord God commanded the man, saying, Of every tree of the garden thou mayest freely eat: But of the tree of the knowledge of good and evil, thou shalt not eat of it: for in the day that thou eatest thereof thou shalt surely die.**” This is a spiritual death and not a physical death.

Now when we first think of the garden of Eden, we think that it does not pertain to us. As we go through this, we all should have a much better understanding that it is for us as well as it was for Adam and Eve. Let us look at Genesis 1 and look at when God created the animals.

And God said, Let the waters bring forth abundantly the moving creature that hath life, and fowl that may fly above the earth in the open firmament of heaven. And God created great whales, and every living creature that moveth, which the waters brought forth abundantly, after their kind, and every winged fowl after his kind: and God saw that it was good. And

JESUS IS HERE

God blessed them, saying, **Be fruitful, and multiply,** and fill the waters in the seas, and let fowl multiply in the earth. And the evening and the morning were the fifth day. And God said, **Let the earth bring forth the living creature after his kind, cat- tle, and creeping thing, and beast of the earth after his kind: and it was so.** And God made the beast of the earth after his kind, and cattle after their kind, and every thing that creepeth upon the earth after his kind: and God saw that it was good. (Genesis 1:20–25)

Let us look on e-Sword, which is an online Bible concordance, to help us understand the meaning of the language in the Bible from the Hebrew and Greek perspectives. We need to know what is meant when God commanded the animals to be **fruitful**.

Fruitful is H6509 pârâh paw-raw'. A primitive root; to bear fruit (literally or figuratively):— **bear, bring forth (fruit)**, (be, cause to be, make) fruitful, **grow, increase**.

Our Father has commanded all animals to grow and increase in number.

We need to realize—if we already don't—that the Bible is very symbolized. What I mean is that people can be also trees, water, beast, grass, etc. Now let us look at a few times in the Bible that we are told that man is a tree. That tree being a tree of life that too bears fruit.

Blessed is the man that walketh not in the coun- sel of the ungodly, nor standeth in the way of sinners, nor sitteth in the seat of the scornful. But his delight is in the law of the Lord; and in his law doth he meditate day and night. **And he shall be like a tree** planted by the rivers of water, that bringeth forth his fruit in his season; his leaf also shall not wither; and whatsoever he doeth shall prosper. (Psalm 1:1–3)

The fruit of the righteous is a **tree of life**; and he that winneth souls is wise. (Proverbs 11:30)

Hope deferred maketh the heart sick: but when the desire cometh, **it is a tree of life**. (Proverbs 13:12)

Hope deferred maketh the heart sick: but when the desire cometh, **it is a tree of life**. (Proverbs 15:4)

For ye shall go out with joy, and be led forth with peace: the mountains and the hills shall break forth before you into singing, **and all the trees of the field shall clap their hands**. (Isaiah 55:12)

Now to just think about this for a second, how can a tree actually clap its hands? It can't, these trees are people. We can clearly hear that life in the Bible can be a tree—a tree of life, so when we look at that tree in the midst of the garden, we now should be starting to understand that animals have a life, so they are a tree. That tree is a tree of life placed in the midst of the garden.

As we notice in the beginning of our Bibles, we know was commanded the same thing.

And God said, Let us make man in our image, after our likeness: and let them have dominion over the fish of the sea, and over the fowl of the air, and over the cattle, and over all the earth, and over every creeping thing that creepeth upon the earth. So God created man in his own image, in the image of God created he him; male and female created he them. And God blessed them, and God said unto them, **Be fruitful, and multiply, and replenish the earth**, and subdue it: and have dominion over the fish of the sea, and over the fowl of the air, and over every living thing that moveth upon the earth. (Genesis 1:26–28)

JESUS IS HERE

What our Father has shown me is that that tree in the midst of the garden is a tree of life. That tree of life produces fruit. That fruit that is forbidden is listed in Leviticus 11:1–47.

And the Lord spake unto Moses and to Aaron, saying unto them, Speak unto the children of Israel, saying, *These are the beasts which ye shall eat among all the beasts that are on the earth. Whatsoever parteth the hoof, and is cloven-footed, and cheweth the cud, among the beasts, that shall ye eat.* Nevertheless these shall ye not eat of them that chew the cud, or of them that divide the hoof: as the camel, because he cheweth the cud, but divideth not the hoof; he is unclean unto you. And the coney, because he cheweth the cud, but divideth not the hoof; he is unclean unto you. And the hare, because he cheweth the cud, but divideth not the hoof; he is unclean unto you. And the swine, though he divide the hoof, and be clovenfooted, yet he cheweth not the cud; he is unclean to you. Of their flesh shall ye not eat, and their carcase shall ye not touch; they are unclean to you. **These shall ye eat of all that are in the waters: whatsoever hath fins and scales in the waters, in the seas, and in the rivers, them shall ye eat.** And all that have not fins and scales in the seas, and in the rivers, of all that move in the waters, and of any living thing which is in the waters, they shall be an abomination unto you: They shall be even an abomination unto you; ye shall not eat of their flesh, but ye shall have their carcasses in abomination. Whatsoever hath no fins nor scales in the waters, that shall be an abomination unto you. And these are they which ye shall have in abomination among the fowls; they shall not be eaten, they are an abomination: the eagle, and the ossifrage, and the ospray, And the vulture, and the kite after his

kind; Every raven after his kind; And the owl, and the night hawk, and the cuckow, and the hawk after his kind, And the little owl, and the cormorant, and the great owl, And the swan, and the pelican, and the gier eagle, And the stork, the heron after her kind, and the lapwing, and the bat. All fowls that creep, going upon all four, shall be an abom- ination unto you. **Yet these may ye eat of every flying creeping thing that goeth upon all four, which have legs above their feet, to leap withal upon the earth; Even these of them ye may eat; the locust after his kind, and the bald locust after his kind, and the beetle after his kind, and the grasshopper after his kind.** But all other flying creeping things, which have four feet, shall be an abomination unto you. And for these ye shall be unclean: whosoever toucheth the carcase of them shall be unclean until the even. And whosoever beareth ought of the carcase of them shall wash his clothes, and be unclean until the even. The carcasses of every beast which divideth the hoof, and is not clovenfooted, nor cheweth the cud, are unclean unto you: every one that toucheth them shall be unclean. And whatsoever goeth upon his paws, among all manner of beasts that go on all four, those are unclean unto you: whoso toucheth their carcase shall be unclean until the even. And he that beareth the carcase of them shall wash his clothes, and be unclean until the even: they are unclean unto you. These also shall be unclean unto you among the creeping things that creep upon the earth; the weasel, and the mouse, and the tortoise after his kind, And the ferret, and the chameleon, and the lizard, and the snail, and the mole. These are unclean to you among all that creep: whosoever doth touch them, when they be dead, shall be unclean until the even. And upon whatsoever any of them, when

JESUS IS HERE

they are dead, doth fall, it shall be unclean; whether it be any vessel of wood, or raiment, or skin, or sack, whatsoever vessel it be, wherein any work is done, it must be put into water, and it shall be unclean until the even; so it shall be cleansed. And every earthen vessel, whereinto any of them falleth, whatsoever is in it shall be unclean; and ye shall break it. Of all meat which may be eaten, that on which such water cometh shall be unclean: and all drink that may be drunk in every such vessel shall be unclean. And every thing whereupon any part of their carcase falleth shall be unclean; whether it be oven, or ranges for pots, they shall be broken down: for they are unclean and shall be unclean unto you. Nevertheless a fountain or pit, wherein there is plenty of water, shall be clean: but that which toucheth their carcase shall be unclean. And if any part of their carcase fall upon any sowing seed which is to be sown, it shall be clean. But if any water be put upon the seed, and any part of their carcase fall thereon, it shall be unclean unto you. And if any beast, of which ye may eat, die; he that toucheth the carcase thereof shall be unclean until the even. And he that eateth of the carcase of it shall wash his clothes, and be unclean until the even: he also that beareth the carcase of it shall wash his clothes, and be unclean until the even. And every creeping thing that creepeth upon the earth shall be an abomination; it shall not be eaten. Whatsoever goeth upon the belly, and whatsoever goeth upon all four, or whatsoever hath more feet among all creeping things that creep upon the earth, them ye shall not eat; for they are an abomination. Ye shall not make yourselves abominable with any creeping thing that creepeth, neither shall ye make yourselves unclean with them, that ye should be defiled thereby. For I am the Lord your God: ye shall

therefore sanctify yourselves, and ye shall be holy; for I am holy: neither shall ye defile yourselves with any manner of creeping thing that creepeth upon the earth. For I am the Lord that bringeth you up out of the land of Egypt, to be your God: ye shall therefore be holy, for I am holy. This is the law of the beasts, and of the fowl, and of every living creature that moveth in the waters, and of every creature that creepeth upon the earth: To make a difference between the unclean and the clean, and between the beast that may be eaten and the beast that may not be eaten.

Okay, we have put in bold the things in which we can eat or that is food for us. Note that the unclean things are not meat or food for us. Let us listen to what our Father commanded us and the animals in the first chapter of the Bible.

And God blessed them, and God said unto them, Be fruitful, and multiply, and replenish the earth, and subdue it: and have dominion over the fish of the sea, and over the fowl of the air, and over every living thing that moveth upon the earth. **And God said, Behold, I have given you every herb bearing seed, which is upon the face of all the earth, and every tree, in the which is the fruit of a tree yielding seed; to you it shall be for meat. And to every beast of the earth, and to every fowl of the air, and to every thing that creepeth upon the earth, wherein there is life, I have given every green herb for meat: and it was so.** And God saw every thing that he had made, and, behold, it was very good. And the evening and the morning were the sixth day. (Genesis 1:28–31)

Without placing the entire chapter again, we can notice that the animals that our Father said will be food for us are commanded to eat

of green herbs. They do not eat other animals. They do not eat blood. For blood is life.

For it is the life of all flesh; the blood of it is for the life thereof: therefore I said unto the children of Israel, **Ye shall eat the blood of no manner of flesh: for the life of all flesh is the blood thereof: whosoever eateth it shall be cut off.** (Leviticus 17:14)

21 If the place which the Lord thy God hath chosen to put his name there be too far from thee, then thou shalt kill of thy herd and of thy flock, **which the Lord hath given thee**, as I have commanded thee, and thou shalt eat in thy gates whatsoever thy soul lusteth after. 22 Even as the roebuck and the hart is eaten, so thou shalt eat them: the unclean and the clean shall eat of them alike. 23 **Only be sure that thou eat not the blood: for the blood is the life; and thou mayest not eat the life with the flesh.** (Deuteronomy 12:21–23)

Just a quick sidenote: I know some are thinking this is saying we can eat clean and unclean. It is actually saying that the unclean person and clean person both shall not eat the blood. Note in verse 21 our Father states what He has given thee. If we reflect back, “Speak unto the children of Israel, saying, These are the beasts which ye shall eat among all the beasts that are on the earth” (Leviticus 11:2), we can hear our Father tell us what food for us will be. If it is listed as unclean, then it is not food for us.

Now that we have looked at that, let us go back to when Adam and Eve ate of the fruit.

Now the serpent was more subtil than any beast of the field which the Lord God had made. And he said unto the woman, Yea, hath God said, Ye shall not

eat of every tree of the garden? And the woman said unto the serpent, We may eat of the fruit of the trees of the garden: But of the fruit of the tree which is in the midst of the garden, God hath said, Ye shall not eat of it, neither shall ye touch it, lest ye die. And the serpent said unto the woman, Ye shall not surely die: For God doth know that in the day ye eat thereof, then your eyes shall be opened, **and ye shall be as gods**, knowing good and evil. (Genesis 3:1–5)

I want to pause here so that all can understand that this is not a physical death. But rather a spiritual death. Notice how the serpent said “ye shall be as gods”?

And when the woman saw that the tree was good for food, and that it was pleasant to the eyes, and a tree to be desired to make one wise, she took of the fruit thereof, and did eat, and gave also unto her husband with her; and he did eat. And the eyes of them both were opened, and they knew that they were naked; and they sewed fig leaves together, and made themselves aprons. **And they heard the voice of the Lord God walking in the garden in the cool of the day:** and Adam and his wife hid themselves from the presence of the Lord God amongst the trees of the garden. And the Lord God called unto Adam, and said unto him, Where art thou? And he said, I heard thy voice in the garden, and I was afraid, because I was naked; and I hid myself. And he said, **Who told thee that thou wast naked?** Hast thou eaten of the tree, whereof I commanded thee that thou shouldest not eat? (Genesis 3:6–11)

Now we need to notice how they heard God. Remember God is spirit. He is not a living person. Adam’s and Eve’s conscience started

JESUS IS HERE

to feel guilty for what they had done. Remember how our Father in the chapter of “The Fire” had me show all that He talks to us through our conscience? This is also how they heard His voice walking in the garden.

Before they ate of this fruit, they didn’t care that they were naked. They had no idea that others seeing them as they are being wrong. When they looked upon the other being naked, they saw no flaws. They were free. Everything was perfect until they ate of the forbidden fruit. They now knew good and evil. In other words, they started **thinking** they knew good from evil and right from wrong. They started **thinking** they knew what God wanted. Let us look at ourselves now. When was the last time you thought someone was better than you or worse than you? When was the last time you thought someone was not doing right for God? When was the last time you thought someone did or didn’t do something evil? When did you think that someone is going to hell for what they have done or are doing? This goes on forever; the things we think that degrade or upgrade others from ourselves is innumerable.

Now we need to go back to the beginning to see what the very first commandment God gave man.

And God said, Let us make man in our image, after our likeness: and let them have dominion over the fish of the sea, and over the fowl of the air, and over the cattle, and over all the earth, and over every creeping thing that creepeth upon the earth. So God created man in his own image, in the image of God created he him; male and female created he them. And God blessed them, and God said unto them, **Be fruitful, and multiply, and replenish the earth, and subdue it:** and have dominion over the fish of the sea, and over the fowl of the air, and over every living thing that moveth upon the earth. (Genesis 1:26–28)

The only thing our Father wants us to do is love *everyone* as we love ourselves. Remember the two greatest commandments.

Master, which is the great commandment in the law? Jesus said unto him, Thou shalt love the Lord thy God with all thy heart, and with all thy soul, and with all thy mind. This is the first and great commandment. And the second is like unto it, Thou shalt love thy neighbour as thyself. On these two commandments hang all **the law and the prophets**. (Matthew 22:36–40)

Also let us look at Matthew 7:12, “Therefore all things whatsoever ye would that men should do to you, do ye even so to them: for this is **the law and the prophets**.” As we can hear now, this is the purpose of man and woman. We are here to love everyone. That is not just the people in our realm of the world but everyone, everywhere. Yes, that means people of different races, color, countries, heritages, etc. We all have but one Father, and *we all are the children of God*.

We are not here to judge others in a sense to say that whatever they are doing is wrong. We are not here to condemn anyone to hell. We are not God. We are not here to think less or more of anyone than ourselves. We all are the children of God seeking Him one way or another. To show that this is not just me speaking of my own, let us listen to what our Bibles say. “**Have we not all one father? hath not one God created us? why do we deal treacherously every man against his brother, by profaning the covenant of our fathers?**” (Malachi 2:10). “**Ye do the deeds of your father. Then said they to him, We be not born of fornication; we have one Father, even God**” (John 8:41). Yes, that even means the homeless, the poor, the needy, the ill, the widow, the fatherless, etc. It does not matter what they do, what they look like, what they act like, how they talk, what they do for a living, or what they do not do for a living. It does not matter, we *all* are the children of God. Our Father is the one that wills that there will be poor and needy people here. “**Thou shalt surely give him, and**

thine heart shall not be grieved when thou givest unto him: because that for this thing the Lord thy God shall bless thee in all thy works, and in all that thou puttest thine hand unto. *For the poor shall never cease out of the land: therefore I command thee, saying, Thou shalt open thine hand wide unto thy brother, to thy poor, and to thy needy, in thy land*” (Deuteronomy 15:10–11). “*For ye have the poor always with you; but me ye have not always*” (Matthew 26:11).

Now we all need to think about what our Father has told us when it comes to testing us. Listen to what He tells us in Jeremiah 17:9, “The *heart is deceitful above all things, and desperately wicked: who can know it?*” Our Father will and is testing our hearts daily. “And thou shalt remember all the way which the Lord thy God led thee these forty years in the wilderness, **to humble thee, and to prove thee, to know what was in thine heart,** whether thou wouldest keep his commandments, or no” (Deuteronomy 8:2). “*I the Lord search the heart, I try the reins,* even to give every man according to his ways, and according to the fruit of his doings” (Jeremiah 17:10). **How do we know if each poor and needy person has not been placed in our path so that our Father can test our hearts?**

At this time, we need to be listening to a parable of Jesus showing that we have no idea of knowing what and who God has placed in our paths so that He might be able to test us.

But what think ye? A certain man had two sons; and he came to the first, and said, Son, go work to day in my vineyard. He answered and said, I will not: but afterward he repented, and went. And he came to the second, and said like- wise. And he answered and said, I go, sir: and went not. *Whether of them twain did the will of his father? They say unto him, The first. Jesus saith unto them, Verily I say unto you, That the publicans and the harlots go into the kingdom of God before you.* (Matthew 21:28–31)

Jesus is telling us right here that we have no idea what our Father's will for each and every person living is. And if we think we know what the will of our Father is, we are keeping ourselves out of the kingdom of God.

We judge others and automatically think that if they believe in God in a different way than we think, they need our instructions so that they believe the correct way. And if they do not believe or act the way we think they should, we reject them. Then by doing this, we are spiritually condemning them. That is exactly opposite of what Jesus came into this world to do. The list goes on forever on the many ways we do not do the only thing that our Father commanded of us. **Which is to be fruitful, multiply, and replenish the earth.** Our Father has shown me within our Bibles that we all have different ways, so why are we trying to be gods that know what is right and what is wrong? Or what is good and what is evil? Let God the Father do it. He is the creator of each and every individual person and is the only one that knows if each person is doing what He commands of them. **We do not know and will not know.** Okay, I know that a lot of people are thinking that Jesus made all foods clean, so now we are going to have to look at a couple of things. First thing we need to remember is that Jesus said himself that he did not do or say anything that was not taught to him by our Father.

For I have not spoken of myself; but the Father which sent me, he gave me a commandment, what I should say, and what I should speak. And I know that his commandment is life everlasting: **whatsoever I speak therefore, even as the Father said unto me, so I speak.** (John 12:49–50)

Then we need to look at Mark 7:15–23.

There is nothing from without a man, that entering into him can defile him: but the things which come out of him, those are they that defile the man. If any

JESUS IS HERE

man have ears to hear, let him hear. And when he was entered into the house from the people, his disciples asked him concerning the parable. And he saith unto them, Are ye so without understanding also? Do ye not perceive, that whatsoever thing from without entereth into the man, it cannot defile him; Because it entereth not into his heart, but into the belly, and goeth out into the draught, purging all meats? And he said, That which cometh out of the man, that defileth the man. For from within, out of the heart of men, proceed evil thoughts, adulteries, fornications, murders, Thefts, covetousness, wickedness, deceit, lasciviousness, an evil eye, blasphemy, pride, foolishness: All these evil things come from within, and defile the man.

This is an old fight, and I am not here to fight or judge. I am just sharing knowledge our Father has shown me. The only thing Jesus is saying here is that it does not matter what we eat, rather it is the feelings we have for our Father and others is what our spiritual Father looks for. It is not about food. As noted above, we should all be understanding that the unclean things are not food for us. But because we eat of the forbidden fruit, as man calls it, we judge, condemn, and think of ourselves before others. We tend to think we deserve to be treated better than others. We don't realize that we are in hell and deserve eternal damnation. But because we hold ourselves higher than others, and instead of being thankful for all things, we put others down in which are all ways that defile us.

Now let us go back to the beginning of Leviticus 11:1–2, “And the Lord spake unto Moses and to Aaron, saying unto them, Speak unto the children of Israel, saying, **These are the beasts which ye shall eat among all the beasts that are on the earth.**” I will not post the whole chapter again, but we need to be listening to what our Father is saying. He never said the unclean is food for us. If He didn't declare it as clean, He did *not* declare it as food. So now when someone approaches you and tells you that Jesus declared all foods to be clean,

tell them they are right, but the unclean animals that our Father has listed for us were *never* declared as food. They have another purpose on this earth. Some of these things that are *not* food consist of swine or pork, catfish, lobster, cat, dogs, lions, tigers, eagles, vultures, etc. Each person is responsible for considering this for themselves. The list is quite long, so I will not list all things that are food and are not food.

Now we need to be listening to a couple of different times that our Father has told us about eating swine, or better known as pork.

I am sought of them that asked not for me; I am found of them that sought me not: I said, Behold me, behold me, unto a nation that was not called by my name. **I have spread out my hands all the day unto a rebellious people, which walketh in a way that was not good, after their own thoughts; A people that provoketh me to anger continually to my face; that sacrificeth in gardens, and burneth incense upon altars of brick; Which remain among the graves, and lodge in the monuments, which eat swine's flesh, and broth of abominable things is in their vessels; Which say, Stand by thy- self, come not near to me; for I am holier than thou. These are a smoke in my nose, a fire that burneth all the day.** Behold, it is written before me: I will not keep silence, but will recompense, even recompense into their bosom, Your iniquities, and the iniquities of your fathers together, saith the Lord, which have burned incense upon the mountains, and blasphemed me upon the hills: therefore will I measure their former work into their bosom. (Isaiah 65:1-7)

When we listen to what we are being told here, we can hear that when we choose to eat of swine or pork, it makes us think of our ourselves as holier than our Father. So, at this time we need to listen to what is being said in Isaiah 14:12-14, "How art thou fallen from heaven, O Lucifer, son of the morning! how art thou cut down to the ground,

which didst weaken the nations! **For thou hast said in thine heart, I will ascend into heaven, I will exalt my throne above the stars of God: I will sit also upon the mount of the congregation, in the sides of the north: I will ascend above the heights of the clouds; I will be like the most High.**” This is what we are doing when we think we know what our Father wants for any person other than ourselves.

I realize that this is mentioning swine and not the other things that are unclean to us, but we can be sure that it is the same tree of life as our Bibles tells us. We can hear this when we listen to what is being said in Isaiah 66:16–18, “For by fire and by his sword will the Lord plead with all flesh: and the slain of the Lord shall be many. **They that sanctify themselves, and purify themselves in the gardens behind one tree in the midst, eating swine’s flesh, and the abomination, and the mouse, shall be consumed together, saith the Lord.** For I know their works and their thoughts: it shall come, that I will gather all nations and tongues; and they shall come, and see my glory.” If we are listening, right here we are being told that this is the tree in the midst of the garden. To confirm, we need to go back to Genesis 3:1–3, “Now the serpent was more subtil than any beast of the field which the Lord God had made. And he said unto the woman, Yea, hath God said, Ye shall not eat of every tree of the garden? And the woman said unto the serpent, We may eat of the fruit of the trees of the garden: **But of the fruit of the tree which is in the midst of the garden,** God hath said, Ye shall not eat of it, neither shall ye touch it, lest ye die.”

This tree is a spiritual tree of life and not an actual tree. It is not an actual fruit, for our Father commanded that every green herb is good to eat, as we are told in Genesis 1:29–30, “And God said, Behold, I have given you every herb bearing seed, which is upon the face of all the earth, and every tree, in the which is the fruit of a tree yielding seed; to you it shall be for meat. And to every beast of the earth, and to every fowl of the air, and to every thing that creepeth upon the earth, wherein there is life, I have given every green herb for meat: and it was so.”

Remember we need to be worshipping our Father in spirit. **“But the hour cometh, and now is, when the true worshippers shall**

worship the Father in spirit and in truth: for the Father seeketh such to worship him. God is a Spirit: and they that worship him must worship him in spirit and in truth” (John 4:23–24). Then we need to remember that our Father does not change and will never change, as shown in Malachi 3:6, **“For I am the Lord, I change not; therefore ye sons of Jacob are not consumed.”** To think that our Father has changed anything makes Him a liar, which would obviously provoke Him to anger, for our Father has not ever lied nor will He ever lie. **“God is not a man, that he should lie; neither the son of man, that he should repent: hath he said, and shall he not do it? or hath he spoken, and shall he not make it good?”** (Number 23:19).

Now that we have gone over what the forbidden fruit is, there are a couple of things we need to keep in mind. If your conscience tells you not to eat of the unclean things, then do not. If you see others still eating it, do not condemn them or tell them that they cannot do that. We are to work our own salvation, and no one else’s. **“Wherefore, my beloved, as ye have always obeyed, not as in my presence only, but now much more in my absence, work out your own salvation with fear and trembling.”**

We are not here to make others do as we do, but rather, we are here to be examples for them. And then, if their conscience tells them to stop eating the unclean, then they will be judged by how they react. You will not be judged for someone else eating the forbidden fruit, but you will be judged if you condemn them. Remember, some people are assigned to be disobedient. **“And a stone of stumbling, and a rock of offence, even to them which stumble at the word, being disobedient: whereunto also they were appointed”** (1 Peter 2:8). It is like an undercover policeman. He has to break a little of the law in order to catch the bad guys or something. At the same time, he is doing right by his boss.

Then I want you to look at one more area on this topic of not condemning others for the eating of the unclean. Let us listen to something else.

JESUS IS HERE

Him that is weak in the faith receive ye, but not to doubtful disputations. For one believeth that he may eat all things: another, who is weak, eateth herbs. Let not him that eateth despise him that eateth not; and let not him which eateth not judge him that eateth: for God hath received him. Who art thou that judgest another man's servant? to his own master he standeth or falleth. Yea, he shall be holden up: for God is able to make him stand. One man esteemeth one day above another: another esteemeth every day alike. Let every man be fully persuaded in his own mind. He that regardeth the day, regardeth it unto the Lord; and he that regardeth not the day, to the Lord he doth not regard it. He that eateth, eateth to the Lord, for he giveth God thanks; and he that eateth not, to the Lord he eateth not, and giveth God thanks. For none of us liveth to himself, and no man dieth to himself. For whether we live, we live unto the Lord; and whether we die, we die unto the Lord: whether we live therefore, or die, we are the Lord's. For to this end Christ both died, and rose, and revived, that he might be Lord both of the dead and living. But why dost thou judge thy brother? or why dost thou set at nought thy brother? for we shall all stand before the judgment seat of Christ. For it is written, As I live, saith the Lord, every knee shall bow to me, and every tongue shall confess to God. So then every one of us shall give account of himself to God. Let us not therefore judge one another any more: but judge this rather, that no man put a stumblingblock or an occasion to fall in his brother's way. I know, and am persuaded by the Lord Jesus, that there is nothing unclean of itself: but to him that esteemeth any thing to be unclean, to him it is unclean. But if thy brother be grieved with thy meat, now walkest thou not

charitably. Destroy not him with thy meat, for whom Christ died. Let not then your good be evil spoken of: For the kingdom of God is not meat and drink; but righteousness, and peace, and joy in the Holy Ghost. For he that in these things serveth Christ is acceptable to God, and approved of men. Let us therefore follow after the things which make for peace, and things where- with one may edify another. For meat destroy not the work of God. All things indeed are pure; but it is evil for that man who eateth with offence. It is good neither to eat flesh, nor to drink wine, nor any thing whereby thy brother stumbleth, or is offended, or is made weak. Hast thou faith? have it to thyself before God. Happy is he that condemneth not himself in that thing which he alloweth. And he that doubteth is damned if he eat, because he eateth not of faith: for whatsoever is not of faith is sin. (Romans 14:1–23)

When you decide to listen to what is unclean, do not do so that others can see of your works. Do not do it, because you feel that if you do, you will be doing right or be justified. Choose to do so to honor our Father. Just listen to what we are being told.

A son honoureth his father, and a servant his mas- ter: **if then I be a father, where is mine honour? and if I be a master, where is my fear?** saith the Lord of hosts unto you, O priests, that despise my name. And ye say, Wherein have we despised thy name? (Malachi 1:6)

I showed you all in the chapter “Believing” that I would rather die than eat the unclean things now. This is one sure way of me hon- oring my Father and not man.

THE THOUSAND-YEAR REIGN



We are going to be looking at a few spots in our Bibles so we can hear that we are living in the reign with Christ now. Now as we showed in the last book, this is all a spiritual workings and not a physical workings. Excuse me for saying it this way, but if we know that God is spirit, then we should already be thinking that this is a spiritual workings. **“But the hour cometh, and now is, when the true worshippers shall worship the Father in spirit and in truth: for the Father seeketh such to worship him. God is a Spirit: and they that worship him must worship him in spirit and in truth”** (John 4:23–24).

I know there are many that believe that a thousand-year reign with Christ is something that is coming after the world ends. Many believe this because of the way our Bible is formatted. Many people think that we must start at the beginning of the Bible and just chronologically go through it, and the world ends in Revelation. But we need to remember what our Father tells us in Isaiah 46:10, **“Declaring the end from the beginning, and from ancient times the things that are not yet done, saying, My counsel shall stand, and I will do all my pleasure.”** By our Father telling us right here, we can be certain that the Bible is not in chronological order.

If you remember, in the last book, we showed that when we read or listen to the Bible, it is like we are lifting ourselves up and listening to the conversations going on in heaven. Let us listen to a few areas in which we are told to hear what is being said from heaven. Let us look at the second half of 2 Chronicles 6:21.

Hearken therefore unto the supplications of thy servant, and of thy people Israel, which they shall make toward this place: hear thou from thy dwelling place, even from heaven; and when thou hearest, forgive. If a man sin against his neighbour, and an oath be laid upon him to make him swear, and the oath come before thine altar in this house; **Then hear thou from heaven, and do, and judge thy servants**, by requiting the wicked, by recompensing his way upon his own head; and by justifying the righteous, **by giving him according to his righteousness**. And if thy people Israel be put to the worse before the enemy, because they have sinned against thee; and shall return and confess thy name, and pray and make supplication before thee in this house; **Then hear thou from the heavens**, and forgive the sin of thy people Israel, **and bring them again unto the land which thou gavest to them and to their fathers**. When the heaven is shut up, and there is no rain, because they have sinned against thee; yet if they pray toward this place, and confess thy name, and turn from their sin, when thou dost afflict them; **Then hear thou from heaven, and forgive the sin of thy servants**, and of thy people Israel, when thou hast taught them the good way, wherein they should walk; and send rain upon thy land, which thou hast given unto thy people for an inheritance. If there be dearth in the land, if there be pestilence, if there be blasting, or mildew, locusts, or caterpillars; if their enemies besiege them in the cities of their land; whatsoever sore or whatsoever sickness there be: Then what prayer or what supplication soever shall be made of any man, or of all thy people Israel, when every one shall know his own sore and his own grief, and shall spread forth his hands in this house: **Then hear thou from heaven thy dwelling place,**

and forgive, and render unto every man according unto all his ways, whose heart thou knowest; (for thou only knowest the hearts of the children of men:) That they may fear thee, to walk in thy ways, so long as they live in the land which thou gavest unto our fathers. Moreover concerning the stranger, which is not of thy people Israel, but is come from a far country for thy great name's sake, and thy mighty hand, and thy stretched out arm; if they come and pray in this house; **Then hear thou from the heavens**, even from thy dwelling place, and do according to all that the stranger calleth to thee for; that all people of the earth may know thy name, and fear thee, as doth thy people Israel, and may know that this house which I have built is called by thy name. If thy people go out to war against their enemies by the way that thou shalt send them, and they pray unto thee toward this city which thou hast chosen, **and the house which I have built for thy name; Then hear thou from the heavens** their prayer and their supplication, and maintain their cause. If they sin against thee, (for there is no man which sinneth not,) and thou be angry with them, and deliver them over before their enemies, and they carry them away captives unto a land far off or near; Yet if they bethink themselves in the land whither they are carried captive, and turn and pray unto thee in the land of their captivity, saying, We have sinned, we have done amiss, and have dealt wickedly; If they return to thee with all their heart and with all their soul in the land of their captivity, whither they have carried them captives, and pray toward their land, which thou gavest unto their fathers, and toward the city which thou hast chosen, and toward the house which I have built for thy name: **Then hear thou from the heavens**, even from thy dwelling place,

DAVID JENKINS

their prayer and their supplications, and maintain their cause, and forgive thy people which have sinned against thee. Now, my God, let, I beseech thee, thine eyes be open, and let thine ears be attent unto the prayer that is made in this place. Now therefore arise, O Lord God, into thy resting place, thou, and the ark of thy strength: let thy priests, O Lord God, be clothed with salvation, and let thy saints rejoice in goodness. O Lord God turn not away the face of thine anointed: remember the mercies of David thy servant. (2 Chronicles 6:21–42)

Just to make a quick sidenote here. Let us listen to Genesis 1:26, “And God said, Let us make man in our image, after our likeness: and let them have dominion over the fish of the sea, and over the fowl of the air, and over the cattle, and over all the earth, and over every creeping thing that creepeth upon the earth.” Who is *us*? He is talking to those in heaven and not man. He is showing us right here in the very beginning that we are hearing what is being said in heaven throughout the entire Bible. Let us look at to when our Father created the sun, moon, and stars.

And God said, Let there be lights in the firmament of the heaven to divide the day from the night; and let them be for signs, and for seasons, and for days, and years: And let them be for lights in the firmament of the heaven to give light upon the earth: and it was so. And God made two great lights; the greater light to rule the day, and the lesser light to rule the night: he made the stars also. And God set them in the firmament of the heaven to give light upon the earth, And to rule over the day and over the night, and to divide the light from the darkness: and God saw that it was good. And the evening and the morning were the fourth day. (Genesis 1:14–19)

JESUS IS HERE

This is on the fourth day of creation. Man wasn't created until the sixth day. So, once again, our Father is telling us right here that these are for signs, seasons, days, and years to the angels and spirits that are going to be creating man in their own image on the sixth day.

So, what we want to do now is just show a few spots in our Bible that we can hear our Father say in that day. Remember a day is as a thousand years and thousand years is as a day. "But, beloved, be not ignorant of this one thing, that one day is with the Lord as a thousand years, and a thousand years as one day" (2 Peter 3:8). Have you ever heard someone say something like "Back in the day, when I was growing up, we didn't have that"? Or "Back in the day, things didn't cost so much"? Or "Back in the day, things were built to last, but now not so much"? Is this person talking about one day, or are they talking about a time that covers several days or even years? Well, it is the same thing going on in the Bible. Our Father is not talking just one day, but rather He is talking about a span of time being counted as one day. So now let us listen to a few times we can hear this. Try to keep in mind as you read through this that this day, being a thousand years, is the day of judgment.

And the Lord said unto Moses, Behold, thou shalt sleep with thy fathers; and this people will rise up, and go a whoring after the gods of the strangers of the land, whither they go to be among them, and will forsake me, and break my covenant which I have made with them. **Then my anger shall be kindled against them in that day,** and I will forsake them, and I will hide my face from them, and they shall be devoured, and many evils and troubles shall befall them; so that they will say in that day, Are not these evils come upon us, because our God is not among us? **And I will surely hide my face in that day for all the evils which they shall have wrought, in that they are turned unto other gods.** (Deuteronomy 31:16-18)

And it came to pass, when Samuel was old, that he made his sons judges over Israel. Now the name of his firstborn was Joel; and the name of his second, Abiah: they were judges in Beersheba. And his sons walked not in his ways, but turned aside after lucre, and took bribes, and perverted judgment. Then all the elders of Israel gathered themselves together, and came to Samuel unto Ramah, And said unto him, Behold, thou art old, and thy sons walk not in thy ways: now make us a king to judge us like all the nations. But the thing displeased Samuel, when they said, Give us a king to judge us. And Samuel prayed unto the Lord. And the Lord said unto Samuel, Hearken unto the voice of the people in all that they say unto thee: for they have not rejected thee, but they have rejected me, that I should not reign over them. According to all the works which they have done since the day that I brought them up out of Egypt even unto this day, wherewith they have forsaken me, and served other gods, so do they also unto thee. Now therefore hearken unto their voice: howbeit yet protest solemnly unto them, and shew them the manner of the king that shall reign over them. And Samuel told all the words of the Lord unto the people that asked of him a king. And he said, This will be the manner of the king that shall reign over you: He will take your sons, and appoint them for himself, for his chariots, and to be his horsemen; and some shall run before his chariots. And he will appoint him captains over thousands, and captains over fifties; and will set them to ear his ground, and to reap his harvest, and to make his instruments of war, and instruments of his chariots. And he will take your daughters to be confectionaries, and to be cooks, and to be bakers. And he will take your fields, and your vineyards, and your oliveyards,

JESUS IS HERE

even the best of them, and give them to his servants. And he will take the tenth of your seed, and of your vineyards, and give to his officers, and to his servants. And he will take your men- servants, and your maidservants, and your good- liest young men, and your asses, and put them to his work. He will take the tenth of your sheep: and ye shall be his servants. **And ye shall cry out in that day because of your king which ye shall have chosen you; and the Lord will not hear you in that day.** (1 Samuel 8:1–18)

Woe unto them that decree unrighteous decrees, and that write grievousness which they have prescribed; To turn aside the needy from judgment, and to take away the right from the poor of my people, that widows may be their prey, and that they may rob the fatherless! **And what will ye do in the day of visitation,** and in the desolation which shall come from far? to whom will ye flee for help? and where will ye leave your glory? Without me they shall bow down under the prisoners, and they shall fall under the slain. For all this his anger is not turned away, but his hand is stretched out still. O Assyrian, the rod of mine anger, and the staff in their hand is mine indignation. I will send him against an hypocritical nation, and against the people of my wrath will I give him a charge, to take the spoil, and to take the prey, and to tread them down like the mire of the streets. Howbeit he meaneth not so, neither doth his heart think so; but it is in his heart to destroy and cut off nations not a few. For he saith, Are not my princes altogether kings? Is not Calno as Carchemish? is not Hamath as Arpad? is not Samaria as Damascus? As my hand hath found the kingdoms of the idols, and whose graven images did excel them of Jerusalem and of

Samaria; Shall I not, as I have done unto Samaria and her idols, so do to Jerusalem and her idols? Wherefore it shall come to pass, that when the Lord hath performed his whole work upon mount Zion and on Jerusalem, I will punish the fruit of the stout heart of the king of Assyria, and the glory of his high looks. For he saith, By the strength of my hand I have done it, and by my wisdom; for I am prudent: and I have removed the bounds of the people, and have robbed their treasures, and I have put down the inhabitants like a valiant man: And my hand hath found as a nest the riches of the people: and as one gathereth eggs that are left, have I gathered all the earth; and there was none that moved the wing, or opened the mouth, or peeped. Shall the axe boast itself against him that heweth therewith? or shall the saw magnify itself against him that shaketh it? as if the rod should shake itself against them that lift it up, or as if the staff should lift up itself, as if it were no wood. Therefore shall the Lord, the Lord of hosts, send among his fat ones leanness; and under his glory he shall kindle a burning like the burning of a fire. And the light of Israel shall be for a fire, and his Holy One for a flame: and it shall burn and devour his thorns and his briers in one day; And shall consume the glory of his forest, and of his fruitful field, both soul and body: and they shall be as when a standard-bearer fainteth. And the rest of the trees of his forest shall be few, that a child may write them. And it shall come to pass in that day, that the remnant of Israel, and such as are escaped of the house of Jacob, shall no more again stay upon him that smote them; but shall stay upon the Lord, the Holy One of Israel, in truth. (Isaiah 10:1–20)

JESUS IS HERE

And there shall come forth a rod out of the stem of Jesse, and a Branch shall grow out of his roots: 2 And the spirit of the Lord shall rest upon him, the spirit of wisdom and understanding, the spirit of counsel and might, the spirit of knowledge and of the fear of the Lord; 3 And shall make him of quick understanding in the fear of the Lord: and he shall not judge after the sight of his eyes, neither reprove after the hearing of his ears: 4 But with righteousness shall he judge the poor, and reprove with equity for the meek of the earth: and he shall smite the earth: with the rod of his mouth, and with the breath of his lips shall he slay the wicked. 5 And righteousness shall be the girdle of his loins, and faithfulness the girdle of his reins. 6 **The wolf also shall dwell with the lamb, and the leopard shall lie down with the kid; and the calf and the young lion and the fatling together; and a little child shall lead them. 7 And the cow and the bear shall feed; their young ones shall lie down together: and the lion shall eat straw like the ox.** 8 And the sucking child shall play on the hole of the asp, and the weaned child shall put his hand on the cockatrice' den. 9 They shall not hurt nor destroy in all my holy mountain: for the earth shall be full of the knowledge of the Lord, as the waters cover the sea. 10 **And in that day there shall be a root of Jesse,** which shall stand for an ensign of the people; to it shall the Gentiles seek: and his rest shall be glorious. 11 **And it shall come to pass in that day, that the Lord shall set his hand again the second time to recover the remnant of his people,** which shall be left, from Assyria, and from Egypt, and from Pathros, and from Cush, and from Elam, and from Shinar, and from Hamath, and from the islands of the sea. 12 And he shall set up an ensign for the nations, and shall

assemble the outcasts of Israel, and gather together the dispersed of Judah from the four corners of the earth. (Isaiah 11:1–12)

This verse 11 automatically reminds me of John 12:28, “Father, glorify thy name. **Then came there a voice from heaven, saying, I have both glorified it, and will glorify it again.**” We are being told right here that Jesus has already been glorified once before. This is in the book of Isaiah, but yet so many people feel that Jesus died on the cross, and we are now in the New Testament. As we showed in the last book, Jesus is why we are here now, and that includes all countries of the earth. This also brings to mind of the two witnesses.

And there was given me a reed like unto a rod: and the angel stood, saying, Rise, and measure the temple of God, and the altar, and them that worship therein. But the court which is without the temple leave out, and measure it not; for it is given unto the Gentiles: and the holy city shall they tread under foot forty and two months. And I will give power unto my two witnesses, and they shall prophesy a thousand two hundred and threescore days, clothed in sackcloth. These are the two olive trees, and the two candlesticks standing before the God of the earth. And if any man will hurt them, fire proceedeth out of their mouth, and devoureth their enemies: and if any man will hurt them, he must in this manner be killed. These have power to shut heaven, that it rain not in the days of their prophecy: and have power over waters to turn them to blood, and to smite the earth with all plagues, as often as they will. And when they shall have finished their testimony, the beast that ascendeth out of the bottomless pit shall make war against them, and shall overcome them, and kill them. And their dead bodies shall lie in the street of the great city,

JESUS IS HERE

which spiritually is called Sodom and Egypt, where also our Lord was crucified. And they of the people and kindreds and tongues and nations shall see their dead bodies three days and an half, and shall not suffer their dead bodies to be put in graves. And they that dwell upon the earth shall rejoice over them, and make merry, and shall send gifts one to another; because these two prophets tormented them that dwelt on the earth. And after three days and an half the spirit of life from God entered into them, and they stood upon their feet; and great fear fell upon them which saw them. And they heard a great voice from heaven saying unto them, Come up hither. And they ascended up to heaven in a cloud; and their enemies beheld them. And the same hour was there a great earthquake, and the tenth part of the city fell, and in the earthquake were slain of men seven thousand: and the remnant were affrighted, and gave glory to the God of heaven. The second woe is past; and, behold, the third woe cometh quickly. (Revelation 11:1–14)

Notice how God did not say that these two witnesses will be together, but rather He will give them power to prophecy a thousand two hundred and threescore days. We can hear our Father say that He will glorify His son the second time. Remember a day is as a thousand years and a thousand years is as a day. We have been hearing that we are in Egypt now. Notice how these bodies didn't get buried. The last time Jesus was here, he was doing the same thing as I am. Then when the beast arose and killed him, this world rejoiced, for they could do as they please and not have someone doing the same thing I am doing now. Then just over three and a half years ago was when our Father baptized me with the Holy Ghost. This fire that comes out of my mouth is not an actual fire, but when you all read these books, it is going to burn. Yes, I do believe that I am the second witness, so I

will let you all do the rest of the math, for those that just do not want to love in the same manner as our Father.

We could use several areas to show this, but we do not want to make this chapter that long, for there are many areas to cover. Can you hear how our Father is using a space of time and calling it that day? And remember, our Father is not just talking to us, but rather He is talking with gods, kings, and lords that have dominion over our bodies. As you can hear from above, God said we have gone a whoring after other gods. I know many do not realize that there are many gods in which we use today. **“For though there be that are called gods, whether in heaven or in earth, (as there be gods many, and lords many,)”** (1 Corinthians 8:5). As we showed in the last book, it is impossible not to have other gods; however, we must put our Father first, as the first commandment tells us. Notice how these kings and such were commanded to lead us to different areas? This is what we mean when we say they have dominion over us.

Because we just heard our Father say “if they will pray toward this house,” we need to cover a couple of things here. We need to remember that the laws, rules, judgments, testimonies, and commandments are for spirits, kings, lords, Satan, or the son of perdition, and even Jesus in the last book. Remember that we are the house of God, as shown in the last book. We are the temple of God. God does not dwell in a building made with hands. **“Know ye not that ye are the temple of God, and that the Spirit of God dwelleth in you?”** (1 Corinthians 3:16). **“Howbeit the most High dwelleth not in temples made with hands; as saith the prophet”** (Acts 7:48). Now we are going to listen to when the house of God was being built in the Old Testament. We will not show all the details; however, we will just show 1 Chronicles 28:26, “And he said unto me, Solomon thy son, **he shall build my house and my courts:** for I have chosen him to be my son, and I will be his father.” “And it came to pass in the four hundred and eightieth year after the children of Israel were come out of the land of Egypt, in the fourth year of Solomon’s reign over Israel, in the month Zif, which is the second month, that he began to build the house of the Lord. **And the house which king Solomon built for the Lord, the length**

thereof was threescore cubits, and the breadth thereof twenty cubits, and the height thereof thirty cubits” (1 Kings 6:1–2). But then listen to what we are being told in 1 Kings 8:27, “**But will God indeed dwell on the earth? behold, the heaven and heaven of heavens cannot contain thee; how much less this house that I have builded?**” And then again in 2 Chronicles 2:5–6, “**And the house which I build is great: for great is our God above all gods. But who is able to build him an house, seeing the heaven and heaven of heavens cannot contain him?** who am I then, that I should build him an house, save only to burn sacrifice before him?” Now without showing all the details of the building of this house, we should be realizing that we are hearing how the human body was made. Remember man cannot figure out how to make a human body that functions in the way that it does. They can make electric people, but man cannot duplicate the body.

Now in the process of building the house of God, there were tables set up. These table were placed on our hearts. “Let their table become a snare before them: and that which should have been for their welfare, let it become a trap” (Psalm 69:22). “Let not mercy and truth forsake thee: bind them about thy neck; **write them upon the table of thine heart**” (Proverbs 3:3). “The sin of Judah is written with a pen of iron, and with the point of a diamond: **it is graven upon the table of their heart, and upon the horns of your altars**” (Jeremiah 17:1). “Forasmuch as ye are manifestly declared to be the epistle of Christ ministered by us, written not with ink, but with the Spirit of the living God; **not in tables of stone, but in fleshy tables of the heart**” (2 Corinthians 3:3). This is what we were showing in the last book; when Jesus comes into our own personal temple of God, he flips these tables so that we do not desire the merchandise of the money exchangers. We know that we are the temple of God, right? “**Know ye not that ye are the temple of God, and that the Spirit of God dwelleth in you?**” (1 Corinthians 3:16). Now listen to when Jesus flipped the tables. “**And Jesus went into the temple of God**, and cast out all them that sold and bought in the temple, and overthrew the tables of the moneychangers, and the seats of them that sold doves, And said unto

them, **It is written, My house shall be called the house of prayer; but ye have made it a den of thieves**" (Matthew 21:12–13). If you still feel you need to have more than just basic essentials to survive, your table has not been flipped. That is how most people do serve graven images and other gods. Our Father told us not to make anything in the image or the likeness of anything in the heavens, earth, or under the earth. **"Thou shalt not make unto thee any graven image, or any likeness of any thing that is in heaven above, or that is in the earth beneath, or that is in the water under the earth. Thou shalt not bow down thyself to them, nor serve them: for I the Lord thy God am a jealous God, visiting the iniquity of the fathers upon the children unto the third and fourth generation of them that hate me; And shewing mercy unto thousands of them that love me, and keep my commandments"** (Exodus 20:4–6). Now I have talked with people that say they do not bow to these artifacts. Did our Father tell you to have them? *No*, he said do not, so which god or spirit are you listening to? You are serving something other than our Father when you have more than you need. "And having food and raiment let us be therewith content" (1 Timothy 6:8). So instead of allowing your house of God to be a house of prayer, you ignore what He said and continue to buy and want things that can and will be destroyed. They do not help you or anyone else survive in this world. That is how you make the house of God a den of thieves. By the way, this is also another way that most defile the temple of God. "If any man defile the temple of God, him shall God destroy; for the temple of God is holy, which temple ye are" (1 Corinthians 3:17). If you are the house of God, and the house of God is a house of payers, do not you defile this house when you ignore Him and don't give Him the attention that He deserves?

If you can hear it, we have altars inside of us also. Remember what altars are for? **"An altar of earth thou shalt make unto me, and shalt sacrifice thereon thy burnt offerings, and thy peace offerings, thy sheep, and thine oxen: in all places where I record my name I will come unto thee, and I will bless thee"** (Exodus 20:25). **"And there shalt thou build an altar unto the Lord thy God, an altar of stones: thou shalt not lift up any iron tool upon them. Thou shalt build**

the altar of the Lord thy God of whole stones: and thou shalt offer burnt offerings thereon unto the Lord thy God” (Deuteronomy 27:5–6). Remember how the sacrifices in which God enjoys are of a broken spirit? **“For thou desirest not sacrifice; else would I give it: thou delightest not in burnt offering. The sacrifices of God are a broken spirit: a broken and a contrite heart, O God, thou wilt not despise”** (Psalm 51:16–17). We showed in the last book that our Father never commanded man to sacrifice animals. That was for those in heaven that have dominion over our bodies. Now we need to listen to how Jesus said everyone must be salted with fire. **“For every one shall be salted with fire, and every sacrifice shall be salted with salt. Salt is good: but if the salt have lost his saltness, wherewith will ye season it? Have salt in yourselves, and have peace one with another”** (Mark 9:49–50). Then remember he said he didn’t come to bring peace? **“Think not that I am come to send peace on earth: I came not to send peace, but a sword”** (Matthew 10:34).

These sacrifices in which we are to make are actually upsetting somebody somehow. Let me use a real-life example. I know this woman that has been having marital problems for quite a while now. She has a daughter who just turned eighteen a few weeks ago. She is now looking for a place so that she can move out. They get along great; however, it is breaking the mom’s heart. There is that sacrifice. She is moving out even though it is breaking her mom’s heart. So, her mom is having her spirit broken. So now let me ask you this: what does salt do when you put it on an open wound? Oh, we all know it burns. There is that burnt sacrifice in which our Father is wanting, trying, and hoping will get her mom to turn back to Him. That is what He is trying to do with everybody. Now if there is someone that is always trying to please others and never offend, then their salt has lost its flavor.

Okay, we are going to look at another area of the Bible but will not show all that is involved, for that would require a lot of scriptures to be shown. We will only show the areas that get to the point of what we are showing. We are going to be looking at how Joseph’s brothers sold him into slavery and how that turned out for Joseph.

Come now therefore, and let us slay him, and cast him into some pit, and we will say, Some evil beast hath devoured him: and we shall see what will become of his dreams. And Reuben heard it, and he delivered him out of their hands; and said, Let us not kill him. And Reuben said unto them, Shed no blood, but cast him into this pit that is in the wilderness, and lay no hand upon him; that he might rid him out of their hands, to deliver him to his father again. And it came to pass, when Joseph was come unto his brethren, that they stript Joseph out of his coat, his coat of many colours that was on him; And they took him, and cast him into a pit: and the pit was empty, there was no water in it. And they sat down to eat bread: and they lifted up their eyes and looked, and, behold, a company of Ishmeelites came from Gilead with their camels bearing spicery and balm and myrrh, going to carry it down to Egypt. And Judah said unto his brethren, What profit is it if we slay our brother, and conceal his blood? Come, and let us sell him to the Ishmeelites, and let not our hand be upon him; for he is our brother and our flesh. And his brethren were content. Then there passed by Midianites merchantmen; and they drew and lifted up Joseph out of the pit, and sold Joseph to the Ishmeelites for twenty pieces of silver: and they brought Joseph into Egypt. And Reuben returned unto the pit; and, behold, Joseph was not in the pit; and he rent his clothes. And he returned unto his brethren, and said, The child is not; and I, whither shall I go? And they took Joseph's coat, and killed a kid of the goats, and dipped the coat in the blood; And they sent the coat of many colours, and they brought it to their father; and said, This have we found: know now whether it be thy son's coat or no. And he knew it, and said, It is my son's coat; an evil beast hath

JESUS IS HERE

devoured him; Joseph is without doubt rent in pieces. And Jacob rent his clothes, and put sackcloth upon his loins, and mourned for his son many days. And all his sons and all his daughters rose up to comfort him; but he refused to be comforted; and he said, For I will go down into the grave unto my son mourning. Thus his father wept for him. And the Midianites sold him into Egypt unto Potiphar, an officer of Pharaoh's, and captain of the guard. (Genesis 37:20–36)

Okay, we just listened to the area in which his brother had sold him, but now we are going to skip several years on Joseph's life so that we can hear how things turned out for him.

Then Joseph could not refrain himself before all them that stood by him; and he cried, Cause every man to go out from me. And there stood no man with him, while Joseph made himself known unto his brethren. And he wept aloud: and the Egyptians and the house of Pharaoh heard. And Joseph said unto his brethren, I am Joseph; doth my father yet live? And his brethren could not answer him; for they were troubled at his presence. And Joseph said unto his brethren, Come near to me, I pray you. And they came near. And he said, I am Joseph your brother, whom ye sold into Egypt. **Now therefore be not grieved, nor angry with yourselves, that ye sold me hither: for God did send me before you to preserve life. For these two years hath the famine been in the land: and yet there are five years, in the which there shall neither be earing nor harvest. And God sent me before you to preserve you a posterity in the earth, and to save your lives by a great deliverance. So now it was not you that sent me hither, but God: and he hath made me a father to Pharaoh, and lord of all his house, and**

a ruler throughout all the land of Egypt. Haste ye, and go up to my father, and say unto him, Thus saith thy son Joseph, God hath made me lord of all Egypt: come down unto me, tarry not. (Genesis 45:1-9)

Can you hear how Joseph's brothers were salted with this fire? Do you think Joseph though it was a good thing happening when his brothers sold him? Notice how Joseph, throughout his tribulations, kept believing in our Father and not some other god. Do you hear how Joseph knew that it was actually God our Father who caused everything to happen the way that it did? Do you hear what our Father did for Joseph because of Joseph not losing his faith?

Now we mentioned in the last book that I keep hearing things like in Psalm 104:2, "Who coverest thyself with light as with a garment: **who stretchest out the heavens like a curtain.**" "It is he that sitteth upon the circle of the earth, and the inhabitants thereof are as grasshoppers; **that stretcheth out the heavens as a curtain, and spreadeth them out as a tent to dwell in**" (Isaiah 40:22). So now let us listen to just a couple of spots as to when they were commanded to make the curtains. "**Moreover thou shalt make the tabernacle with ten curtains of fine twined linen, and blue, and purple, and scarlet: with cherubims of cunning work shalt thou make them. The length of one curtain shall be eight and twenty cubits, and the breadth of one curtain four cubits: and every one of the curtains shall have one measure**" (Exodus 26:1-2). "**And every wise hearted man among them that wrought the work of the tabernacle made ten curtains of fine twined linen, and blue, and purple, and scarlet: with cherubims of cunning work made he them**" (Exodus 36:8). These are commandments for the spirits, kings, lords, and men in heaven. We can know that there are men in heaven and in earth. No, no man on earth has been to heaven, as we can know by listening to John 3:13, "**And no man hath ascended up to heaven, but he that came down from heaven, even the Son of man which is in heaven.**" We can know this when we listen to Revelation 5:3, "**And no man in heaven, nor in earth, neither under the earth,** was able to open

the book, neither to look thereon.” There is a lot of things that we will not understand until the end. Yes, our Father is showing me a lot, and I am showing you all a lot, but we will never (in the flesh) know everything about God the Father. This is the time of the end; however, it is not the end.

These curtains are our sky. We will not show all the details, but one can only imagine that most of the instructions and such in the books of Moses and the prophets are for those that were to build man, earth, and things in the heavens. Remember that a day is as a thousand years and a thousand years is as a day. When we read the Bible, we normally do not think about how much time it took to make these curtains or make the house of God. This is why we are told the law is a shadow of things to come. **“For the law having a shadow of good things to come,** and not the very image of the things, can never with those sacrifices which they offered year by year continually make the comers thereunto perfect” (Hebrews 10:1). This is what it will be for some after the end of this world. We can know this by listening to Matthew 12:32, “And whosoever speaketh a word against the Son of man, it shall be forgiven him: but whosoever speaketh against the Holy Ghost, it shall not be forgiven him, **neither in this world, neither in the world to come.**”

We could go in depth trying to understand how all the measurements and such could line up with the human body or try to figure out how maybe things could line up with how the sky was made. Without having to post several books of the Bible, let us just think of how perfectly everything grows. How does the human body pump blood to every part of the body at the precise time in which the body needs? How do the nerves work throughout the entire body? Yes, doctors can show things on charts and such, but they cannot duplicate it. The same thing goes for animals of all sorts. Now just think about how the trees grow as they do. How food grows from the ground. We can now realize that when we listen to the Bible, we can be certain that this is why man cannot understand it. Use my life for an example. I am a truck driver and have been for quite some while.

Do you think I would know anything about doing a heart surgery on someone? Those above are from above and not earth.

Now that we have covered some of that, we will get back on topic. There are very many people out here that believe that the book of Revelation is how the world is going to end. However, remember our Father has hidden this from the wise and prudent. Now we are going to show that the book of Revelation is how most of this got started and not how the world will end.

First thing we are going to show is the very end of the book. As we showed in the last book, our Father is the one that raises the spirit of Jesus in our own bodies. So, in reality, the first thing we need to be listening to is Revelation 22:17–21.

And the Spirit and the bride say, Come. And let him that heareth say, Come. And let him that is athirst come. And whosoever will, let him take the water of life freely. For I testify unto every man that heareth the words of the prophecy of this book, If any man shall add unto these things, God shall add unto him the plagues that are written in this book: And if any man shall take away from the words of the book of this prophecy, God shall take away his part out of the book of life, and out of the holy city, and from the things which are written in this book. He which testifieth these things saith, Surely I come quickly. Amen. **Even so, come, Lord Jesus.** The grace of our Lord Jesus Christ be with you all. Amen.

We are going to show how this works again, just in case you're not sure of how it works. This world teaches that the only way to the Father is through Jesus. This is correct, but that is not believing that he came and died on the cross, and then you're sealed. As we showed in the last book, every person on the planet makes up the one son of God, or Jesus. **“And hath made of one blood all nations of men for to dwell on all the face of the earth, and hath determined the times**

before appointed, and the bounds of their habitation” (Acts 17:26). We are then told several times to love our neighbor as ourselves, so loving everyone on the planet is how we get to the Father. But that is just the tip of the iceberg, so to speak. Without showing all the verses again, we can know that everyone on the planet is a servant and a vessel of God. Which means everyone on the planet is the one son of God. This is how Jesus tasted death for every man. “But we see Jesus, who was made a little lower than the angels for the suffering of death, crowned with glory and honour; **that he by the grace of God should taste death for every man**” (Hebrews 2:9).

Now we need to listen to what Jesus tells us in John 5:43–47.

I am come in my Father’s name, and ye receive me not: if another shall come in his own name, him ye will receive. How can ye believe, which receive honour one of another, and seek not the honour that cometh from God only? Do not think that I will accuse you to the Father: there is one that accuseth you, even Moses, in whom ye trust. **For had ye believed Moses, ye would have believed me; for he wrote of me. But if ye believe not his writings, how shall ye believe my words?**

Jesus therefore answered and said unto them, Murmur not among yourselves. No man can come to me, except the Father which hath sent me draw him: and I will raise him up at the last day. **It is written in the prophets, And they shall be all taught of God. Every man therefore that hath heard, and hath learned of the Father, cometh unto me.** (John 6:43–45)

Remember our Father is the mastermind behind all of this, even His son. So now knowing this, we should be praying for the Lord Jesus to come before we even start to read Genesis. By doing this, it would be a start to showing our Father that we are willing to try and

learn of Him and His ways so that He will raise His son of righteousness up inside of us. Remember Jesus is in the image of the invisible God. “In whom we have redemption through his blood, even the forgiveness of sins: Who is the image of the invisible God, the firstborn of every creature” (Colossians 1:14–15).

This is where we need to remember that Jesus already died on the cross. Therefore, we are here. Now we need to listen to our Father what He tells us in Isaiah 46:10, “**Declaring the end from the beginning, and from ancient times the things that are not yet done, saying, My counsel shall stand, and I will do all my pleasure.**” So now we need to look at the very beginning of Genesis 1.

In the beginning God created the heaven and the earth. And the earth was without form, and void; and darkness was upon the face of the deep. And the Spirit of God moved upon the face of the waters. And God said, Let there be light: and there was light. And God saw the light, that it was good: and God divided the light from the darkness. And God called the light Day, and the darkness he called Night. And the evening and the morning were the first day.
(Genesis 1:1–5)

Now let us listen to a bit of Revelation 12:8–10, “And prevailed not; neither was their place found any more in heaven. And the great dragon was cast out, that old serpent, called the Devil, and Satan, which deceiveth the whole world: he was cast out into the earth, and his angels were cast out with him. And I heard a loud voice saying in heaven, Now is come salvation, and strength, and the kingdom of our God, and the power of his Christ: for the accuser of our brethren is cast down, which accused them before our God day and night.”

Notice how the earth was without form, and void, and darkness was upon the face of the deep? Now let us listen to Jesus when he tells us he is the light of this world. “Then spake Jesus again unto them, saying, I am the light of the world: he that followeth me shall not walk

JESUS IS HERE

in darkness, but shall have the light of life” (John 8:12). Satan and his angels were cast here to earth, and that is why the earth was without form, and void, and full of darkness. Now our Father is showing His mercy right here in the beginning. Satan and his angels were already cast here, but our Father is saying, without saying it directly, “I will give you all another chance.” Right here is where our Father could have just said, “You all have transgressed My law, and I will not have anything to do with you again.”

That light that our Father created on the very first day was not the sun, for it was created on the fourth day, as shown in the last book. This is where we learn that Adam was not just one man but rather many men as one man. And the same with Eve. Without having to show all the details shown in the last book, we all can know that many people make up the one son of God, right? Let us listen to a few other spots that we can hear this.

This is also when we can hear the same thing in the New Testament. Did you notice how the word “day” is capitalized when our Father called the light day in the very beginning? Let us listen to when we are told that we are the children of the day and not of the night.

But of the times and the seasons, brethren, ye have no need that I write unto you. For yourselves know perfectly that the day of the Lord so cometh as a thief in the night. For when they shall say, Peace and safety; then sudden destruction cometh upon them, as travail upon a woman with child; and they shall not escape. But ye, brethren, are not in darkness, that that day should overtake you as a thief. Ye are all the children of light, and the children of the day: we are not of the night, nor of darkness. Therefore let us not sleep, as do others; but let us watch and be sober. For they that sleep sleep in the night; and they that be drunken are drunken in the night. But let us, who are of the day, be sober, putting on the breastplate of faith and love; and for an helmet, the hope of salvation. (1 Thessalonians 5:1–8)

Then all the children of Israel went out, **and the congregation was gathered together as one man**, from Dan even to Beersheba, with the land of Gilead, unto the Lord in Mizpeh. And the chief of all the people, even of all the tribes of Israel, presented themselves in the assembly of the people of God, four hundred thousand footmen that drew sword. (Now the children of Benjamin heard that the children of Israel were gone up to Mizpeh.) Then said the children of Israel, Tell us, how was this wickedness? And the Levite, the husband of the woman that was slain, answered and said, I came into Gibeah that belongeth to Benjamin, I and my concubine, to lodge. And the men of Gibeah rose against me, and beset the house round about upon me by night, and thought to have slain me: and my concubine have they forced, that she is dead. And I took my concubine, and cut her in pieces, and sent her throughout all the country of the inheritance of Israel: for they have committed lewdness and folly in Israel. Behold, ye are all children of Israel; give here your advice and counsel. **And all the people arose as one man**, saying, We will not any of us go to his tent, neither will we any of us turn into his house. But now this shall be the thing which we will do to Gibeah; we will go up by lot against it; And we will take ten men of an hundred throughout all the tribes of Israel, and an hundred of a thousand, and a thousand out of ten thousand, to fetch victual for the people, that they may do, when they come to Gibeah of Benjamin, according to all the folly that they have wrought in Israel. So all the men of Israel were gathered against the city, **knit together as one man**. (Judges 20:1–11)

JESUS IS HERE

And when the seventh month was come, and the children of Israel were in the cities, the people gathered themselves together as one man to Jerusalem. (Ezra 3:1)

And all the people gathered themselves together as one man into the street that was before the water gate; and they spake unto Ezra the scribe to bring the book of the law of Moses, which the Lord had commanded to Israel. (Nehemiah 8:1)

Now if we will recall, the three sons of Noah covered the entire earth. “These are the three sons of Noah: **and of them was the whole earth overspread**” (Genesis 9:19). Then remember when we are told that all men die in Adam. “**For as in Adam all die, even so in Christ shall all be made alive**” (1 Corinthians 15:22). I believe that Adam is a spirit in which all men have within them. This is why we are told this in 1 Corinthians 15:45, “And so it is written, The first man Adam was made a living soul; the last Adam was made a quickening spirit.”

Now let us listen to when God created man. “And the Lord God formed man of the dust of the ground, and breathed into his nostrils the breath of life; and man became a living soul. Notice how man was man before he became a living soul?” (Genesis 2:7). Man did not become a living soul until our Father breathed life into him. Now remember Jesus said he is the life. “Jesus saith unto him, I am the way, the truth, and the life: no man cometh unto the Father, but by me” (John 14:6). “Let this mind be in you, which was also in Christ Jesus: Who, being in the form of God, thought it not robbery to be equal with God: But made himself of no reputation, and took upon him the form of a servant, and was made in the likeness of men” (Philippians 2:5–7).

Now if we are truly believing the writings of Moses and the prophets, then we can know that Adam must have represented many men as one man. And Eve would have represented many women as one woman. Just like the three sons of Noah overspread the whole

earth. If this was not the case, then our Father would have been contradicting His own law. Let us listen to a little of Leviticus 18.

And the Lord spake unto Moses, saying, Speak unto the children of Israel, and say unto them, I am the Lord your God. After the doings of the land of Egypt, wherein ye dwelt, shall ye not do: and after the doings of the land of Canaan, whither I bring you, shall ye not do: neither shall ye walk in their ordinances. Ye shall do my judgments, and keep mine ordinances, to walk therein: I am the Lord your God. Ye shall therefore keep my statutes, and my judgments: which if a man do, he shall live in them: I am the Lord. None of you shall approach to any that is near of kin to him, to uncover their nakedness: I am the Lord. The nakedness of thy father, or the nakedness of thy mother, shalt thou not uncover: she is thy mother; thou shalt not uncover her nakedness. The nakedness of thy father's wife shalt thou not uncover: it is thy father's nakedness. The nakedness of thy sister, the daughter of thy father, or daughter of thy mother, whether she be born at home, or born abroad, even their nakedness thou shalt not uncover. The nakedness of thy son's daughter, or of thy daughter's daughter, even their nakedness thou shalt not uncover: for theirs is thine own nakedness. The nakedness of thy father's wife's daughter, begotten of thy father, she is thy sister, thou shalt not uncover her nakedness. Thou shalt not uncover the nakedness of thy father's sister: she is thy father's near kinswoman. Thou shalt not uncover the nakedness of thy mother's sister: for she is thy mother's near kinswoman. Thou shalt not uncover the nakedness of thy father's brother, thou shalt not approach to his wife: she is thine aunt. Thou shalt not uncover the nakedness of thy daughter in

JESUS IS HERE

law: she is thy son's wife; thou shalt not uncover her nakedness. Thou shalt not uncover the nakedness of thy brother's wife: it is thy brother's nakedness. Thou shalt not uncover the nakedness of a woman and her daughter, neither shalt thou take her son's daughter, or her daughter's daughter, to uncover her nakedness; for they are her near kinswomen: it is wickedness. Neither shalt thou take a wife to her sister, to vex her, to uncover her nakedness, beside the other in her life time. Also thou shalt not approach unto a woman to uncover her nakedness, as long as she is put apart for her uncleanness. Moreover thou shalt not lie carnally with thy neighbour's wife, to defile thyself with her. (Leviticus 18:1–20)

Now if it started with just one of man of Adam, and one woman of Eve, then how could they be fruitful, multiply, and replenish the earth? Somebody would have had to have sex with a relative of some sort in order to have children after Adam and Eve had children.

Now remember that we are listening to conversations going on in heaven when we listen to our Bible. **“For our conversation is in heaven;** from whence also we look for the Saviour, the Lord Jesus Christ” (Philippians 3:20). So now let us listen to Revelation 20:1–3, **“And I saw an angel come down from heaven, having the key of the bottomless pit and a great chain in his hand. And he laid hold on the dragon, that old serpent, which is the Devil, and Satan, and bound him a thousand years,** And cast him into the bottomless pit, and shut him up, and set a seal upon him, that he should deceive the nations no more, **till the thousand years should be fulfilled:** and after that he must be loosed a little season. Notice how we can hear that Satan, that old serpent, which is the devil, was bound up, but not the angels that came with him. Or one-third of the stars, as noted in Revelation 12:4, **“And his tail drew the third part of the stars of heaven, and did cast them to the earth: and the dragon stood before the woman which was ready to be delivered, for to devour her child as soon as it was born.”**

I feel as if I am not getting the picture painted in your minds as well as I see it. Therefore, I ask you as a reader to ask our Father to help you understand, for He is the ultimate teacher, and I am just a man in the flesh trying to teach what He has been teaching me. Now we know that Satan is locked up; we can hear that very well. That darkness that covered the entire earth on the first day was all that had been kicked out of heaven, and that is now in hell. Remember in the last book we showed that this is hell? Then that light that our Father created on the first day was what He gave to everyman when He breathed life into them so that man became a living soul. This is when our Father translated us into the kingdom of God.

“Giving thanks unto the Father, which hath made us meet to be partakers of the inheritance of the saints in light: Who hath delivered us from the power of darkness, **and hath translated us into the kingdom of his dear Son.** (Colossians 1:12–13)

And I saw thrones, and they sat upon them, and judgment was given unto them: and I saw the souls of them that were beheaded for the witness of Jesus, and for the word of God, and which had not worshipped the beast, neither his image, neither had received his mark upon their foreheads, or in their hands; and they lived and reigned with Christ a thousand years. But the rest of the dead lived not again until the thousand years were finished. This is the first resurrection. Blessed and holy is he that hath part in the first resurrection: on such the second death hath no power, but they shall be priests of God and of Christ, and shall reign with him a thousand years. (Revelation 20:4–6)

Now to understand where our Bibles explain this, we need to listen to a couple of different things.

JESUS IS HERE

Now therefore hearken, O Israel, unto the statutes and unto the judgments, which I teach you, for to do them, that ye may live, and go in and possess the land which the Lord God of your fathers giveth you. Ye shall not add unto the word which I command you, neither shall ye diminish ought from it, that ye may keep the commandments of the Lord your God which I command you. Your eyes have seen what the Lord did because of Baalpeor: for all the men that followed Baalpeor, the Lord thy God hath destroyed them from among you. **But ye that did cleave unto the Lord your God are alive every one of you this day.** Behold, I have taught you statutes and judgments, even as the Lord my God commanded me, that ye should do so in the land whither ye go to possess it. (Deuteronomy 4:1–5)

Now we need to reflect to Ecclesiastes 1:10–11, “Is there any thing whereof it may be said, See, this is new? it hath been already of old time, which was before us. There is no remembrance of former things; neither shall there be any remembrance of things that are to come with those that shall come after.” Now with us knowing that we do not remember things from the past, or of things to come thereafter, we can start to understand that we have been delivered from the lowest hell. In the last book, I stated that I wasn’t sure what level of hell we are in; however, we showed that we are in some level of hell. But then we listen to Deuteronomy 32:21–22, “They have moved me to jealousy with that which is not God; they have provoked me to anger with their vanities: and I will move them to jealousy with those which are not a people; I will provoke them to anger with a foolish nation. For a fire is kindled in mine anger, and shall burn unto the lowest hell, and shall consume the earth with her increase, and set on fire the foundations of the mountains.” Let us listen to what we are told in Psalm 86:13, “For great is thy mercy toward me: **and thou hast delivered my soul from the lowest hell.**” When we were in the lowest

hell, we all cleaved to our Father one way or another. Therefore, we all are now here in the thousand years of reigning with Christ.

To understand this better, we need to listen to Colossians 3:11, “Where there is neither Greek nor Jew, circumcision nor uncircumcision, Barbarian, Scythian, **bond nor free: but Christ is all, and in all.**” We are being told right here: we are reigning with Christ. If Christ dwells inside of you, you are with him, and he is with you. Remember Christ died on the cross, so now it is his spirit that dwells inside of us.

Now we need to listen to what Jesus said in Mathew 5:17–19, “Think not that I am come to destroy the law, or the prophets: I am not come to destroy, but to fulfil. For verily I say unto you, Till heaven and earth pass, one jot or one tittle shall in no wise pass from the law, till all be fulfilled. Whosoever therefore shall break one of these least commandments, and shall teach men so, he shall be called the least in the kingdom of heaven: but whosoever shall do and teach them, the same shall be called great in the kingdom of heaven.”

Now note the similarities to what we hear in the Old Testament.

And it shall come to pass, if thou shalt hearken diligently unto the voice of the Lord thy God, to observe and to do all his commandments which I command thee this day, that the Lord thy God will set thee on high above all nations of the earth: And all these blessings shall come on thee, and overtake thee, if thou shalt hearken unto the voice of the Lord thy God. Blessed shalt thou be in the city, and blessed shalt thou be in the field. Blessed shall be the fruit of thy body, and the fruit of thy ground, and the fruit of thy cattle, the increase of thy kine, and the flocks of thy sheep. Blessed shall be thy basket and thy store. Blessed shalt thou be when thou comest in, and blessed shalt thou be when thou goest out. The Lord shall cause thine enemies that rise up against thee to be smitten before thy face: they shall come out

JESUS IS HERE

against thee one way, and flee before thee seven ways. The Lord shall command the blessing upon thee in thy storehouses, and in all that thou settest thine hand unto; and he shall bless thee in the land which the Lord thy God giveth thee. The Lord shall establish thee an holy people unto himself, as he hath sworn unto thee, if thou shalt keep the commandments of the Lord thy God, and walk in his ways. And all people of the earth shall see that thou art called by the name of the Lord; and they shall be afraid of thee. And the Lord shall make thee plenteous in goods, in the fruit of thy body, and in the fruit of thy cattle, and in the fruit of thy ground, in the land which the Lord sware unto thy fathers to give thee. The Lord shall open unto thee his good treasure, the heaven to give the rain unto thy land in his season, and to bless all the work of thine hand: and thou shalt lend unto many nations, and thou shalt not borrow. **And the Lord shall make thee the head, and not the tail; and thou shalt be above only, and thou shalt not be beneath; if that thou hearken unto the commandments of the Lord thy God, which I command thee this day, to observe and to do them:** And thou shalt not go aside from any of the words which I command thee this day, to the right hand, or to the left, to go after other gods to serve them. But it shall come to pass, if thou wilt not hearken unto the voice of the Lord thy God, to observe to do all his commandments and his statutes which I command thee this day; that all these curses shall come upon thee, and overtake thee: Cursed shalt thou be in the city, and cursed shalt thou be in the field. Cursed shall be thy basket and thy store. Cursed shall be the fruit of thy body, and the fruit of thy land, the increase of thy kine, and the flocks of thy sheep. Cursed shalt thou be when thou comest in, and cursed

shalt thou be when thou goest out. The Lord shall send upon thee cursing, vexation, and rebuke, in all that thou settest thine hand unto for to do, until thou be destroyed, and until thou perish quickly; because of the wickedness of thy doings, whereby thou hast forsaken me. The Lord shall make the pestilence cleave unto thee, until he have consumed thee from off the land, whither thou goest to possess it. The Lord shall smite thee with a consumption, and with a fever, and with an inflammation, and with an extreme burning, and with the sword, and with blasting, and with mildew; and they shall pursue thee until thou perish. And thy heaven that is over thy head shall be brass, and the earth that is under thee shall be iron. The Lord shall make the rain of thy land powder and dust: from heaven shall it come down upon thee, until thou be destroyed. The Lord shall cause thee to be smitten before thine enemies: thou shalt go out one way against them, and flee seven ways before them: and shalt be removed into all the kingdoms of the earth. And thy carcase shall be meat unto all fowls of the air, and unto the beasts of the earth, and no man shall fray them away. The Lord will smite thee with the botch of Egypt, and with the emerods, and with the scab, and with the itch, whereof thou canst not be healed. The Lord shall smite thee with madness, and blindness, and astonishment of heart: And thou shalt grope at noonday, as the blind gropeth in darkness, and thou shalt not prosper in thy ways: and thou shalt be only oppressed and spoiled evermore, and no man shall save thee. Thou shalt betroth a wife, and another man shall lie with her: thou shalt build an house, and thou shalt not dwell therein: thou shalt plant a vineyard, and shalt not gather the grapes thereof. Thine ox shall be slain before thine eyes, and thou

JESUS IS HERE

shalt not eat thereof: thine ass shall be violently taken away from before thy face, and shall not be restored to thee: thy sheep shall be given unto thine enemies, and thou shalt have none to rescue them. Thy sons and thy daughters shall be given unto another people, and thine eyes shall look, and fail with longing for them all the day long; and there shall be no might in thine hand. The fruit of thy land, and all thy labours, shall a nation which thou knowest not eat up; and thou shalt be only oppressed and crushed alway: So that thou shalt be mad for the sight of thine eyes which thou shalt see. The Lord shall smite thee in the knees, and in the legs, with a sore botch that cannot be healed, from the sole of thy foot unto the top of thy head. The Lord shall bring thee, and thy king which thou shalt set over thee, unto a nation which neither thou nor thy fathers have known; and there shalt thou serve other gods, wood and stone. And thou shalt become an astonishment, a proverb, and a byword, among all nations whither the Lord shall lead thee. Thou shalt carry much seed out into the field, and shalt gather but little in; for the locust shall consume it. Thou shalt plant vineyards, and dress them, but shalt neither drink of the wine, nor gather the grapes; for the worms shall eat them. Thou shalt have olive trees throughout all thy coasts, but thou shalt not anoint thyself with the oil; for thine olive shall cast his fruit. Thou shalt beget sons and daughters, but thou shalt not enjoy them; for they shall go into captivity. All thy trees and fruit of thy land shall the locust consume. The stranger that is within thee shall get up above thee very high; and thou shalt come down very low. **He shall lend to thee, and thou shalt not lend to him: he shall be the head, and thou shalt be the tail.** (Deuteronomy 28:1–44)

Notice how we are hearing the same thing Jesus said in Matthew 5:17–19. It is just said in more detail in the Old Testament than in the New Testament.

Now we need to remember that this earth or this world was and is here for the son of God.

That ye might walk worthy of the Lord unto all pleasing, being fruitful in every good work, and increasing in the knowledge of God; Strengthened with all might, according to his glorious power, unto all patience and longsuffering with joyfulness; Giving thanks unto the Father, which hath made us meet to be partakers of the inheritance of the saints in light: Who hath delivered us from the power of darkness, and hath translated us into the kingdom of his dear Son: **In whom we have redemption through his blood, even the forgiveness of sins: Who is the image of the invisible God, the firstborn of every creature: For by him were all things created, that are in heaven, and that are in earth, visible and invisible, whether they be thrones, or dominions, or principalities, or powers: all things were created by him, and for him: And he is before all things, and by him all things consist. And he is the head of the body, the church: who is the beginning, the firstborn from the dead; that in all things he might have the preeminence.** For it pleased the Father that in him should all fulness dwell; And, having made peace through the blood of his cross, by him to reconcile all things unto himself; by him, I say, whether they be things in earth, or things in heaven. (Colossians 1:10–20)

Now let us venture back to the very beginning of the Bible again.

JESUS IS HERE

In the beginning God created the heaven and the earth. And the earth was without form, and void; and darkness was upon the face of the deep. And the Spirit of God moved upon the face of the waters. And God said, Let there be light: and there was light. And God saw the light, that it was good: and God divided the light from the darkness. And God called the light Day, and the darkness he called Night. And the evening and the morning were the first day. (Genesis 1:1–5)

As we showed everyone in the last book, we really have no idea of what time period we are in. When Satan and the angels were kicked out of heaven, there was no longer any light within them. So now our Father is locking Satan up right here. This is where our Father divided the darkness and made light. He is now showing His love for us, for He is giving us another chance to learn how to love in the same manner as He does in which is not about your own life. If He made it about His own life, then He would have never said or brought forth the earth so that we could still have a chance to get back into heaven. **“We love him, because he first loved us”** (1 John 4:19).

But of the times and the seasons, brethren, ye have no need that I write unto you. For yourselves know perfectly that the day of the Lord so cometh as a thief in the night. For when they shall say, Peace and safety; then sudden destruction cometh upon them, as travail upon a woman with child; and they shall not escape. **But ye, brethren, are not in darkness, that that day should overtake you as a thief. Ye are all the children of light, and the children of the day: we are not of the night, nor of darkness.** (1 Thessalonians 5:1–5)

This is the light that our Father created on the first day. Notice how we are not of the night, nor of the darkness. This darkness covered the entire earth.

Now with Jesus being the light of the world, and that light is within us, we need to understand why many can't see this light.

For God so loved the world, that he gave his only begotten Son, that whosoever believeth in him should not perish, but have everlasting life. For God sent not his Son into the world to condemn the world; but that the world through him might be saved. He that believeth on him is not condemned: but he that believeth not is condemned already, because he hath not believed in the name of the only begotten Son of God. **And this is the condemnation, that light is come into the world, and men loved darkness rather than light, because their deeds were evil. For every one that doeth evil hateth the light, neither cometh to the light, lest his deeds should be reproved. But he that doeth truth cometh to the light, that his deeds may be made manifest, that they are wrought in God.** (John 3:16–21)

The spirit of man is the candle of the Lord, searching all the inward parts of the belly. (Proverbs 20:27)

Remember how Jesus is holding seven candlesticks in Revelation 1:20, “The mystery of the seven stars which thou sawest in my right hand, **and the seven golden candlesticks.** The seven stars are the angels of the seven churches: and the seven candlesticks which thou sawest are the seven churches.” The church is within each person and not in a building. This darkness thinks of himself or herself before others. Now quick, because we mentioned *herself*, we need to listen to what helps a woman. “For Adam was first formed, then Eve. And Adam was not deceived, but the woman being deceived was in the

transgression. **Notwithstanding she shall be saved in childbearing, if they continue in faith and charity and holiness with sobriety**" (1 Timothy 2:13–15). Now let us just think of a woman giving birth. She usually bears the pain and anguish with childbirth. When the child is born, she neglects herself so she can fulfill the needs of the baby. She will go without sleep, without food, and without bathing before the child's needs are met. That is what Jesus did; he gave up his own desires of the flesh so that he could learn of our Father so that he could leave us an example. He even commanded us to do the same.

However, most would rather judge others, condemn others, think of themselves before they think of others. And this is because each person chooses not to learn of our Father so that our Father can teach them how to love others as they love themselves. This world teaches that "I must be happy before I can make anyone else happy." This world teaches that "my needs must be met before I can help you with your needs." Now let us listen to 1 Corinthians 6:6–9.

But brother goeth to law with brother, and that before the unbelievers. Now therefore there is utterly a fault among you, because ye go to law one with another. Why do ye not rather take wrong? why do ye not rather suffer yourselves to be defrauded? Nay, ye do wrong, and defraud, and that your brethren. Know ye not that the unrighteous shall not inherit the kingdom of God? Be not deceived: neither fornicators, nor idolaters, nor adulterers, nor effeminate, nor abusers of themselves with mankind, Nor thieves, nor covetous, nor drunkards, nor revilers, nor extortioners, shall inherit the kingdom of God.

This is because our Father is all light, and men hate light. "This then is the message which we have heard of him, and declare unto you, that God is light, and in him is no darkness at all" (1 John 1:5).

Remember Jesus said he is the light of the world. Remember Jesus said the kingdom of God does not come with observation. "And when

he was demanded of the Pharisees, when the kingdom of God should come, he answered them and said, **The kingdom of God cometh not with observation: Neither shall they say, Lo here! or, lo there! for, behold, the kingdom of God is within you**” (Luke 17:20–21). There is that light that our Father created on the very first day. This is the reason our Father created the earth, so that His son could live on it and be the king, as we showed in the last book.

This is when our Father locked up Satan, and we will be explaining where he is locked up, later in the book. We showed in the last book that Jesus dwelled in Adam. Jesus is that life that God breathed into man so that man became a living soul. Then we showed that we live seventy to eighty years, and then we die, as shown in Psalm 90:10, “The days of our years are threescore years and ten; and if by reason of strength they be fourscore years, yet is their strength labour and sorrow; for it is soon cut off, and we fly away.” Our Father said the covenant is for one thousand generations. I think I did the math incorrectly in the last book; however, if we live seventy years for one generation, and then we must live one thousand lives, that comes out to be 70–80,000 years. Now we know that a day is like a thousand years and a thousand years are as a day; how many days are there in a year? Would not that be 365,000 years? I am not saying that this is exactly how it is, but when we truly think about this, we do not have any idea of where we are at in history. Our souls never die, so a million years in our Father’s world could only be a month or so in our world.

Just another quick note here: in the last book, we showed how when the earth began, the day was just four hours long. Could that be why the people in the very beginning of the Bible lived so long? If we do the math, how many times does four go into twenty-four? That would make six days in one of our days. Wouldn’t that be sixty of our days to complete a year? In God’s calendar, there are 360 days to a year. So, in one of our years today, they would have been six years old. Methuselah lived to be 969 years old. Divide that by six, and it comes out to 161.5 years old in our years today. Definitely not saying this is the case, but it gives you something to think about.

JESUS IS HERE

This is what is going to lead us into what was truly being said when we hear what is said in Genesis 1:26–27, “And God said, Let us make man in our image, after our likeness: and let them have dominion over the fish of the sea, and over the fowl of the air, and over the cattle, and over all the earth, and over every creeping thing that creepeth upon the earth. So God created man in his own image, in the image of God created he him; male and female created he them.” In the first book, our Father had me show how we are to learn to love everybody with unwritten laws. He had me use examples of how we use unwritten laws all day long, every day of our life. We will just give an example of a little child in this book to help with a quick illustration. When we have a child, this child does not know how to do anything. Yes, they know how to drink milk; however, they do not know how to chew, eat, crawl, walk, et cetera. As they get older, they must learn how to do all these things. Now we are going to ask you something as a reader. How much do you think about how to do these things now? You don’t, it just comes naturally. That is how we are to learn to love everybody as one.

Then in the second book in which we wrote, we showed that being in their image is us being in like a model or something. What I mean is that they have an Israel in heaven; they have countries in heaven; they have nations; they have different worlds; they have priests, kings, and such all in heaven. We have all of the same, but all of it is on this one little rock or planet. They have a Jerusalem in heaven, and that is the mother of all.

But Jerusalem which is above is free, which is the mother of us all. Are Father which is in heaven is the Father in which we are to honor. (Galatians 4:26)

We can know this when we listen to Malachi 1:1–6.

The burden of the word of the Lord to Israel by Malachi. I have loved you, saith the Lord. Yet ye say, Wherein hast thou loved us? Was not Esau Jacob’s

brother? saith the Lord: yet I loved Jacob, And I hated Esau, and laid his mountains and his heritage waste for the dragons of the wilderness. Whereas Edom saith, We are impoverished, but we will return and build the desolate places; thus saith the Lord of hosts, They shall build, but I will throw down; and they shall call them, The border of wickedness, and, The people against whom the Lord hath indignation for ever. And your eyes shall see, and ye shall say, The Lord will be magnified from the border of Israel. **A son honoureth his father, and a servant his master: if then I be a father, where is mine honour? and if I be a master, where is my fear? saith the Lord of hosts unto you, O priests, that despise my name. And ye say, Wherein have we despised thy name?**

In the last book, we showed that we are counted as beast in the Bible. **“Wherefore are we counted as beasts,** and reputed vile in your sight?” (Job 18:3). We showed that our Father never commanded man to sacrifice animals. “Hear the word of the Lord, ye rulers of Sodom; give ear unto the law of our God, ye people of Gomorrah. To what purpose is the multitude of your sacrifices unto me? saith the Lord: I am full of the burnt offerings of rams, and the fat of fed beasts; and I delight not in the blood of bullocks, or of lambs, or of he goats. When ye come to appear before me, **who hath required this at your hand, to tread my courts?**” (Isaiah 1:10–12). We introduced that the kings, lords, and spirits of the heavens have dominion over our bodies. “And it yieldeth much increase unto the kings whom thou hast set over us because of our sins: **also they have dominion over our bodies,** and over our cattle, at their pleasure, and we are in great distress” (Nehemiah 9:37). “O Lord our God, **other lords beside thee have had dominion over us: but by thee only will we make mention of thy name**” (Isaiah 26:13).

This is where we need to realize how this really works. I had the car accident on March 28, 1986, Good Friday. Thirty years later

JESUS IS HERE

almost to the day, I was led out into the wilderness to be baptized by the Holy Ghost. Do you think I planned either of these? When I played the poker tournament, who shuffled those cards so that I could actually win eight hours after being told I was just there to watch? Who was it that told my brother that he was not going to pay me for the help I was going to give him before I went to his place to help? I had no money whatsoever, yet I refused to get paid.

Now let us go back to Genesis 1:27–28, “So God created man in his own image, in the image of God created he him; male and female created he them. And God blessed them, and God said unto them, Be fruitful, and multiply, and replenish the earth, and subdue it: and have dominion over the fish of the sea, and over the fowl of the air, and over every living thing that moveth upon the earth.” Now we need to reflect to Matthew 6:9–13.

After this manner therefore pray ye: Our Father which art in heaven, Hallowed be thy name. Thy kingdom come, Thy will be done in earth, as it is in heaven. Give us this day our daily bread. And forgive us our debts, as we forgive our debtors. And lead us not into temptation, but deliver us from evil: For thine is the kingdom, and the power, and the glory, for ever. Amen.

We have dominion over the animals, and they have dominion over us. Thy will be done in earth as it is in heaven.

But one in a certain place testified, saying, What is man, that thou art mindful of him? or the son of man that thou visitest him? 7 Thou madest him a little lower than the angels; thou crownedst him with glory and honour, and didst set him over the works of thy hands: 8 Thou hast put all things in subjection under his feet. For in that he put all in subjection under him, he left nothing that is not put under him. But

now we see not yet all things put under him. 9 But we see Jesus, who was made a little lower than the angels for the suffering of death, crowned with glory and honour; that he by the grace of God should taste death for every man. (Hebrews 2:6–9)

Notice that man and/or the son of man is what was made a little lower than the angels. Notice how at the end of verse 9, Jesus tasted death for every man. Is not Adam one of these men? Jesus tasted death for him also.

Remember Jesus did say that nothing of the law would pass until all be fulfilled. “Think not that I am come to destroy the law, or the prophets: I am not come to destroy, but to fulfil. For verily I say unto you, Till heaven and earth pass, one jot or one tittle shall in no wise pass from the law, till all be fulfilled” (Matthew 5:17–18). Then remember that Jesus is the head of man. “But I would have you know, that the head of every man is Christ; and the head of the woman is the man; and the head of Christ is God. Since the beginning of the world, Christ has been the head of every man” (1 Corinthians 11:3). This is where we need to realize that it is up to each one of us as to which king or spirit has dominion over our bodies. Jesus is doing what he must in order to fulfill whatever needs to be fulfilled.

This was explained very well in the last book that we wrote. Our Father is the head of Christ, and Christ does everything in which our Father commands of him. Which is causing us to do what needs to be done. It is the attitude or personality in which we do what we do. Just by refusing to read all of the Bible and trying to understand all of it is spiritually telling our Father that you do not want Him having dominion over you. And because He is a loving Father, He will not force Himself on you. It is your choice. “Now therefore fear the Lord, and serve him in sincerity and in truth: and put away the gods which your fathers served on the other side of the flood, and in Egypt; and serve ye the Lord. And if it seem evil unto you to serve the Lord, **choose you this day whom ye will serve; whether the gods which your fathers served that were on the other side of the flood, or the**

gods of the Amorites, in whose land ye dwell: but as for me and my house, we will serve the Lord” (Joshua 24:14–15). Notice what our Father will do just because we choose not to listen to all that Moses commands. “And at the end of three years they took it: even in the sixth year of Hezekiah, that is in the ninth year of Hoshea king of Israel, Samaria was taken. And the king of Assyria did carry away Israel unto Assyria, and put them in Halah and in Habor by the river of Gozan, and in the cities of the Medes: Because they obeyed not the voice of the Lord their God, but transgressed his covenant, and all that Moses the servant of the Lord commanded, and would not hear them, nor do them” (2 Kings 18:10–12). We should be realizing that these places in which people were taken are not here on earth; however, they are above in heaven. We are only in their image.

This is where we need to remember that this is spiritual workings. We need to reflect to when Jesus was taken to heaven.

And, behold, I send the promise of my Father upon you: but tarry ye in the city of Jerusalem, until ye be endued with power from on high. And he led them out as far as to Bethany, and he lifted up his hands, and blessed them. And it came to pass, while he blessed them, he was parted from them, and carried up into heaven. (Luke 24:49–51)

Now we are going to venture back into the book of Ezekiel so that we can hear where Jesus is at. This is also where we need to realize that Jesus is in heaven, and dwells in each one of us. This is also where I believe there is some sort of each one of us also in heaven. It is a spiritual form of us, and obviously I have no idea of what we look like. Let us just start to show this so that we can see how it is working the same in heaven as it is in or on earth. I am going to post six chapters of Ezekiel as our Father had me show in the first book. First, we need to realize that Jesus is the prince that reports to our Father in heaven. “And from Jesus Christ, who is the faithful witness, and the first begotten of the dead, and the prince of the kings of the

earth. Unto him that loved us, and washed us from our sins in his own blood” (Revelation 1:5). Now I know there are a lot of people who think the battle has already been won. Yes, this is correct, but this battle that has been won is the battle in which Satan got locked up. Now we still battle unseen powers. **“For we wrestle not against flesh and blood, but against principalities, against powers, against the rulers of the darkness of this world, against spiritual wickedness in high places”** (Ephesians 6:12).

This is where we should be paying attention to what Jesus said in Matthew 16:18, **“And I will give unto thee the keys of the kingdom of heaven: and whatsoever thou shalt bind on earth shall be bound in heaven: and whatsoever thou shalt loose on earth shall be loosed in heaven.”** This is when we really need to be thinking of how we think of and treat others. Then remember that we are here because our Father forgave us and gave us a chance to learn how to love in the same manner He does. Then listen to this and just think of how important it is to forgive anyone that you feel has done you wrong.

Then came Peter to him, and said, Lord, how oft shall my brother sin against me, and I forgive him? till seven times? Jesus saith unto him, I say not unto thee, Until seven times: but, Until seventy times seven. Therefore is the kingdom of heaven likened unto a certain king, which would take account of his servants. And when he had begun to reckon, one was brought unto him, which owed him ten thousand talents. But forasmuch as he had not to pay, his lord commanded him to be sold, and his wife, and children, and all that he had, and payment to be made. The servant therefore fell down, and worshipped him, saying, Lord, have patience with me, and I will pay thee all. Then the lord of that servant was moved with compassion, and loosed him, and forgave him the debt. But the same servant went out, and found one of his fellowservants, which owed him an hundred

JESUS IS HERE

pence: and he laid hands on him, and took him by the throat, saying, Pay me that thou owest. And his fellowservant fell down at his feet, and besought him, saying, Have patience with me, and I will pay thee all. And he would not: but went and cast him into prison, till he should pay the debt. So when his fellowservants saw what was done, they were very sorry, and came and told unto their lord all that was done. Then his lord, after that he had called him, said unto him, O thou wicked servant, I forgave thee all that debt, because thou desiredst me: Shouldest not thou also have had compassion on thy fellowservant, even as I had pity on thee? And his lord was wroth, and delivered him to the tormentors, till he should pay all that was due unto him. **So likewise shall my heavenly Father do also unto you, if ye from your hearts forgive not every one his brother their trespasses.** (Matthew 18:21–35)

Now think about this as you read through this next section, then realize that our Father already forgave you, as the servant, and brought you here. But at the same time, realize that *He* has also brought all other servants just as He brought you. Then remember Matthew 18:23–35.

Therefore is the kingdom of heaven likened unto a certain king, which would take account of his servants. And when he had begun to reckon, one was brought unto him, which owed him ten thousand talents. But forasmuch as he had not to pay, his lord commanded him to be sold, and his wife, and children, and all that he had, and payment to be made. The servant therefore fell down, and worshipped him, saying, Lord, have patience with me, and I will pay thee all. Then the lord of that servant was moved with

compassion, and loosed him, and forgave him the debt. But the same servant went out, and found one of his fellowservants, which owed him an hundred pence: and he laid hands on him, and took him by the throat, saying, Pay me that thou owest. And his fellowservant fell down at his feet, and besought him, saying, Have patience with me, and I will pay thee all. And he would not: but went and cast him into prison, till he should pay the debt. So when his fellowservants saw what was done, they were very sorry, and came and told unto their lord all that was done. Then his lord, after that he had called him, said unto him, O thou wicked servant, I forgave thee all that debt, because thou desiredst me: Shouldest not thou also have had compassion on thy fellowservant, even as I had pity on thee? And his lord was wroth, and delivered him to the tormentors, till he should pay all that was due unto him. So likewise shall my heavenly Father do also unto you, if ye from your hearts forgive not every one his brother their trespasses.

In the five and twentieth year of our captivity, in the beginning of the year, in the tenth day of the month, in the fourteenth year after that the city was smitten, in the selfsame day the hand of the Lord was upon me, and brought me thither. In the visions of God brought he me into the land of Israel, and set me upon a very high mountain, by which was as the frame of a city on the south. And he brought me thither, and, behold, there was a man, whose appearance was like the appearance of brass, with a line of flax in his hand, and a measuring reed; and he stood in the gate. And the man said unto me, Son of man, behold with thine eyes, and hear with thine ears, and set thine heart upon all that I shall shew thee; for to the intent that I might shew them unto thee art thou brought

hither: declare all that thou seest to the house of Israel. And behold a wall on the outside of the house round about, and in the man's hand a measuring reed of six cubits long by the cubit and an hand breadth: so he measured the breadth of the building, one reed; and the height, one reed. Then came he unto the gate which looketh toward the east, and went up the stairs thereof, and measured the threshold of the gate, which was one reed broad; and the other threshold of the gate, which was one reed broad. And every little chamber was one reed long, and one reed broad; and between the little chambers were five cubits; and the threshold of the gate by the porch of the gate within was one reed. He measured also the porch of the gate within, one reed. Then measured he the porch of the gate, eight cubits; and the posts thereof, two cubits; and the porch of the gate was inward. And the little chambers of the gate eastward were three on this side, and three on that side; they three were of one measure: and the posts had one measure on this side and on that side. And he measured the breadth of the entry of the gate, ten cubits; and the length of the gate, thirteen cubits. The space also before the little chambers was one cubit on this side, and the space was one cubit on that side: and the little chambers were six cubits on this side, and six cubits on that side. He measured then the gate from the roof of one little chamber to the roof of another: the breadth was five and twenty cubits, door against door. He made also posts of threescore cubits, even unto the post of the court round about the gate. And from the face of the gate of the entrance unto the face of the porch of the inner gate were fifty cubits. And there were narrow windows to the little chambers, and to their posts within the gate round about, and likewise to the arches: and

win- dows were round about inward: and upon each post were palm trees. Then brought he me into the outward court, and, lo, there were chambers, and a pavement made for the court round about: thirty chambers were upon the pavement. And the pavement by the side of the gates over against the length of the gates was the lower pavement. Then he measured the breadth from the forefront of the lower gate unto the forefront of the inner court without, an hundred cubits eastward and northward. And the gate of the outward court that looked toward the north, he measured the length thereof, and the breadth thereof. And the little chambers thereof were three on this side and three on that side; and the posts thereof and the arches thereof were after the measure of the first gate: the length thereof was fifty cubits, and the breadth five and twenty cubits. And their windows, and their arches, and their palm trees, were after the measure of the gate that looketh toward the east; and they went up unto it by seven steps; and the arches thereof were before them. And the gate of the inner court was over against the gate toward the north, and toward the east; and he measured from gate to gate an hundred cubits. After that he brought me toward the south, and behold a gate toward the south: and he measured the posts thereof and the arches thereof according to these measures. And there were windows in it and in the arches thereof round about, like those windows: the length was fifty cubits, and the breadth five and twenty cubits. And there were seven steps to go up to it, and the arches thereof were before them: and it had palm trees, one on this side, and another on that side, upon the posts thereof. And there was a gate in the inner court toward the south: and he measured from gate to gate toward the south an hundred cubits. And

he brought me to the inner court by the south gate: and he measured the south gate according to these measures; And the little chambers thereof, and the posts thereof, and the arches thereof, according to these measures: and there were windows in it and in the arches thereof round about: it was fifty cubits long, and five and twenty cubits broad. And the arches round about were five and twenty cubits long, and five cubits broad. And the arches thereof were toward the utter court; and palm trees were upon the posts thereof: and the going up to it had eight steps. And he brought me into the inner court toward the east: and he measured the gate according to these measures. And the little chambers thereof, and the posts thereof, and the arches thereof, were according to these measures: and there were windows therein and in the arches thereof round about: it was fifty cubits long, and five and twenty cubits broad. And the arches thereof were toward the outward court; and palm trees were upon the posts thereof, on this side, and on that side: and the going up to it had eight steps. And he brought me to the north gate, and measured it according to these measures; The little chambers thereof, the posts thereof, and the arches thereof, and the windows to it round about: the length was fifty cubits, and the breadth five and twenty cubits. And the posts thereof were toward the utter court; and palm trees were upon the posts thereof, on this side, and on that side: and the going up to it had eight steps. And the chambers and the entries thereof were by the posts of the gates, where they washed the burnt offering. And in the porch of the gate were two tables on this side, and two tables on that side, to slay thereon the burnt offering and the sin offering and the trespass offering. And at the side without, as one goeth up to

the entry of the north gate, were two tables; and on the other side, which was at the porch of the gate, were two tables. Four tables were on this side, and four tables on that side, by the side of the gate; eight tables, whereupon they slew their sacrifices. And the four tables were of hewn stone for the burnt offering, of a cubit and an half long, and a cubit and an half broad, and one cubit high: where- upon also they laid the instruments wherewith they slew the burnt offering and the sacrifice. And within were hooks, an hand broad, fastened round about: and upon the tables was the flesh of the offering. And without the inner gate were the chambers of the singers in the inner court, which was at the side of the north gate; and their pros- pect was toward the south: one at the side of the east gate having the prospect toward the north. And he said unto me, This chamber, whose pros- pect is toward the south, is for the priests, the keepers of the charge of the house. And the chamber whose prospect is toward the north is for the priests, the keepers of the charge of the altar: these are the sons of Zadok among the sons of Levi, which come near to the Lord to minister unto him. So he measured the court, an hundred cubits long, and an hundred cubits broad, four- square; and the altar that was before the house. And he brought me to the porch of the house, and measured each post of the porch, five cubits on this side, and five cubits on that side: and the breadth of the gate was three cubits on this side, and three cubits on that side. The length of the porch was twenty cubits, and the breadth eleven cubits, and he brought me by the steps whereby they went up to it: and there were pillars by the posts, one on this side, and another on that side. (Ezekiel 40:1-49)

JESUS IS HERE

What we are seeing now is the holy mountain that our Father talks about. This is the mountain in which our Father is on top of. It is a spiritual mountain that cannot be seen in with our eyes here on earth. Notice how each of the gates face to each direction. Now as you read this, imagine this picture in your mind. Try to see this with another form of us that isn't us, being within sight of the top of the mountain. Then try to realize that we here on earth cannot fathom the measurements used in our Father's world, for we try to measure things on earth in small amounts. And our Father's world consists of everything in the earth, heavens, and under the earth.

Afterward he brought me to the temple, and measured the posts, six cubits broad on the one side, and six cubits broad on the other side, which was the breadth of the tabernacle. And the breadth of the door was ten cubits; and the sides of the door were five cubits on the one side, and five cubits on the other side: and he measured the length thereof, forty cubits: and the breadth, twenty cubits. Then went he inward, and measured the post of the door, two cubits; and the door, six cubits; and the breadth of the door, seven cubits. So he measured the length thereof, twenty cubits; and the breadth, twenty cubits, before the temple: and he said unto me, This is the most holy place. After he measured the wall of the house, six cubits; and the breadth of every side chamber, four cubits, round about the house on every side. And the side chambers were three, one over another, and thirty in order; and they entered into the wall which was of the house for the side chambers round about, that they might have hold, but they had not hold in the wall of the house. And there was an enlarging, and a winding about still upward to the side chambers: for the winding about of the house went still upward round about the house: therefore the breadth of the house

was still upward, and so increased from the lowest chamber to the highest by the midst. I saw also the height of the house round about: the foundations of the side chambers were a full reed of six great cubits. The thickness of the wall, which was for the side chamber without, was five cubits: and that which was left was the place of the side chambers that were within. And between the chambers was the wideness of twenty cubits round about the house on every side. And the doors of the side chambers were toward the place that was left, one door toward the north, and another door toward the south: and the breadth of the place that was left was five cubits round about. Now the building that was before the separate place at the end toward the west was seventy cubits broad; and the wall of the building was five cubits thick round about, and the length thereof ninety cubits. So he measured the house, an hundred cubits long; and the separate place, and the building, with the walls thereof, an hundred cubits long; Also the breadth of the face of the house, and of the separate place toward the east, an hundred cubits. And he measured the length of the building over against the separate place which was behind it, and the galleries thereof on the one side and on the other side, an hundred cubits, with the inner temple, and the porches of the court; The door posts, and the narrow windows, and the galleries round about on their three stories, over against the door, cieled with wood round about, and from the ground up to the windows, and the windows were covered; To that above the door, even unto the inner house, and without, and by all the wall round about within and without, by measure. And it was made with cherubims and palm trees, so that a palm tree was between a cherub and a cherub; and every

JESUS IS HERE

cherub had two faces; So that the face of a man was toward the palm tree on the one side, and the face of a young lion toward the palm tree on the other side: it was made through all the house round about. From the ground unto above the door were cherubims and palm trees made, and on the wall of the temple. The posts of the temple were squared, and the face of the sanctuary; the appearance of the one as the appearance of the other. The altar of wood was three cubits high, and the length thereof two cubits; and the corners thereof, and the length thereof, and the walls thereof, were of wood: and he said unto me, This is the table that is before the Lord. And the temple and the sanctuary had two doors. And the doors had two leaves apiece, two turning leaves; two leaves for the one door, and two leaves for the other door. And there were made on them, on the doors of the temple, cherubims and palm trees, like as were made upon the walls; and there were thick planks upon the face of the porch without. And there were narrow windows and palm trees on the one side and on the other side, on the sides of the porch, and upon the side chambers of the house, and thick planks. (Ezekiel 41:1–26)

Then he brought me forth into the utter court, the way toward the north: and he brought me into the chamber that was over against the separate place, and which was before the building toward the north. Before the length of an hundred cubits was the north door, and the breadth was fifty cubits. Over against the twenty cubits which were for the inner court, and over against the pavement which was for the utter court, was gallery against gallery in three stories. And before the chambers was a walk to ten cubits breadth inward, a way of one cubit; and their doors toward

the north. Now the upper chambers were shorter: for the galleries were higher than these, than the lower, and than the middlemost of the building. For they were in three stories, but had not pillars as the pillars of the courts: therefore the building was straitened more than the lowest and the middlemost from the ground. And the wall that was without over against the chambers, toward the utter court on the forepart of the chambers, the length thereof was fifty cubits. For the length of the chambers that were in the utter court was fifty cubits: and, lo, before the temple were an hundred cubits. And from under these chambers was the entry on the east side, as one goeth into them from the utter court. The chambers were in the thickness of the wall of the court toward the east, over against the separate place, and over against the building. And the way before them was like the appearance of the chambers which were toward the north, as long as they, and as broad as they: and all their goings out were both according to their fashions, and according to their doors. And according to the doors of the chambers that were toward the south was a door in the head of the way, even the way directly before the wall toward the east, as one entereth into them. Then said he unto me, The north chambers and the south chambers, which are before the separate place, they be holy chambers, where the priests that approach unto the Lord shall eat the most holy things: there shall they lay the most holy things, and the meat offering, and the sin offering, and the trespass offering; for the place is holy. When the priests enter therein, then shall they not go out of the holy place into the utter court, but there they shall lay their garments wherein they minister; for they are holy; and shall put on other garments, and shall approach

JESUS IS HERE

to those things which are for the people. Now when he had made an end of measuring the inner house, he brought me forth toward the gate whose prospect is toward the east, and measured it round about. He measured the east side with the measuring reed, five hundred reeds, with the measuring reed round about. He measured the north side, five hundred reeds, with the measuring reed round about. He measured the south side, five hundred reeds, with the measuring reed. He turned about to the west side, and measured five hundred reeds with the measuring reed. He measured it by the four sides: it had a wall round about, five hundred reeds long, and five hundred broad, to make a separation between the sanctuary and the profane place. (Ezekiel 42:1–20)

Now if we are remembering from the last book, we showed that we are counted as the beast of the earth, and we are what is sacrificed in a spiritual manner. Let me use a quick example of my life. We know that a broken spirit is a sacrifice of God. “The sacrifices of God are a broken spirit: a broken and a contrite heart, O God, thou wilt not despise” (Psalm 51:17). I spoke in the last book of a nine-year relationship I had just before I tried to take my life in 2009. At the time, I just lost my fifth child in my mind and was completely tired of failing everything that I had tried in my life. Now these priests we are reading about are on this holy mountain making these things happen. By doing this, they were breaking my spirit, which was the start to leading me to the Bible.

Afterward he brought me to the gate, even the gate that looketh toward the east: And, behold, the glory of the God of Israel came from the way of the east: and his voice was like a noise of many waters: and the earth shined with his glory. And it was according to the appearance of the vision which I saw, even

according to the vision that I saw when I came to destroy the city: and the visions were like the vision that I saw by the river Chebar; and I fell upon my face. And the glory of the Lord came into the house by the way of the gate whose prospect is toward the east. So the spirit took me up, and brought me into the inner court; and, behold, the glory of the Lord filled the house. And I heard him speaking unto me out of the house; and the man stood by me. And he said unto me, Son of man, the place of my throne, and the place of the soles of my feet, where I will dwell in the midst of the children of Israel for ever, and my holy name, shall the house of Israel no more defile, neither they, nor their kings, by their whoredom, nor by the carcasses of their kings in their high places. In their setting of their threshold by my thresholds, and their post by my posts, and the wall between me and them, they have even defiled my holy name by their abominations that they have committed: wherefore I have consumed them in mine anger. Now let them put away their whoredom, and the carcasses of their kings, far from me, and I will dwell in the midst of them for ever. Thou son of man, shew the house to the house of Israel, that they may be ashamed of their iniquities: and let them measure the pattern. And if they be ashamed of all that they have done, shew them the form of the house, and the fashion thereof, and the goings out thereof, and the comings in thereof, and all the forms thereof, and all the ordinances thereof, and all the forms thereof, and all the laws thereof: and write it in their sight, that they may keep the whole form thereof, and all the ordinances thereof, and do them. This is the law of the house; Upon the top of the mountain the whole limit thereof round about shall be most holy. Behold, this is the law of the house. And

JESUS IS HERE

these are the measures of the altar after the cubits: The cubit is a cubit and an hand breadth; even the bottom shall be a cubit, and the breadth a cubit, and the border thereof by the edge thereof round about shall be a span: and this shall be the higher place of the altar. And from the bottom upon the ground even to the lower settle shall be two cubits, and the breadth one cubit; and from the lesser settle even to the greater settle shall be four cubits, and the breadth one cubit. So the altar shall be four cubits; and from the altar and upward shall be four horns. And the altar shall be twelve cubits long, twelve broad, square in the four squares thereof. And the settle shall be fourteen cubits long and fourteen broad in the four squares thereof; and the border about it shall be half a cubit; and the bottom thereof shall be a cubit about; and his stairs shall look toward the east. And he said unto me, Son of man, thus saith the Lord God; These are the ordinances of the altar in the day when they shall make it, to offer burnt offerings thereon, and to sprinkle blood thereon. And thou shalt give to the priests the Levites that be of the seed of Zadok, which approach unto me, to minister unto me, saith the Lord God, a young bullock for a sin offering. And thou shalt take of the blood thereof, and put it on the four horns of it, and on the four corners of the settle, and upon the border round about: thus shalt thou cleanse and purge it. Thou shalt take the bullock also of the sin offering, and he shall burn it in the appointed place of the house, without the sanctuary. And on the second day thou shalt offer a kid of the goats without blemish for a sin offering; and they shall cleanse the altar, as they did cleanse it with the bullock. When thou hast made an end of cleansing it, thou shalt offer a young bullock without blemish,

and a ram out of the flock without blemish. And thou shalt offer them before the Lord, and the priests shall cast salt upon them, and they shall offer them up for a burnt offering unto the Lord. Seven days shalt thou prepare every day a goat for a sin offering: they shall also prepare a young bullock, and a ram out of the flock, without blemish. Seven days shall they purge the altar and purify it; and they shall consecrate themselves. And when these days are expired, it shall be, that upon the eighth day, and so forward, the priests shall make your burnt offerings upon the altar, and your peace offerings; and I will accept you, saith the Lord God. (Ezekiel 43:1–27)

Now using the example of my life we just used a little while ago, let us listen to how this sacrifice was a sweet aroma for our Father.

And the Lord called unto Moses, and spake unto him out of the tabernacle of the congregation, saying, Speak unto the children of Israel, and say unto them, If any man of you bring an offering unto the Lord, ye shall bring your offering of the cattle, even of the herd, and of the flock. If his offering be a burnt sacrifice of the herd, let him offer a male without blemish: he shall offer it of his own voluntary will at the door of the tabernacle of the congregation before the Lord. And he shall put his hand upon the head of the burnt offering; and it shall be accepted for him to make atonement for him. And he shall kill the bullock before the Lord: and the priests, Aaron's sons, shall bring the blood, and sprinkle the blood round about upon the altar that is by the door of the tabernacle of the congregation. And he shall flay the burnt offering, and cut it into his pieces. And the sons of Aaron the priest shall put fire upon the altar, and lay the wood

JESUS IS HERE

in order upon the fire: And the priests, Aaron's sons, shall lay the parts, the head, and the fat, in order upon the wood that is on the fire which is upon the altar: But his inwards and his legs shall he wash in water: and the priest shall burn all on the altar, to be a burnt sacrifice, an offering made by fire, of a sweet savour unto the Lord. (Leviticus 1:1-9)

Now some might ask, why would this be a sweet savor unto our Father? Imagine the emotions I was going through before I tried to take my life. If things wouldn't have happened the way they did, I would have kept on living as I was. Yes, I prayed regularly to myself, but I would not even talk about the Bible, rather even read it. Now with the two books that our Father has had me write, and now this one, can you see where that sacrifice took my life? That sacrifice they made hurt me back then but started to get me on the path our Father needed me to be on, so now He is seeing His son do what He needed him to do.

Then he brought me back the way of the gate of the outward sanctuary which looketh toward the east; and it was shut. Then said the Lord unto me; This gate shall be shut, it shall not be opened, and no man shall enter in by it; because the Lord, the God of Israel, hath entered in by it, therefore it shall be shut. It is for the prince; the prince, he shall sit in it to eat bread before the Lord; he shall enter by the way of the porch of that gate, and shall go out by the way of the same. Then brought he me the way of the north gate before the house: and I looked, and, behold, the glory of the Lord filled the house of the Lord: and I fell upon my face. And the Lord said unto me, Son of man, mark well, and behold with thine eyes, and hear with thine ears all that I say unto thee concerning all the ordinances of the house of the Lord, and all the

laws thereof; and mark well the entering in of the house, with every going forth of the sanctuary. And thou shalt say to the rebellious, even to the house of Israel, Thus saith the Lord God; O ye house of Israel, let it suffice you of all your abominations, In that ye have brought into my sanctuary strangers, **uncircumcised in heart, and uncircumcised in flesh, to be in my sanctuary, to pollute it, even my house, when ye offer my bread, the fat and the blood, and they have broken my covenant because of all your abominations.** And ye have not kept the charge of mine holy things: but ye have set keepers of my charge in my sanctuary for yourselves. Thus saith the Lord God; **No stranger, uncircumcised in heart, nor uncircumcised in flesh, shall enter into my sanctuary, of any stranger that is among the children of Israel. And the Levites that are gone away far from me, when Israel went astray, which went astray away from me after their idols; they shall even bear their iniquity.** Yet they shall be ministers in my sanctuary, having charge at the gates of the house, and ministering to the house: they shall slay the burnt offering and the sacrifice for the people, and they shall stand before them to minister unto them. Because they ministered unto them before their idols, and caused the house of Israel to fall into iniquity; therefore have I lifted up mine hand against them, saith the Lord God, and they shall bear their iniquity. And they shall not come near unto me, to do the office of a priest unto me, nor to come near to any of my holy things, in the most holy place: but they shall bear their shame, and their abominations which they have committed. But I will make them keepers of the charge of the house, for all the service thereof, and for all that shall be done therein. But the priests

JESUS IS HERE

the Levites, the sons of Zadok, that kept the charge of my sanctuary when the children of Israel went astray from me, they shall come near to me to minister unto me, and they shall stand before me to offer unto me the fat and the blood, saith the Lord God: They shall enter into my sanctuary, and they shall come near to my table, to minister unto me, and they shall keep my charge. And it shall come to pass, that when they enter in at the gates of the inner court, they shall be clothed with linen garments; and no wool shall come upon them, whiles they minister in the gates of the inner court, and within. They shall have linen bonnets upon their heads, and shall have linen breeches upon their loins; they shall not gird themselves with any thing that causeth sweat. And when they go forth into the utter court, even into the utter court to the people, they shall put off their garments wherein they ministered, and lay them in the holy chambers, and they shall put on other garments; and they shall not sanctify the people with their garments. Neither shall they shave their heads, nor suffer their locks to grow long; they shall only poll their heads. Neither shall any priest drink wine, when they enter into the inner court. Neither shall they take for their wives a widow, nor her that is put away: but they shall take maidens of the seed of the house of Israel, or a widow that had a priest before. And they shall teach my people the difference between the holy and profane, and cause them to discern between the unclean and the clean. And in controversy they shall stand in judgment; and they shall judge it according to my judgments: and they shall keep my laws and my statutes in all mine assemblies; and they shall hallow my sabbaths. And they shall come at no dead person to defile themselves: but for father, or for mother, or for son, or for daughter,

for brother, or for sister that hath had no husband, they may defile themselves. And after he is cleansed, they shall reckon unto him seven days. And in the day that he goeth into the sanctuary, unto the inner court, to minister in the sanctuary, he shall offer his sin offering, saith the Lord God. And it shall be unto them for an inheritance: I am their inheritance: and ye shall give them no possession in Israel: I am their possession. They shall eat the meat offering, and the sin offering, and the trespass offering: and every dedicated thing in Israel shall be theirs. And the first of all the firstfruits of all things, and every oblation of all, of every sort of your oblations, shall be the priest's: ye shall also give unto the priest the first of your dough, that he may cause the blessing to rest in thine house. The priests shall not eat of any thing that is dead of itself, or torn, whether it be fowl or beast. (Ezekiel 44:1–31)

This is the very top of the mountain if you will. Notice the prince sitting outside of the door to where the Father is. This is where Jesus is sitting, and nobody is getting to the Father but through him. Now we are going to start to visualize, if you will, the part of us in which is in heaven now. We can see where our Father is, and we can see where Jesus is. We have been noticing where the priests are, but they only report to Jesus or the prince. Then Jesus reports to the Father. Now this mountain, we can only imagine, must be humongous. Remember our Father's world is a lot larger than just this little rock we call earth.

I think this is a good spot of this. In the last book, I stated that my dad passed in 2003. I said he went up to the next level of hell to await my mom to finish fulfilling what she needed to fulfill. Then when she passed, their souls were joined as one and sent back into captivity. Okay, we have everything here on earth as they do in heaven, as shown in the last book, so we are going to visualize this

from an earthly perspective. We have been cast out of heaven and sent to hell; as shown in the last book, this is hell. We have prisons here on earth as they do in heaven. In fact, the earth is a prison. We are kept here until the end of the world. “For the Lord heareth the poor, **and despiseth not his prisoners**” (Psalm 69:33). “Which executeth judgment for the oppressed: which giveth food to the hungry. **The Lord looseth the prisoners**” (Psalm 146:7). “**Bring my soul out of prison, that I may praise thy name:** the righteous shall compass me about; for thou shalt deal bountifully with me” (Psalm 142:7). It is not an actual prison as we know it, but it is a prison that keeps us out of heaven with our Father. This mountain that we are reading about is where my dad went to be with Christ to await his and Mom’s sentencing after they were joined as one. Then they were judged as one and sentenced back into captivity. Now I do not know that much about the court system other than what I see on television. Or have heard on some news channels and such. Some people get sentenced right away. Some do not get sentenced until some time after the trial. It is just like that in our life. Of course, I do not know the judgment system our Father uses, but I am sure this is where we go when we await our sentencing. Remember we all have transgressed our Father’s law. And remember we are living in the judgement day now.

This is what people are seeing when they have these near-death experiences. Christ is the head at the top of the mountain just before our Father in which no one can talk to but Christ. Our Father is the ultimate judge, and He decides where each soul goes and not Christ. But this mountain is still full of love and peace. Up there and not here!

Moreover, when ye shall divide by lot the land for inheritance, ye shall offer an oblation unto the Lord, an holy portion of the land: the length shall be the length of five and twenty thousand reeds, and the breadth shall be ten thousand. This shall be holy in all the borders thereof round about. Of this there shall be for the sanctuary five hundred in length, with five hundred in breadth, square round about;

and fifty cubits round about for the suburbs thereof. And of this measure shalt thou measure the length of five and twenty thousand, and the breadth of ten thousand: and in it shall be the sanctuary and the most holy place. The holy portion of the land shall be for the priests the ministers of the sanctuary, which shall come near to minister unto the Lord: and it shall be a place for their houses, and an holy place for the sanctuary. And the five and twenty thousand of length, and the ten thousand of breadth shall also the Levites, the ministers of the house, have for themselves, for a possession for twenty chambers. And ye shall appoint the possession of the city five thousand broad, and five and twenty thousand long, over against the oblation of the holy portion: it shall be for the whole house of Israel. And a portion shall be for the prince on the one side and on the other side of the oblation of the holy portion, and of the possession of the city, before the oblation of the holy portion, and before the possession of the city, from the west side westward, and from the east side eastward: and the length shall be over against one of the portions, from the west border unto the east border. In the land shall be his possession in Israel: and my princes shall no more oppress my people; and the rest of the land shall they give to the house of Israel according to their tribes. Thus saith the Lord God; Let it suffice you, O princes of Israel: remove violence and spoil, and execute judgment and justice, take away your exactions from my people, saith the Lord God. Ye shall have just balances, and a just ephah, and a just bath. The ephah and the bath shall be of one measure, that the bath may contain the tenth part of an homer, and the ephah the tenth part of an homer: the measure thereof shall be after the homer. And

the shekel shall be twenty gerahs: twenty shekels, five and twenty shekels, fifteen shekels, shall be your maneh. This is the oblation that ye shall offer; the sixth part of an ephah of an homer of wheat, and ye shall give the sixth part of an ephah of an homer of barley: Concerning the ordinance of oil, the bath of oil, ye shall offer the tenth part of a bath out of the cor, which is an homer of ten baths; for ten baths are an homer: And one lamb out of the flock, out of two hundred, out of the fat pastures of Israel; for a meat offering, and for a burnt offering, and for peace offerings, to make reconciliation for them, saith the Lord God. All the people of the land shall give this oblation for the prince in Israel. And it shall be the prince's part to give burnt offerings, and meat offerings, and drink offerings, in the feasts, and in the new moons, and in the sabbaths, in all solemnities of the house of Israel: he shall prepare the sin offering, and the meat offering, and the burnt offering, and the peace offerings, to make reconciliation for the house of Israel. Thus saith the Lord God; In the first month, in the first day of the month, thou shalt take a young bullock without blemish, and cleanse the sanctuary: And the priest shall take of the blood of the sin offering, and put it upon the posts of the house, and upon the four corners of the settle of the altar, and upon the posts of the gate of the inner court. And so thou shalt do the seventh day of the month for every one that erreth, and for him that is simple: so shall ye reconcile the house. In the first month, in the fourteenth day of the month, ye shall have the passover, a feast of seven days; unleavened bread shall be eaten. And upon that day shall the prince prepare for himself and for all the people of the land a bullock for a sin offering. And seven days of the feast he shall prepare a burnt offering

to the Lord, seven bullocks and seven rams without blemish daily the seven days; and a kid of the goats daily for a sin offering. And he shall prepare a meat offering of an ephah for a bullock, and an ephah for a ram, and an hin of oil for an ephah. In the seventh month, in the fifteenth day of the month, shall he do the like in the feast of the seven days, according to the sin offering, according to the burnt offering, and according to the meat offering, and according to the oil. (Ezekiel 45:1–25)

Now we are hearing the lands in which we are in. Try and picture this mountain and try to see the very top. Then try to picture yourself above this mountain as seeing all these sections of land going out in every direction. Now with your imagination, press this mountain down to where it is one humongous flat area so that you can see all of the souls kept in different parts of this area. There are fences, as we call them, to separate some from others. Also try to picture us as the beast of the earth. Look at it as it is one great big farm with all kinds of different animals on it. Or people counted as beast.

Thus saith the Lord God; The gate of the inner court that looketh toward the east shall be shut the six working days; but on the sabbath it shall be opened, and in the day of the new moon it shall be opened. And the prince shall enter by the way of the porch of that gate without, and shall stand by the post of the gate, and the priests shall prepare his burnt offering and his peace offerings, and he shall worship at the threshold of the gate: then he shall go forth; but the gate shall not be shut until the evening. Likewise the people of the land shall worship at the door of this gate before the Lord in the sabbaths and in the new moons. And the burnt offering that the prince shall offer unto the Lord in the sabbath day shall be six

lamb without blemish, and a ram without blemish. And the meat offering shall be an ephah for a ram, and the meat offering for the lambs as he shall be able to give, and an hin of oil to an ephah. And in the day of the new moon it shall be a young bullock without blemish, and six lambs, and a ram: they shall be without blemish. And he shall prepare a meat offering, an ephah for a bullock, and an ephah for a ram, and for the lambs according as his hand shall attain unto, and an hin of oil to an ephah. And when the prince shall enter, he shall go in by the way of the porch of that gate, and he shall go forth by the way thereof. But when the people of the land shall come before the Lord in the solemn feasts, he that entereth in by the way of the north gate to worship shall go out by the way of the south gate; and he that entereth by the way of the south gate shall go forth by the way of the north gate: he shall not return by the way of the gate whereby he came in, but shall go forth over against it. And the prince in the midst of them, when they go in, shall go in; and when they go forth, shall go forth. And in the feasts and in the solemnities the meat offering shall be an ephah to a bullock, and an ephah to a ram, and to the lambs as he is able to give, and an hin of oil to an ephah. Now when the prince shall prepare a voluntary burnt offering or peace offerings voluntarily unto the Lord, one shall then open him the gate that looketh toward the east, and he shall prepare his burnt offering and his peace offerings, as he did on the sabbath day: then he shall go forth; and after his going forth one shall shut the gate. Thou shalt daily prepare a burnt offering unto the Lord of a lamb of the first year without blemish: thou shalt prepare it every morning. And thou shalt prepare a meat offering for it every morning, the sixth

part of an ephah, and the third part of an hin of oil, to temper with the fine flour; a meat offering continually by a perpetual ordinance unto the Lord. Thus shall they prepare the lamb, and the meat offering, and the oil, every morning for a continual burnt offering. Thus saith the Lord God; If the prince give a gift unto any of his sons, the inheritance thereof shall be his sons'; it shall be their possession by inheritance. But if he give a gift of his inheritance to one of his servants, then it shall be his to the year of liberty; after it shall return to the prince: but his inheritance shall be his sons' for them. Moreover the prince shall not take of the people's inheritance by oppression, to thrust them out of their possession; but he shall give his sons inheritance out of his own possession: that my people be not scattered every man from his possession. After he brought me through the entry, which was at the side of the gate, into the holy chambers of the priests, which looked toward the north: and, behold, there was a place on the two sides westward. Then said he unto me, This is the place where the priests shall boil the trespass offering and the sin offering, where they shall bake the meat offering; that they bear them not out into the utter court, to sanctify the people. Then he brought me forth into the utter court, and caused me to pass by the four corners of the court; and, behold, in every corner of the court there was a court. In the four corners of the court there were courts joined of forty cubits long and thirty broad: these four corners were of one measure. And there was a row of building round about in them, round about them four, and it was made with boiling places under the rows round about. Then said he unto me, These are the places of them that boil, where the ministers

JESUS IS HERE

of the house shall boil the sacrifice of the people.
(Ezekiel 46:1–24)

These courts or fenced-off areas farthest out from our Father are the areas that people that are assigned to be disobedient are kept. These farthest-out areas are the areas where people go when they are cast out into outer darkness. “But the children of the kingdom shall be cast out into outer darkness: there shall be weeping and gnashing of teeth” (Matthew 8:12).

Now there seems to be more in the book of Ezekiel, but I am only using the six chapters our Father had me put in the first book. Now listen to what we are being told in Exodus 19:12, “And thou shalt set bounds unto the people round about, saying, Take heed to yourselves, that ye go not up into the mount, or touch the border of it: whosoever toucheth the mount shall be surely put to death.” This is where we start to understand what it means when we hear that they will be cast out into darkness. We saw where Jesus is, right? In the last book, we showed how everybody has their own laws, rulings, statutes, and commandments. We all have different roles to fulfill. We are being held in these different areas so that we can hopefully fulfill whatever role we have. This is why I said in the last chapter I will not give details on how I receive commandments as to which lane to be in when driving. When to stop when there is a traffic jam coming up. If I am hooking a different trailer, I am told before I hook to it if it needs some sort of repair.

As we showed in the last book, I have been in school with our Father, one-on-one, hands-on training. If you are someone that is being kept in the outer courts, and you try to do what I know how to do now, without being taught precept upon precept, then you would be spiritually put to death. Or put further out in the sections of the mountain so that you would be further out from Jesus and our Father. Remember Jesus is the light of the world. If you’re doing what you are supposed to be doing, you are closer to Jesus, and there will be a lot of light within you. But if you’re not doing what you’re supposed to be doing, you will be cast further out away from this light. Try to picture

yourself in this square mile building, if you will. Let us just think of one light bulb in the very center of the building. You just walked in the door, so obviously you are far away from the light. Now you must find your way to this light, but you must go through a maze. If you make a wrong turn, you could very well end up on the other side of the building without ever finding the light in the center.

Now we can start to understand what Jesus was saying in Matthew 8:12, “But the children of the kingdom shall be cast out into outer darkness: there shall be weeping and gnashing of teeth.” So, this is where we start picturing ourselves there and here at the same time. If the part of us there does something other than what is commanded, they will be cast into outer darkness or taken further away from the light. And this affects how our conscience is going to be able to hear what the spirit is saying.

And it came to pass, that, as he was praying in a certain place, when he ceased, one of his disciples said unto him, Lord, teach us to pray, as John also taught his disciples. And he said unto them, When ye pray, say, Our Father which art in heaven, Hallowed be thy name. Thy kingdom come. Thy will be done, as in heaven, so in earth. Give us day by day our daily bread. 4 And forgive us our sins; for we also forgive every one that is indebted to us. And lead us not into temptation; but deliver us from evil. (Luke 11:1–3)

In the last book, we showed that a person becomes a bastard when they refuse to listen to our Father when He chastises them. “If ye endure chastening, God dealeth with you as with sons; for what son is he whom the father chasteneth not? But if ye be without chastisement, whereof all are partakers, then are ye bastards, and not sons. Furthermore we have had fathers of our flesh which corrected us, and we gave them reverence: shall we not much rather be in subjection unto the Father of spirits, and live?” (Hebrews 12:7–9). When this

JESUS IS HERE

happens, this soul is cast out into the courts furthest from our Father, and they must remain there for their next ten lives or generations.

Now we are going to be looking at more of the book of Revelation so that we can hear for certain that Revelations is a book aimed more toward the beginning rather than the end of the world. The first thing we need to listen to are the first two chapters of the book. As we showed in the last book, each person is the house of God. This is always where we should be praying. God dwells in every person, Jesus dwells in every person, the Holy Ghost dwells in every person. The seven spirits of God dwell in every person; the son of perdition dwells in every person or the temple of God. If all these dwell in every person, then every person must be the house of God. So, we can know also that the church of God is within man also and not some building. So, when we listen to these two chapters, hear what the Spirit says to you personally. We say it this way because you are the only one responsible for you. You are the only one that truly knows you. Your spouse may know you, but he or she does not know your every thought. Let your conscience hear what the Spirit says to you.

Unto the angel of the church of Ephesus write; These things saith he that holdeth the seven stars in his right hand, who walketh in the midst of the seven golden candlesticks; I know thy works, and thy labour, and thy patience, and how thou canst not bear them which are evil: and thou hast tried them which say they are apostles, and are not, and hast found them liars: And hast borne, and hast patience, and for my name's sake hast laboured, and hast not fainted. Nevertheless I have some- what against thee, because thou hast left thy first love. Remember therefore from whence thou art fallen, and repent, and do the first works; or else I will come unto thee quickly, and will remove thy candlestick out of his place, except thou repent. But this thou hast, that thou hatest the deeds of the Nicolaitanes, which I also hate. He that hath an ear,

let him hear what the Spirit saith unto the churches; To him that overcometh will I give to eat of the tree of life, which is in the midst of the paradise of God. And unto the angel of the church in Smyrna write; These things saith the first and the last, which was dead, and is alive; I know thy works, and tribulation, and poverty, (but thou art rich) and I know the blasphemy of them which say they are Jews, and are not, but are the synagogue of Satan. (Revelation 2:1-9)

We must take a sidenote here. This world thinks that you must go to the country of Israel here on earth. Jerusalem is above, as we showed in Galatians 4. We now know that we have everything here on earth as they do in heaven. So, in reality, nobody knows whether or not they are a Jew. Remember in the last book that we showed how we live one thousand different lives. We all have been Jew, Russian, Chinese, Korean, American, Black, White, male, female, etc. We all are here just to learn to love in the same manner as our Father.

Fear none of those things which thou shalt suffer: behold, the devil shall cast some of you into prison, that ye may be tried; and ye shall have tribulation ten days: be thou faithful unto death, and I will give thee a crown of life. (Revelation 2:10)

We want to make a sidenote here. Notice how Jesus is saying some will be in prison for ten days. I believe he is talking to our souls, for we are stuck here on earth. We are in prison. Now, a day is as a thousand years, and a thousand years is as a day. So, I believe that he is saying that some of our souls will be here in prison for ten thousand years.

He that hath an ear, let him hear what the Spirit saith unto the churches; He that overcometh shall not be hurt of the second death. And to the angel of the church in Pergamos write; These things saith

JESUS IS HERE

he which hath the sharp sword with two edges; I know thy works, and where thou dwellest, even where Satan's seat is: and thou holdest fast my name, and hast not denied my faith, even in those days wherein Antipas was my faithful martyr, who was slain among you, where Satan dwelleth. But I have a few things against thee, because thou hast there them that hold the doctrine of Balaam, who taught Balac to cast a stumblingblock before the children of Israel, to eat things sacrificed unto idols, and to commit fornication. **So hast thou also them that hold the doctrine of the Nicolaitanes, which thing I hate.** (Revelation 2:11–15)

We need to be paying attention to what we are hearing here. This is not the only time we can hear Jesus say that he hates the doctrine of the Nicolaitans, so we need to be looking at to what and who these people are. Let us look up the name on the online Bible concordance and listen.

G3531 Νικολαιτῆς Nikolaitēs nik-ol-ah-ee'-tace From G3532; a Nicolaite, that is, adherent of **Nicolaus**:—Nicolaitane.

We showed you all in the last book that Jeremiah 10 is talking about Christmas. Yes, if you go out and find books on man's opinion, they will say no, it isn't, but when you just listen to what is being said, you can know it is about Christmas. What is Christmas based on? Most will say it is about Jesus's birthday. As we showed in the last book, everybody makes up part of the son of God, so his birthday is every day of the year. By celebrating birthdays, you are adding to the Word of God. You are spiritually telling our Father, you need more than His perfection. So, what is Nicolaitan, and who is this fictional character? **St. Nicholas or Santa Claus.** A fictional character that people lie to their children and tell them that this character is going

to bring gifts. First, you are teaching your children to lie. Then you give them gifts; our Father hates man receiving gifts from man. You waste money on these gifts that could go to a neighbor that is in need. The poor and needy will always be in the land. Then celebrating this holiday or any other day, you teach your children to love more at certain times of the year and that they should be loved more at certain times of the year. That is not loving as our Father, for He loves equally every day of the year.

Repent; or else I will come unto thee quickly, and will fight against them with the sword of my mouth. He that hath an ear, let him hear what the Spirit saith unto the churches; To him that overcometh will I give to eat of the hidden manna, and will give him a white stone, and in the stone a new name written, which no man knoweth saving he that receiveth it. And unto the angel of the church in Thyatira write; These things saith the Son of God, who hath his eyes like unto a flame of fire, and his feet are like fine brass; I know thy works, and charity, and service, and faith, and thy patience, and thy works; and the last to be more than the first. Notwithstanding I have a few things against thee, because thou sufferest that woman Jezebel, which calleth herself a prophetess, to teach and to seduce my servants to commit fornication, and to eat things sacrificed unto idols. And I gave her space to repent of her fornication; and she repented not. Behold, I will cast her into a bed, and them that commit adultery with her into great tribulation, except they repent of their deeds. And I will kill her children with death; and all the churches shall know that I am he which searcheth the reins and hearts: and I will give unto every one of you according to your works. But unto you I say, and unto the rest in Thyatira, as many as have not this doctrine, and which

JESUS IS HERE

have not known the depths of Satan, as they speak; I will put upon you none other burden. But that which ye have already hold fast till I come. And he that overcometh, and keepeth my works unto the end, to him will I give power over the nations: And he shall rule them with a rod of iron; as the vessels of a potter shall they be broken to shivers: even as I received of my Father. And I will give him the morning star. He that hath an ear, let him hear what the Spirit saith unto the churches. (Revelation 2:16–29) \

And unto the angel of the church in Sardis write; These things saith he that hath the seven Spirits of God, and the seven stars; I know thy works, that thou hast a name that thou livest, and art dead. Be watchful, and strengthen the things which remain, that are ready to die: for I have not found thy works perfect before God. (Revelation 3:1–2)

Note here that we are being told that there are some that hast a name that livest, but art dead. Remember how Jesus said let the dead bury the dead in Matthew 8:21–22, “And another of his disciples said unto him, Lord, suffer me first to go and bury my father. But Jesus said unto him, Follow me; and let the dead bury their dead.” Just because you have a heartbeat and are breathing does not make you alive in our Father’s eyes. If you do not want anything to do with our Father, there is no light in you. You are completely full of darkness, which is the same thing as being dead. This is how the dead can bury the dead.

Remember therefore how thou hast received and heard, and hold fast, and repent. If therefore thou shalt not watch, I will come on thee as a thief, and thou shalt not know what hour I will come upon thee. Thou hast a few names even in Sardis which have not defiled their garments; and they shall walk with me

in white: for they are worthy. He that overcometh, the same shall be clothed in white raiment; and I will not blot out his name out of the book of life, but I will confess his name before my Father, and before his angels. He that hath an ear, let him hear what the Spirit saith unto the churches. And to the angel of the church in Philadelphia write; These things saith he that is holy, he that is true, he that hath the key of David, he that openeth, and no man shutteth; and shutteth, and no man openeth; I know thy works: behold, I have set before thee an open door, and no man can shut it: for thou hast a little strength, and hast kept my word, and hast not denied my name. Behold, I will make them of the synagogue of Satan, which say they are Jews, and are not, but do lie; behold, I will make them to come and worship before thy feet, and to know that I have loved thee. Because thou hast kept the word of my patience, I also will keep thee from the hour of temptation, which shall come upon all the world, to try them that dwell upon the earth. Behold, I come quickly: hold that fast which thou hast, that no man take thy crown. Him that overcometh will I make a pillar in the temple of my God, and he shall go no more out: and I will write upon him the name of my God, and the name of the city of my God, which is new Jerusalem, which cometh down out of heaven from my God: and I will write upon him my new name. He that hath an ear, let him hear what the Spirit saith unto the churches. And unto the angel of the church of the Laodiceans write; These things saith the Amen, the faithful and true witness, the beginning of the creation of God; I know thy works, that thou art neither cold nor hot: I would thou wert cold or hot. So then because thou art lukewarm, and neither cold nor hot, I will spue thee

JESUS IS HERE

out of my mouth. Because thou sayest, I am rich, and increased with goods, and have need of nothing; and knowest not that thou art wretched, and miserable, and poor, and blind, and naked: I counsel thee to buy of me gold tried in the fire, that thou mayest be rich; and white raiment, that thou mayest be clothed, and that the shame of thy nakedness do not appear; and anoint thine eyes with eyesalve, that thou mayest see. As many as I love, I rebuke and chasten: be zealous therefore, and repent. Behold, I stand at the door, and knock: if any man hear my voice, and open the door, I will come in to him, and will sup with him, and he with me. To him that overcometh will I grant to sit with me in my throne, even as I also overcame, and am set down with my Father in his throne. He that hath an ear, let him hear what the Spirit saith unto the churches. (Revelation 3:3–22)

Now we need to be looking at Revelation 6:1–2, “And I saw when the Lamb opened one of the seals, and I heard, as it were the noise of thunder, one of the four beasts saying, Come and see. And I saw, and behold a white horse: and he that sat on him had a bow; and a crown was given unto him: and he went forth conquering, and to conquer.” Now we all have heard that these are the four horses of the apocalypse. So, what we are going to do is hear how these were sent out in the very beginning and not going to be sent out to be a sign of the end. So, the white horse went forth conquering. Now if anybody has ever read the Old Testament, they know that it is full of wars. In fact, many people say that we live in the New Testament now. They think that now. If that was the case, why is there so many wars in the world now? Someone must win or conquer a war. This all stems off what Jesus said when he said he did not come to bring peace into the world, but diversity. “Suppose ye that I am come to give peace on earth? I tell you, Nay; but rather division: For from henceforth there shall be five in one house divided, three against two, and two against

three” (Luke 12:51–52). Now we need to remember that our Father separated us Genesis 11:6–9.

And the Lord said, Behold, the people is one, and they have all one language; and this they begin to do: and now nothing will be restrained from them, which they have imagined to do. Go to, let us go down, and there confound their language, that they may not understand one another’s speech. So the Lord scattered them abroad from thence upon the face of all the earth: and they left off to build the city. Therefore is the name of it called Babel; because the Lord did there confound the language of all the earth: and from thence did the Lord scatter them abroad upon the face of all the earth.

Now that our Father had separated the people and gave them different languages, is when the countries of the world started to grow. Listen to what we are being told in Job 8:11, “Can the rush grow up without mire? **can the flag grow without water?**” A flag does not grow; however, the country that the flag represents, does. Remember in the last book that Jesus is living water, and we are living waters. Then we should be remembering that Jesus is the manna in which our Father feeds us, without us knowing about it. That water is basic knowledge in which allows the country to grow. Once a country grows, they have disagreements with other countries, and the wars begin.

And when he had opened the second seal, I heard the second beast say, Come and see. And there went out another horse that was red: and power was given to him that sat thereon to take peace from the earth, and that they should kill one another: and there was given unto him a great sword. (Revelation 6:3–4)

JESUS IS HERE

Now this horse goes along with the first. Remember we spiritually kill with our tongues. If we didn't, then nobody would ever turn back to our Father. Everything happens for a reason. And of course, we need to remember that our Father told us that there is a season for everything.

To every thing there is a season, and a time to every purpose under the heaven: A time to be born, and a time to die; a time to plant, and a time to pluck up that which is planted; A time to kill, and a time to heal; a time to break down, and a time to build up; A time to weep, and a time to laugh; a time to mourn, and a time to dance; A time to cast away stones, and a time to gather stones together; a time to embrace, and a time to refrain from embracing; A time to get, and a time to lose; a time to keep, and a time to cast away; A time to rend, and a time to sew; a time to keep silence, and a time to speak; A time to love, and a time to hate; a time of war, and a time of peace. (Ecclesiastes 3:1–8)

And when he had opened the third seal, I heard the third beast say, Come and see. And I beheld, and lo a black horse; and he that sat on him had a pair of balances in his hand. And I heard a voice in the midst of the four beasts say, A measure of wheat for a penny, and three measures of barley for a penny; and see thou hurt not the oil and the wine. (Revelation 6:5–6)

This horse was sent out to keep things fair in the world. What I mean by that is it keeps the cost of things within range of pay. I do not know what percentage of farms only grow wheat in the States, but let us say around 10 percent. Just figures, but if these farmers wanted to charge so much that it costs a hundred dollars for a loaf of bread, hardly anyone would ever buy bread or, better said, could afford to buy bread.

This keeps a fair balance in the world. And yes, this coun- try we live in needs the rest of the world as well as they need us.

And when he had opened the fourth seal, I heard the voice of the fourth beast say, Come and see. And I looked, and behold a pale horse: and his name that sat on him was Death, and Hell fol- lowed with him. And power was given unto them over the fourth part of the earth, to kill with sword, and with hunger, and with death, and with the beasts of the earth. (Revelation 6:7–8)

Now we need to think about this for a minute. This death is a spiritual death. It is not a physical death. Remember in the last book we showed that we are in hell now? We are constantly walking in the fire. That fire is chastisement coming from our Father, but most do not understand that, and it causes all kinds of pains that can be related to burning.

And when he had opened the fifth seal, I saw under the altar the souls of them that were slain for the word of God, and for the testimony which they held: And they cried with a loud voice, say- ing, How long, O Lord, holy and true, dost thou not judge and avenge our blood on them that dwell on the earth? And white robes were given unto every one of them; and it was said unto them, that they should rest yet for a little season, until their fellowservants also and their brethren, that should be killed as they were, should be ful- filled. (Revelation 6:9–11)

This here is where we need to remember we are hearing what they are saying in heaven. Remember we just showed that Jesus did this once before. That was at the very beginning. I believe these are the souls in which are on that mountain we showed in Ezekiel 40–46.

JESUS IS HERE

And I beheld when he had opened the sixth seal, and, lo, there was a great earthquake; and the sun became black as sackcloth of hair, and the moon became as blood; And the stars of heaven fell unto the earth, even as a fig tree casteth her untimely figs, when she is shaken of a mighty wind. And the heaven departed as a scroll when it is rolled together; and every mountain and island were moved out of their places. (Revelation 6:12–14)

Remember the stars in which came to the earth when Satan was cast out of heaven? Revelation 12:4, “**And his tail drew the third part of the stars of heaven, and did cast them to the earth:** and the dragon stood before the woman which was ready to be delivered, for to devour her child as soon as it was born.” This is how it began.

Yes, I have shown you all that I am Jesus Christ that appeared once in the earth in the end of the world. But we need to remember it is happening in earth as it is in heaven. I am a man in the flesh still and have not been made perfect yet. I took part in the first resurrection, and I am not sure of how many more has or will be, for only a remnant will be saved. This is where we need to realize that this entire earth is covered with the walking dead. I was dead but still alive. Then I died and am still alive. Let us just listen to a few times of when we can hear this.

And you hath he quickened, who were dead in trespasses and sins; **Wherein in time past ye walked according to the course of this world, according to the prince of the power of the air, the spirit that now worketh in the children of disobedience:** Among whom also we all had our conversation in times past in the lusts of our flesh, fulfilling the desires of the flesh and of the mind; and were by nature the children of wrath, even as others. But God, who is rich in mercy, for his great love wherewith he loved us, **Even when**

we were dead in sins, hath quickened us together with Christ, (by grace ye are saved;) And hath raised us up together, and made us sit together in heavenly places in Christ Jesus. (Ephesians 2:1–6)

This is where a lot of people think they will be raptured. No, I wasn't raptured, nor do I want to be. I resurrected out of Egypt, the spiritual waters that cover the entire earth. Remember God is working a works that no man will believe. This world reads the Bible carnally and thinks that God physically put his son to death. I described how I gave up living in this world but yet stayed alive. That is why Jesus said what he did in John 4:23–24, "But the hour cometh, and now is, when the true worshippers shall worship the Father in spirit and in truth: for the Father seeketh such to worship him. God is a Spirit: and they that worship him must worship him in spirit and in truth."

We need to be looking at some areas in Revelation that are talking about when this was all set up. Now remember we are hearing what they are saying in heaven. So, I ask that you try to imagine yourself to be up in heaven, looking down on the earth as you hear this. "And I stood upon the sand of the sea, and saw a beast rise up out of the sea, having seven heads and ten horns, and upon his horns ten crowns, and upon his heads the name of blasphemy. And the beast which I saw was like unto a leopard, and his feet were as the feet of a bear, and his mouth as the mouth of a lion: and the dragon gave him his power, and his seat, and great authority" (Revelation 13:1–2). How many continents are on this planet? Seven continents, or seven heads.

Now let us venture to the book of Genesis.

In the beginning God created the heaven and the earth. And the earth was without form, and void; and darkness was upon the face of the deep. And the Spirit of God moved upon the face of the waters. And God said, Let there be light: and there was light. And God saw the light, that it was good: and God

JESUS IS HERE

divided the light from the darkness. And God called the light Day, and the darkness he called Night. And the evening and the morning were the first day. And God said, Let there be a firmament in the midst of the waters, and let it divide the waters from the waters. And God made the firmament, and divided the waters which were under the firmament from the waters which were above the firmament: and it was so. And God called the firmament Heaven. And the evening and the morning were the second day. And God said, Let the waters under the heaven be gathered together unto one place, **and let the dry land appear: and it was so. And God called the dry land Earth; and the gathering together of the waters called he Seas:** and God saw that it was good. And God said, Let the earth bring forth grass, the herb yielding seed, and the fruit tree yielding fruit after his kind, whose seed is in itself, upon the earth: and it was so. And the earth brought forth grass, and herb yielding seed after his kind, and the tree yielding fruit, whose seed was in itself, after his kind: and God saw that it was good. And the evening and the morning were the third day. (Genesis 1:1–13)

Notice how the earth was without form and nothing but water in the very beginning. Then the seven continents divided the waters? Obviously, we cannot see these heads, for they are spiritual.

And I saw one of his heads as it were wounded to death; and his deadly wound was healed: and all the world wondered after the beast. And they worshipped the dragon which gave power unto the beast: and they worshipped the beast, saying, Who is like unto the beast? who is able to make war with him? And there was given unto him a mouth speaking great things

and blasphemies; and power was given unto him to continue forty and two months. And he opened his mouth in blasphemy against God, to blaspheme his name, and his tabernacle, and them that dwell in heaven. And it was given unto him to make war with the saints, and to overcome them: and power was given him over all kindreds, and tongues, and nations. And all that dwell upon the earth shall worship him, whose names are not written in the book of life of the Lamb slain from the foundation of the world. If any man have an ear, let him hear. (Revelation 13:3–9)

Now I have been sitting here and looking over everything and trying to figure out how to get this all in here, and I feel I was told, “Do not worry about getting all of it in, just show some of your understanding,” so that is what I am going to do. There is no way I will understand everything perfectly, but it is the desire I have to keep learning. So, now we need to look at Revelation 8:7, “The first angel sounded, and there followed hail and fire mingled with blood, and they were cast upon the earth: and the third part of trees was burnt up, and all green grass was burnt up.” At this time, we are going to show a Google search to see how much of the earth’s landmass is desert. Most of the world’s surface is covered in water, in the form of oceans. The remaining landmass of earth amounts to approximately 29 percent of the surface. Of this remaining 29 percent, deserts of all types constitute an estimated 33 percent, or one-third, of the earth’s total landmass. This has already been done.

Now let us look at the flood in Revelation 12:15–16, “And the serpent cast out of his mouth water as a flood after the woman, that he might cause her to be carried away of the flood. And the earth helped the woman, and the earth opened her mouth, and swallowed up the flood which the dragon cast out of his mouth.” I believe that this is the same flood as the flood of Noah. Remember our Father is the creator of the serpent also. This is not me saying that our Father is

JESUS IS HERE

Satan but rather saying that our Father told the serpent to do this just like He told Satan he could do bad things unto Job except take his life.

There was a man in the land of Uz, whose name was Job; and that man was perfect and upright, and one that feared God, and eschewed evil. And there were born unto him seven sons and three daughters. His substance also was seven thousand sheep, and three thousand camels, and five hundred yoke of oxen, and five hundred she asses, and a very great household; so that this man was the greatest of all the men of the east. And his sons went and feasted in their houses, every one his day; and sent and called for their three sisters to eat and to drink with them. And it was so, when the days of their feasting were gone about, that Job sent and sanctified them, and rose up early in the morning, and offered burnt offerings according to the number of them all: for Job said, It may be that my sons have sinned, and cursed God in their hearts. Thus did Job continually. Now there was a day when the sons of God came to present themselves before the Lord, and Satan came also among them. And the Lord said unto Satan, Whence comest thou? Then Satan answered the Lord, and said, From going to and fro in the earth, and from walking up and down in it. And the Lord said unto Satan, Hast thou considered my servant Job, that there is none like him in the earth, a perfect and an upright man, one that feareth God, and escheweth evil? Then Satan answered the Lord, and said, Doth Job fear God for nought? Hast not thou made an hedge about him, and about his house, and about all that he hath on every side? thou hast blessed the work of his hands, and his substance is increased in the land. But put forth thine hand now, and touch all that he hath, and he will curse thee to

thy face. And the Lord said unto Satan, Behold, **all that he hath is in thy power; only upon him- self put not forth thine hand.** So Satan went forth from the presence of the Lord. And there was a day when his sons and his daughters were eating and drinking wine in their eldest brother's house: And there came a messenger unto Job, and said, The oxen were plowing, and the asses feeding beside them: And the Sabeans fell upon them, and took them away; yea, they have slain the servants with the edge of the sword; and I only am escaped alone to tell thee. While he was yet speaking, there came also another, and said, The fire of God is fallen from heaven, and hath burned up the sheep, and the servants, and consumed them; and I only am escaped alone to tell thee. While he was yet speaking, there came also another, and said, The Chaldeans made out three bands, and fell upon the camels, and have carried them away, yea, and slain the servants with the edge of the sword; and I only am escaped alone to tell thee. While he was yet speaking, there came also another, and said, Thy sons and thy daughters were eating and drinking wine in their eldest brother's house: And, behold, there came a great wind from the wilderness, and smote the four corners of the house, and it fell upon the young men, and they are dead; and I only am escaped alone to tell thee. Then Job arose, and rent his mantle, and shaved his head, and fell down upon the ground, and worshipped, And said, Naked came I out of my mother's womb, and naked shall I return thither: the Lord gave, and the Lord hath taken away; blessed be the name of the Lord. In all this Job sinned not, nor charged God foolishly. (Job 1:1-22)

JESUS IS HERE

Again there was a day when the sons of God came to present themselves before the Lord, and Satan came also among them to present himself before the Lord. And the Lord said unto Satan, From whence comest thou? And Satan answered the Lord, and said, From going to and fro in the earth, and from walking up and down in it. And the Lord said unto Satan, Hast thou considered my servant Job, that there is none like him in the earth, a perfect and an upright man, one that feareth God, and escheweth evil? and still he holdeth fast his integrity, although thou movedst me against him, to destroy him without cause. And Satan answered the Lord, and said, Skin for skin, yea, all that a man hath will he give for his life. But put forth thine hand now, and touch his bone and his flesh, and he will curse thee to thy face. **And the Lord said unto Satan, Behold, he is in thine hand; but save his life.** So went Satan forth from the presence of the Lord, and smote Job with sore boils from the sole of his foot unto his crown. And he took him a potsherd to scrape himself withal; and he sat down among the ashes. Then said his wife unto him, Dost thou still retain thine integrity? curse God, and die. But he said unto her, Thou speakest as one of the foolish women speaketh. What? shall we receive good at the hand of God, and shall we not receive evil? In all this did not Job sin with his lips. Now when Job's three friends heard of all this evil that was come upon him, they came every one from his own place; Eliphaz the Temanite, and Bildad the Shuhite, and Zophar the Naamathite: for they had made an appointment together to come to mourn with him and to comfort him. And when they lifted up their eyes afar off, and knew him not, they lifted up their voice, and wept; and they rent every one his mantle, and sprinkled

dust upon their heads toward heaven. So they sat down with him upon the ground seven days and seven nights, and none spake a word unto him: for they saw that his grief was very great. (Job 2:1–13)

I would have to place the entire book of Job for you all to get the full understanding, but you can surely see that our Father is the boss of Satan as well. Our Father is the King of all kings and has the utmost authority to do what He pleases to do so that we will turn back to Him.

This is something our Father showed me as I was writing this book, so I probably will not be painting the picture as clear as I should. So, please ask our Father for help in understanding this better as you read, for He is the ultimate teacher. This is why it is so important that we listen to all of the Bible and not just bits and pieces. We all know how the Jesus told the disciples that he would make them fishermen to men, right? Matthew 4:18–19, “And Jesus, walking by the sea of Galilee, saw two brethren, Simon called Peter, and Andrew his brother, **casting a net into the sea:** for they were fishers. **And he saith unto them, Follow me, and I will make you fishers of men.**” This is exactly what has been done. In the last book, we showed that I believe the disciples are spirits. Just showing one area, for more will be covered later. “And when his disciples James and John saw this, they said, Lord, wilt thou that we command fire to come down from heaven, and consume them, even as Elias did? **But he turned, and rebuked them, and said, Ye know not what manner of spirit ye are of**” (Luke 9:54–55). We have seen that we are in deep waters, right? “**Egypt riseth up like a flood, and his waters are moved like the rivers; and he saith, I will go up, and will cover the earth;** I will destroy the city and the inhabitants thereof” (Jeremiah 46:8).

Now lifting yourself up into the clouds again looking down on the earth, try to visualize the earth being one great big sea. We are all just fish of some sort in a spiritual realm. Remember in the last book how we lifted ourselves up and had seen the body of the son of God covering the entire earth with almost 8 billion functioning body

JESUS IS HERE

parts? Now try to look into this water and see all the kinds of fish swimming around. Remember we are in their image. These fish are all kinds of colors, shapes, sizes, and they all have different attitudes. You know, like a shark is always looking for its next meal, but a dolphin is always playing. Then you have the fish that are very colorful and beautiful, but yet there are some that are just plain and simple. But for the better part, they all get along.

Now let us listen to a few times that our Father talks about the nets that are catching people.

The burden of Egypt. Behold, the Lord rideth upon a swift cloud, and shall come into Egypt: and the idols of Egypt shall be moved at his presence, and the heart of Egypt shall melt in the midst of it. And I will set the Egyptians against the Egyptians: and they shall fight every one against his brother, and every one against his neighbour; city against city, and kingdom against kingdom. And the spirit of Egypt shall fail in the midst thereof; and I will destroy the counsel thereof: **and they shall seek to the idols, and to the charmers, and to them that have familiar spirits, and to the wizards.** And the Egyptians will I give over into the hand of a cruel lord; and a fierce king shall rule over them, saith the Lord, the Lord of hosts. And the waters shall fail from the sea, and the river shall be wasted and dried up. And they shall turn the rivers far away; and the brooks of defence shall be emptied and dried up: the reeds and flags shall wither. The paper reeds by the brooks, by the mouth of the brooks, and every thing sown by the brooks, shall wither, be driven away, and be no more. The fishers also shall mourn, **and all they that cast angle into the brooks shall lament, and they that spread nets upon the waters shall languish.** (Isaiah 19:1–8)

Remember how Egypt is as waters that cover the earth? Why would our Father do this with those that have familiar spirits and wizards? Because they do not turn to Him with their whole heart, soul, and mind.

And it came to pass in the eleventh year, in the first day of the month, that the word of the Lord came unto me, saying, Son of man, because that Tyrus hath said against Jerusalem, Aha, she is broken that was the gates of the people: she is turned unto me: I shall be replenished, now she is laid waste: Therefore thus saith the Lord God; Behold, I am against thee, O Tyrus, and will cause many nations to come up against thee, as the sea causeth his waves to come up. And they shall destroy the walls of Tyrus, and break down her towers: I will also scrape her dust from her, and make her like the top of a rock. **It shall be a place for the spreading of nets in the midst of the sea: for I have spoken it, saith the Lord God: and it shall become a spoil to the nations.** (Ezekiel 26:1-5)

When we are listening here, we can hear that this not actually water, but yet shall be a place for spreading of nets in the midst of the sea. This is where I believe people cast their own nets of a sorts. What I mean is like when you go to a big gathering of some sorts, we can usually see people in their own little groups, why? Are not we all made by the same Father? Do we not we all have the same blood? Do not we all breathe the same air? Do not we all walk on the same dry earth? But yet people tend to only hang with people that dress alike, act alike, and look alike. Is your net going to become a snare?

Now let us listen to when our Father tells us that He will put hooks in the jaws of some.

In the tenth year, in the tenth month, in the twelfth day of the month, the word of the Lord came unto

JESUS IS HERE

me, saying, Son of man, set thy face against Pharaoh king of Egypt, and prophesy against him, and against all Egypt: Speak, and say, Thus saith the Lord God; Behold, I am against thee, Pharaoh king of Egypt, the great dragon that lieth in the midst of his rivers, which hath said, My river is mine own, and I have made it for myself. **But I will put hooks in thy jaws, and I will cause the fish of thy rivers to stick unto thy scales, and I will bring thee up out of the midst of thy rivers, and all the fish of thy rivers shall stick unto thy scales.** And I will leave thee thrown into the wilderness, thee and all the fish of thy rivers: thou shalt fall upon the open fields; thou shalt not be brought together, nor gathered: I have given thee for meat to the beasts of the field and to the fowls of the heaven. (Ezekiel 29:1-5)

And the word of the Lord came unto me, saying, Son of man, set thy face against Gog, the land of Magog, the chief prince of Meshech and Tubal, and prophesy against him, And say, Thus saith the Lord God; Behold, I am against thee, O Gog, the chief prince of Meshech and Tubal: **And I will turn thee back, and put hooks into thy jaws, and I will bring thee forth, and all thine army, horses and horsemen, all of them clothed with all sorts of armour, even a great company with bucklers and shields, all of them handling swords.** (Ezekiel 38:1-4)

These are spiritual hooks, and we are spiritual fish being fished for. As we heard, we even cast our own nets and get stuck in our own nets. It is all on how we treat our Father and other people.

Notice how there are 153 fish in this net? I believe we are being told of how many the remnant is. Remember we are fish, and this is the only time the Bible mentions the number of how many fish are in

the net. These fish are also called as great fish. At the same time, we need to remember that one man can represent a group of people, so this could be 153 groups of people as one. But mainly focus on how Judas is there. He hanged himself, if we will recall.

When the morning was come, all the chief priests and elders of the people took counsel against Jesus to put him to death: And when they had bound him, they led him away, and delivered him to Pontius Pilate the governor. Then Judas, which had betrayed him, when he saw that he was condemned, repented himself, and brought again the thirty pieces of silver to the chief priests and elders, Saying, I have sinned in that I have betrayed the innocent blood. And they said, What is that to us? see thou to that. **And he cast down the pieces of silver in the temple, and departed, and went and hanged himself.** (Matthew 27:1-5)

Now we know that Jesus told the other disciples that he was going to make them fishermen of men. Our Bible does not tell us what profession Judas had, but we can know that he was a disciple, so we can figure he too is a fisherman of men. And he is casting his net just as the others are. So now let us listen to a couple times that our Father tells us that He has made the wicked man for the evil day.

The preparations of the heart in man, and the answer of the tongue, is from the Lord. All the ways of a man are clean in his own eyes; but the Lord weigheth the spirits. Commit thy works unto the Lord, and thy thoughts shall be established. **The Lord hath made all things for himself: yea, even the wicked for the day of evil.** Every one that is proud in heart is an abomination to the Lord: though hand join in hand, he shall not be unpunished. (Proverbs 16:1-5)

That the wicked is reserved to the day of destruction? they shall be brought forth to the day of wrath.

(Job 21:30)

Notice how Jesus said it shouldn't matter to the other disciples if Judas was there till the end? How big is his net?

Now this is where we need to be listening to Revelation 8:10– 11, “And the third angel sounded, and there fell a great star from heaven, burning as it were a lamp, and it fell upon the third part of the rivers, and upon the fountains of waters; **And the name of the star is called Wormwood: and the third part of the waters became wormwood; and many men died of the waters, because they were made bitter.**” These waters are the waters in which we are in. These waters have already been turned into blood.

And I heard a great voice out of the temple saying to the seven angels, Go your ways, and pour out the vials of the wrath of God upon the earth. And the first went, and poured out his vial upon the earth; and there fell a noisome and grievous sore upon the men which had the mark of the beast, and upon them which worshipped his image. And the second angel poured out his vial upon the sea; and it became as the blood of a dead man: and every living soul died in the sea. (Revelation 16:1–3)

Remember how Jesus said we cannot be his disciple if we do not eat his flesh and drink his blood?

Then Jesus said unto them, Verily, verily, I say unto you, Except ye eat the flesh of the Son of man, and drink his blood, ye have no life in you. Whoso eateth my flesh, and drinketh my blood, hath eternal life; and I will raise him up at the last day. For my flesh is meat indeed, and my blood is drink indeed. He that

DAVID JENKINS

eateth my flesh, and drinketh my blood, dwelleth in me, and I in him. As the living Father hath sent me, and I live by the Father: so he that eateth me, even he shall live by me. (John 6:53–57)

That is a spiritual flesh consuming our minds and a spiritual blood of love for all of mankind. Now when we don't seek God with all of our heart, soul, and mind and/or love our neighbor as ourselves, we are eating of flesh and drinking of blood that will not save us.

Remember the water that Jesus said if we drink of, we will never thirst again?

Jesus answered and said unto her, Whosoever drinketh of this water shall thirst again: But whosoever drinketh of the water that I shall give him shall never thirst; but the water that I shall give him shall be in him a well of water springing up into everlasting life. The woman saith unto him, Sir, give me this water, that I thirst not, neither come hither to draw. (John 4:13–15)

Now one last thing to bring this chapter to an end; we are told that the end of all things is at hand. "But the end of all things is at hand: be ye therefore sober, and watch unto prayer" (1 Peter 4:7). If the end of all things is at hand, wouldn't that also mean the end of the thousand-year reign? It is not something that is coming at the end, for we are living in the reign now, and that too is getting ready to end. Now that you are learning that you are reigning with Christ and have been here for some time now, we ask, how are you doing your part of being a priest of God and Christ? Remember Christ never even thought about changing anything of God, our Father.

REINCARNATION



This chapter will be rather short; however, there are a few things that need to be shown in a short chapter so that everyone can realize that this is something that is very real. This was covered in the last book, in the chapter “The Son of God,” but I feel our Father is telling me to do a chapter just on this topic. There are many that have told me that they are not sure if this is real. I have been taught by our Father that this is very real and is something that really needs to be understood.

The first thing we need to realize is that our Father said that the covenant is good for a thousand generations. There are many that believe that we are in the new covenant now, but that is far from what our Bibles teach us. So, let us look at a couple of times that we are told that the old covenant is for a thousand generations. “And shewing mercy unto thousands of them that love me, and keep my commandments” (Exodus 20:6). **“Know therefore that the Lord thy God, he is God, the faithful God, which keepeth covenant and mercy with them that love him and keep his commandments to a thousand generations”** (Deuteronomy 7:9). Notice how we are being told that God keepeth covenant and mercy with them that love Him and keep His commandments. He is not saying He will keep the covenant and mercy if you do not keep His commandments.

Now before diving into this too deep, we need to understand that this covenant is not flawed or done wrong. Many think this because, yes, our Bible does say this. So now let us listen to what we are being told.

But now hath he obtained a more excellent ministry, by how much also he is the mediator of a better covenant, which was established upon better promises. 7 For if that first covenant had been faultless, then should no place have been sought for the second. 8 For finding fault with them, he saith, Behold, the days come, saith the Lord, when I will make a new covenant with the house of Israel and with the house of Judah: 9 Not according to the covenant that I made with their fathers in the day when I took them by the hand to lead them out of the land of Egypt; because they continued not in my covenant, and I regarded them not, saith the Lord. 10 For this is the covenant that I will make with the house of Israel after those days, saith the Lord; I will put my laws into their mind, and write them in their hearts: and I will be to them a God, and they shall be to me a people: 11 And they shall not teach every man his neighbour, and every man his brother, saying, Know the Lord: for all shall know me, from the least to the greatest. 12 For I will be merciful to their unrighteousness, and their sins and their iniquities will I remember no more. 13 In that he saith, A new covenant, he hath made the first old. Now that which decayeth and waxeth old is ready to vanish away. (Hebrews 8:6–13)

First thing we are noticing is that the old covenant did have a fault. However, notice in verse 8 how it starts out for finding fault with them? Right away we should be realizing that our Father is perfect in everything He has done, doing, and will do. There is absolutely no way this fault is with Him. As we can hear, the fault is with them. Remember we are hearing conversations being held in heaven. The fault is mankind. That is the “them” that we are hearing. Our Father’s perfection is so much more profound than man will ever imagine. His righteousness exceeds the comprehension of man. The fault of the

covenant is with man and not with the covenant itself, nor our Father. Then we need to realize that we are not in the new covenant, for we are still learning and still teaching. Notice how in verse 11 that all will know the Father, and no one will have to ask anyone of our Father.

Now that we should be having a much better understanding about that, we need to look at how long a generation is. But before we do that, let us understand that when our Father said the covenant is good for a thousand generations, that means no one is getting out of here before this time span is finished. If there are some that are thinking that our Father will allow some out early, then you need to realize that our Father cannot lie, and He will not change.

“For I am the Lord, I change not; therefore ye sons of Jacob are not consumed” (Malachi 3:6). “The days of our years are threescore years and ten; and if by reason of strength they be fourscore years, yet is their strength labour and sorrow; for it is soon cut off, and we fly away” (Psalm 90:10). This is telling us right here that we live to be seventy to eighty years of age. Then we fly away. This is our soul going somewhere else, back into captivity.

Now we need to venture into this for a minute. This is where we need to realize that there are many planets in our Father’s world. There are many people that believe that mankind is the only world, but this too is because people do not take the time to try and get to know who our Father is and what He is all about. “Hath in these last days spoken unto us by his Son, whom he hath appointed heir of all things, **by whom also he made the worlds**” (Hebrews 1:2). We are being told right here that there are more worlds than just the one we are on. But to understand this fully, we need to be listening to what Jesus said. “And other sheep I have, which are not of this fold: them also I must bring, and they shall hear my voice; and there shall be one fold, and one shepherd” (John 10:16). This fold is a different world. These are souls that have been brought here from some other world. They haven’t been here for the full thousand generations. They were in some other world, heard the same voice that I hear, and came here.

This is what Jesus was talking about in the parable about the workers who worked all day and got paid the same for people that

worked just a couple of hours or so. Now for wording to be exact, let us listen to the parable.

For the kingdom of heaven is like unto a man that is an householder, which went out early in the morning to hire labourers into his vineyard. And when he had agreed with the labourers for a penny a day, he sent them into his vineyard. And he went out about the third hour, and saw others standing idle in the marketplace, And said unto them; Go ye also into the vineyard, and whatsoever is right I will give you. And they went their way. Again he went out about the sixth and ninth hour, and did likewise. And about the eleventh hour he went out, and found others standing idle, and saith unto them, Why stand ye here all the day idle? They say unto him, Because no man hath hired us. He saith unto them, Go ye also into the vineyard; and whatsoever is right, that shall ye receive. So when even was come, the lord of the vineyard saith unto his steward, Call the labourers, and give them their hire, beginning from the last unto the first. And when they came that were hired about the eleventh hour, they received every man a penny. But when the first came, they supposed that they should have received more; and they likewise received every man a penny. And when they had received it, they murmured against the goodman of the house, Saying, These last have wrought but one hour, and thou hast made them equal unto us, which have borne the burden and heat of the day. But he answered one of them, and said, Friend, I do thee no wrong: didst not thou agree with me for a penny? Take that thine is, and go thy way: I will give unto this last, even as unto thee. Is it not lawful for me to do what I will with mine own? Is thine eye evil, because I am good? (Matthew 20:1–15)

JESUS IS HERE

We are told that it does not matter how long or how many generations some are here for. If some have only been here for three generations or one thousand generations, everyone will be rewarded for his or her spiritual works. If some have been here for the entire one thousand generations or more, and some have been brought here from another world to serve a couple of generations, then they are still treated equally. If they do right, they will be rewarded the same, but if they do wrong, they will suffer just the same. Our Father respects or favors no one. This is why I believe we are told not to seek other spirits. **“Regard not them that have familiar spirits, neither seek after wizards, to be defiled by them: I am the Lord your God”** (Leviticus 19:31). I believe that these are souls that have clung on to our Father somehow or another and have been brought here. I believe the world in which they came from is ahead of us or something in time. I know that I will not under any circumstances try to seek anyone or anything other than our Father, for He brings me more than I could ever ask for. And I know for sure that when He teaches me, I can't go wrong as long as I am listening to Him.

Now let us listen to what Jesus said about the regeneration of the son of man. “Then answered Peter and said unto him, Behold, we have forsaken all, and followed thee; what shall we have therefore? And Jesus said unto them, Verily I say unto you, That ye which have followed me, **in the regeneration when the Son of man shall sit in the throne of his glory, ye also shall sit upon twelve thrones, judging the twelve tribes of Israel**” (Matthew 19:27–28). Then listen to what Jesus tells the disciples about bringing things back to memory. “But the Comforter, which is the Holy Ghost, whom the Father will send in my name, he shall teach you all things, and bring all things to your remembrance, whatsoever I have said unto you” (John 14:26). Now do we really think that Jesus was referring to how they needed to remember in just a few weeks? Now let us listen to how our Father is talking about the regeneration of all. “But after that the kindness and love of God our Saviour toward man appeared, **5 Not by works of righteousness which we have done, but according to his mercy he saved us, by the washing of regeneration, and renewing of the Holy**

Ghost” (Titus 3:4–5). Now if we only live one life, then why would we be, being told that there is going to be a washing of regeneration and renewing of the Holy Ghost? Once you receive the Holy Ghost, it is not like it goes away and comes back in a week or two. This was explained in the last book. We will be learning of how my mom and dad are now one flesh in the body of my granddaughter.

This is where we want to show that Jesus was saying himself that there are going to be souls in which will not die until they see the son of man coming into his kingdom. “For what is a man profited, if he shall gain the whole world, and lose his own soul? or what shall a man give in exchange for his soul? For the Son of man shall come in the glory of his Father with his angels; and then he shall reward every man according to his works. Verily I say unto you, **There be some standing here, which shall not taste of death, till they see the Son of man coming in his kingdom**” (Matthew 16:26–28). So here is where we ask you this: do you realize he was telling these people of how things would be then, or at the time of the end of the world?

Now we need to be listening to a bit in the book of Job, but before we do, I want to point out something. I do not pay attention to genealogy. I do not worry about anything in the past. What is done in the past is already done and can’t be changed. I do not try and figure what heritage I come from, for I know without a doubt that we all came from our Father. “Neither give heed to fables and endless genealogies, which minister questions, rather than godly edifying which is in faith: so do” (1 Timothy 1:4). I do not know exactly when the King James Bible was written. I think sometime around the 1500s or 1600s. That is all we really need to know for this next illustration. Okay, I just did a Google search, and I guess the King James Bible was originally written in 1611. So, we know without a doubt that the life of Job was at least some time before that, right?

So now let us listen to a part of Job 19.

Why do ye persecute me as God, and are not satisfied
with my flesh? Oh that my words were now written!
oh that they were printed in a book! That they were

JESUS IS HERE

graven with an iron pen and lead in the rock for ever!
For I know that my redeemer liveth, **and that he shall stand at the latter day upon the earth: And though after my skin worms destroy this body, yet in my flesh shall I see God: Whom I shall see for myself, and mine eyes shall behold, and not another; though my reins be consumed within me.** But ye should say, Why persecute we him, seeing the root of the matter is found in me? Be ye afraid of the sword: for wrath bringeth the punishments of the sword, that ye may know there is a judgment. (Job 19:22–29)

Now we all can know for certain that Job's life was written about a long time ago. We know for certain that it had to be some time before 1611. But yet, Job states that after his body will be buried and eaten by the worms, He tells us that he will see his redeemer in his flesh. He is telling us that he knows that even though he will die and be buried, he will be alive when Jesus is back at the latter days. So, to this I will say that I have seen him and even maybe talked with him. Neither I nor he knows or remember anything from our last lives.

This is where we need to look at Ecclesiastes 1:8–11.

All things are full of labour; man cannot utter it: the eye is not satisfied with seeing, nor the ear filled with hearing. The thing that hath been, it is that which shall be; and that which is done is that which shall be done: and there is no new thing under the sun. Is there any thing whereof it may be said, See, this is new? it hath been already of old time, which was before us. There is no remembrance of former things; neither shall there be any remembrance of things that are to come with those that shall come after.

Our Father is telling us right here that we cannot remember things from our past lives. Neither will we remember of what is to

come. Now how can we remember of what is to come if we haven't already lived the future in some way or another?

Now if anyone does a web search to see cave drawings from ten thousand years ago, you will find out that there are pictures well over a few thousand years old showing airplanes and such. This is because they have had them here before. Remember our Father told us there is no remembrance of things. There is nothing new under the sun. This is telling us that at some time in the past, there were planes and such. We have no idea of what time in history we are in. Remember we have showed that we are in the thousand-year reign now. As we showed in the last book, the so-called lost books of the Bible are from a different one-thousand-generation cycle. Our souls were made by our Father, and our Father never dies. So, neither do our souls. This is just a humongous revolving circle. We will keep coming and going into and from other worlds until each person learns how to love in the same manner that our Father loves us.

Now there is something that I want to bring up that is talked about in our Bibles, but yet it is not talked about in our Bibles. What I am talking about is the Internet. Notice how we are told that there is no new thing under the sun? If there is no new thing, wouldn't that have to mean that the Internet is not new? They must have had it sometime in the past. Now we are going to show something in the Bible in which I myself can relate to the Internet.

And the whole earth was of one language, and of one speech. And it came to pass, as they journeyed from the east, that they found a plain in the land of Shinar; and they dwelt there. And they said one to another, Go to, let us make brick, and burn them thoroughly. And they had brick for stone, and slime had they for mortar. And they said, Go to, let us build us a city and a tower, whose top may reach unto heaven; and let us make us a name, lest we be scattered abroad upon the face of the whole earth. And the Lord came down to see the city and the tower, which the children of

JESUS IS HERE

men builded. And the Lord said, Behold, the people is one, and they have all one language; and this they begin to do: and now nothing will be restrained from them, which they have imagined to do. Go to, let us go down, and there confound their language, that they may not understand one another's speech. So the Lord scattered them abroad from thence upon the face of all the earth: and they left off to build the city. Therefore is the name of it called Babel; because the Lord did there confound the language of all the earth: and from thence did the Lord scatter them abroad upon the face of all the earth. (Genesis 11:1-9)

Now I realize that we are not all of one language; however, we can communicate with other countries pretty easy. I have even shown you all how I use Google and web searches on here. Whatever I want to know, research is at my fingertips. My belief is that this is pretty much as it was then. Then when it gets to the day our Father says it is enough, that is when He will scatter all of our souls again, and we start over. This is the end of the world. Or the end of the thousand generations.

Now we are going to be learning of how I know without a shadow of a doubt that my granddaughter is my mom and dad as one person now. To understand that, we need to remember that our Father said that the covenant is for a thousand generations. We know that not one person has ever lived that long and will never live that long, so what could He mean? This is where we start to connect the washing away and the regeneration. My dad passed in 2003. My mom passed in 2016. My dad, after he passed, went to a level just above us in which he was at some kind of rest. My mom, however, didn't pass until October 2016. Now our Bibles tell us that when a man and woman twain together, they become one flesh. Let us look at Genesis 2:24, "Therefore shall a man leave his father and his mother, and shall cleave unto his wife: and they shall be one flesh." Now when they were both alive and together, they were being judged as one for how they loved

each other and all the people they came in contact with. They paid the bills as one, they took care of the house as one, they raised the children as one. The two of them together became one flesh.

Because our Father did not count them as separate people, they both had to finish whatever roles they needed to fulfill while yet on earth. Now my dad passed when he was in his early sixties. Now I am thinking this was his second or third generation of being in captivity from whatever sin he may have committed against our Father two or three lives ago. We are told that our Father will visit our iniquities to the third and fourth generations. “Thou shalt not bow down thyself unto them, nor serve them: for I the Lord thy God am a jealous God, visiting the iniquity of the fathers upon the children unto the third and fourth generation of them that hate me” (Deuteronomy 5:9). Now I will not show all the details, for I really have a pet peeve about repeating myself. But we are told that if we despise some people, our Father will send us to the land of those we despise. So, if my dad really despised a certain kind of person, this is where our Father will send his soul. Then we just learned that a generation is seventy to eighty years long. Then we listen to Psalm 55:23, “But thou, O God, shalt bring them down into the pit of destruction: bloody and deceitful men shall not live out half their days; but I will trust in thee.” Now my dad only lived to be sixty-three, so I am thinking he was living out his third generation because he did not make it till the full minimum of seventy years. His first generation after he did this transgression against our Father, he only lived to be thirty or forty years of age. Then a little longer the next life and so on. He died of cancer, which was brought on by our Father. He had me show how all that in the first book he had me write so I will not show it here.

Now my mom lived to be seventy-three, so now that Dad had already passed, our Father joined these two souls back together because they were one flesh. This is what Ephesians 5:31–32 says, “For this cause shall a man leave his father and mother, and shall be joined unto his wife, and they two shall be one flesh. This is a great mystery: but I speak concerning Christ and the church.” Once my mom was finished fulfilling whatever role she was needed for, she

JESUS IS HERE

passed. Once this happened, our Father rejoined their souls as one. Now shortly after my mom passed, my fifteen-year-old daughter got pregnant. Do not cast that stone, for that will be held against you. It was around the beginning of June 2017; I started getting this overwhelming sensation that my granddaughter was going to be born on August 4. I called my daughter and told her, and she insisted that the doctors said August 15 and not earlier. I called several more times before August, insisting that this child would be born on the fourth. I got a call on the second of August, telling me that my daughter went to the hospital for contractions, and then sent home. It happened again on the third; then on the fourth, I got a call stating that my granddaughter had been born.

This was my dad's birthday. He was born on August 4, 1941...I think '41 is the correct year. My dad passed in 2003. My mom passed in 2016. Once both of them were finished with whatever roles they had to complete while here, they were joined back together and sent back into captivity as one flesh. This is no longer a mystery and explained better in the last book. Now that they are both back into captivity, my granddaughter will be done unto as Mom and Dad did unto others in their last life as one. This is what Jesus was talking about in Matthew 7:12, "Therefore all things whatsoever ye would that men should do to you, do ye even so to them: for this is the law and the prophets." Our Father will lead her or feed her that invisible manna in which will lead her to live wherever that soul is needed to fulfill whatever needs to be fulfilled. Can you start to understand why I stated in the last book that I marvel on what He is doing every day? He is so smart and powerful. Man can't even begin to imagine how brilliant He is.

For this cause shall a man leave his father and mother, and shall be joined unto his wife, and they two shall be one flesh. This is a great mystery: but I speak concerning Christ and the church. (Ephesians 5:31-32)

Because I am in the flesh and do not understand everything to the fullest, I must mention my other granddaughter who is sister to the one born in August 4. I mentioned in the last book that my daughter was pregnant again and that I was thinking the baby might be born on January 7, for that was my mom's birthday. However, she was born on the eighth of January at 2:56 a.m. Some days I still wonder if that is my mom. I do know that Dad was not judged until my mom passed. Then they were judged as one and sent back into captivity. I sometimes think that maybe the two granddaughters are my parents. Now they will be treated as they did unto their children. I am still more convinced that the first is Mom and Dad as one, but I am not the Father, and it is not for me to say that is a fact. I can and will say without a doubt my mom and dad's mother is my daughter.

I am making a correction here. Our Father has recently told me that my second granddaughter is my dad who was born on January 8. My mom is my first granddaughter who was born on August 4 of 2017. Now with my dad being born in '41, and my mom being born in '44, we can make sense of what it means when we hear the elder will serve the younger.

And these are the generations of Isaac, Abraham's son: Abraham begat Isaac: And Isaac was forty years old when he took Rebekah to wife, the daughter of Bethuel the Syrian of Padanaram, the sister to Laban the Syrian. And Isaac intreated the Lord for his wife, because she was barren: and the Lord was intreated of him, and Rebekah his wife conceived. And the children struggled together within her; and she said, If it be so, why am I thus? And she went to enquire of the Lord. And the Lord said unto her, Two nations are in thy womb, and two manner of people shall be separated from thy bowels; and the one people shall be stronger than the other people; **and the elder shall serve the younger.** (Genesis 25:19–23)

JESUS IS HERE

For this is the word of promise, At this time will I come, and Sarah shall have a son. And not only this; but when Rebecca also had conceived by one, even by our father Isaac; (For the children being not yet born, neither having done any good or evil, that the purpose of God according to election might stand, not of works, but of him that calleth;) It was said unto her, The elder shall serve the younger. (Romans 9:9–12)

Being as how my dad was older than my mom, my mom is my first granddaughter, Avalinn, and was born back into captivity first and born on my dad's birthday; and my dad was born second on my mom's birthday. Well, almost three hours later than on my mom's birthday. My daughter tells me that she believes that Adsila, second granddaughter, would have been born on the seventh, but she had complications. But either way, my dad is now younger than my mom, and they both are back into captivity here on earth instead of being with our Father. Now being how they are back together as one in one family, they will be done unto as they did unto others while they were together in the flesh in their last life.

Now we need to explain how our Father brought this to my attention and has now planted it "in my mind" as fact. If you have read the second book, you noticed that I had my mom and dad as one person, but at the same time, I mentioned that my daughter was pregnant again, and that it was possible that this was my other parent. This was the Father having dominion over my body, forcing me to put this in there. Shortly after this book was published, I had it put into audio format. I truly did and still do feel that there is some extremely strong meat in that book. The meat being knowledge.

When the narrator finished it, he skipped the entire section on this. I realized this when I was proof listening before being published. I didn't give it much thought for we all make mistakes, but at the same time, I found it suspicious. Now remember, each person, too, is a servant and vessel of God. Then when we wrote the third book, our Father caused me to put in the possibility again.

Now I want to note the very first time I saw my second granddaughter, I could see my dad. I told Erin, my daughter or the mother of my mom and dad, that I could see my dad. Then, as time went by, I started to notice some tendencies of her that my dad did. My dad wanted to be by himself, or better said, he was content being quiet and tuning out others when others were around. This is the way she is. When other children are around her, she doesn't mind being by herself.

As time was passing by, my daughter has been telling me about the health problems of my two granddaughters. Avalinn, the first of the two, has kidney problems. Note that this is not something that causes major problems, but at the same time, she will be dealing with this all her life. Now check this out, my mom had kidney problems all her life. Then Adsila, the second of the two, has respiratory problem. She has had these problems since birth. My dad died of lung cancer.

It was just a short time after publishing the third book that our Father started running all this through my conscience at once. And being how He is longsuffering and forgiving, He didn't give up on me. It took some time, but He finally got it through my thick skull. My mom and dad are back together as one family, with my mom now being older than my dad. And my daughter, that was their granddaughter, is now their mom.

This leads us to what has been happening with us and what happens to us in the future. This is where we need to realize that each of us have been White, Black Chinese, Japanese, Korean, and so forth. We all have been male and female. We have been here for, well, a thousand generations or lives. Our Father said this covenant is for a thousand generations, and that is exactly what He meant. This is very well explained in the last book, so we will not cover it all again. This is how our Father is justified. In the last book, we showed that we are in hell now and that we walk through fire daily. When we despise others, our Father sends us to that land so that our soul can learn what it feels like to be treated just the same as you treated them in your last life. **“Therefore all things whatsoever ye would that men should do to you, do ye even so to them: for this is the law and the prophets”** (Matthew 7:12).

JESUS IS HERE

This is where we need to listen to what is being said here. “**And Jesus, which is called Justus**, who are of the circumcision. These only are my fellowworkers unto the kingdom of God, which have been a comfort unto me” (Colossians 4:11).

Now, when our Father first breathed life into man so that man became a living soul, He also was putting that piece of Himself into each person. This piece of Himself is his son. His son can and will cause some people to be who they are. Let us imagine some who despised some gay people; in the next life, Jesus, having dominion over their body, will cause them to be gay. If someone was very greedy in their last life, Jesus, having dominion over everybody, will cause others to be greedy toward this person in his or her time of need. If a person steals from others, Jesus, having dominion over all servants, will have this person stolen from in the next life. If a person takes the life of someone, Jesus will have some servants take this person's life. And I think that life will be taken at about the same age range as the life he or she took in their last life. The list goes on forever, but we think you're getting the picture. Jesus justifies the wrong in which we do to others. No “ifs,” “ands,” or “buts.” This happens equally to each soul so the soul can learn how it feels to do this wrong to others.

Now I want to show something that our Bible does not come out and outright say. If we live these many lives, and have several different wives or husbands, doesn't that mean that several souls will be joined as one? Let me use my life for example. I know that I have been with a few women in my life. If I die tomorrow, and all of my wives do not die for another five years. When we are all joined as one, and we come back into captivity as one. Wouldn't this explain why we have some people with multiple personalities? I believe that this would be more in line with some people having multiple lives, and their soul is recalling parts of these previous lives. I believe this is exactly what it is. I also believe that there is an answer in our Bible to any question a person has. The person just really needs to have the desire to seek it out.

This leads us to what He was talking about in Hebrews 12:6–8, “For whom the Lord loveth he chasteneth, and scourgeth every son

whom he receiveth. If ye endure chastening, God dealeth with you as with sons; for what son is he whom the father chasteneth not? But if ye be without chastisement, whereof all are partakers, then are ye bastards, and not sons.” Now I know that there are a lot of people that think a bastard is a child that is born outside a man-made marriage, but this is far from the truth. Nowhere in the Bible does it talk about making a marriage legal by the law. Sex in agreement constitutes a marriage in the Bible, and yes, this is how they had many wives in the Old Testament, and we have many wives or husbands today.

I know that there are many that think that their loved ones are in heaven now, but the covenant is not over yet. Our Bible tells us that no man has been to heaven, so why does man think that some are in heaven? “And no man hath ascended up to heaven, but he that came down from heaven, even the Son of man which is in heaven” (John 3:13). I am sure that there are many who have passed but are still walking with us today. But now in a different body. Now let us listen to what we are told about a bastard in the Old Testament. “He that is wounded in the stones, or hath his privy member cut off, shall not enter into the congregation of the Lord. A bastard shall not enter into the congregation of the Lord; even to his tenth generation shall he not enter into the congregation of the Lord” (Deuteronomy 23:1–2). I showed in the chapter “Reigning with Christ” where the congregation of the Lord is. It is that simple to become a bastard: just refuse to listen to our Father. This goes a lot deeper than that though. In the last book, we showed how there are fifteen verses in the New Testament that tell us to be sober, sober minded, or to think sober. There are thirty verses alone that mention our conscience. That is because this is half the battle.

Now we need to look at couple of different things. We are told that the people of Nineveh will be brought up in judgment. “The men of Nineveh shall rise in judgment with this generation, and shall condemn it: because they repented at the preaching of Jonas; and, behold, a greater than Jonas is here” (Matthew 12:41). Are you thinking these people are still alive? Now let us listen to Ezekiel 37:1–12.

JESUS IS HERE

The hand of the Lord was upon me, and carried me out in the spirit of the Lord, and set me down in the midst of the valley which was full of bones, And caused me to pass by them round about: and, behold, there were very many in the open valley; and, lo, they were very dry. And he said unto me, Son of man, can these bones live? And I answered, O Lord God, thou knowest. Again he said unto me, Prophecy upon these bones, and say unto them, O ye dry bones, hear the word of the Lord. Thus saith the Lord God unto these bones; Behold, I will cause breath to enter into you, and ye shall live: And I will lay sinews upon you, and will bring up flesh upon you, and cover you with skin, and put breath in you, and ye shall live; and ye shall know that I am the Lord. So I prophesied as I was commanded: and as I prophesied, there was a noise, and behold a shaking, and the bones came together, bone to his bone. And when I beheld, lo, the sinews and the flesh came up upon them, and the skin covered them above: but there was no breath in them. Then said he unto me, Prophecy unto the wind, prophesy, son of man, and say to the wind, Thus saith the Lord God; Come from the four winds, O breath, and breathe upon these slain, that they may live. So I prophesied as he commanded me, and the breath came into them, and they lived, and stood up upon their feet, an exceeding great army. Then he said unto me, Son of man, these bones are the whole house of Israel: behold, they say, Our bones are dried, and our hope is lost: we are cut off for our parts. Therefore prophesy and say unto them, Thus saith the Lord God; Behold, O my people, I will open your graves, and cause you to come up out of your graves, and bring you into the land of Israel.

There are probably some that are thinking that this is about the soul that leaves an actual grave. Remember this is a vision, and the Bible is spiritual. Then listen to Jesus when he tells us that people are as graves. **“Woe unto you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! for ye are as graves which appear not, and the men that walk over them are not aware of them”** (Luke 11:44). Then listen to what we are being told in Hebrews 9:27, “And as it is appointed unto men once to die, but after this the judgment.” Now if men are once appointed to die, and men are graves, then when we think about how these bones come back to life, we realize that it is because these bones are reincarnated back into a different body.

Before I do this next section, I do need to state that I am not a doctor. I do not have any medical background at all and do not, by any means, make recommendations. This chastisement does not come by observation, just as the kingdom of God doesn't. This chastisement comes through our conscience. This is why we are told things like 1 Timothy 4:2, “Speaking lies in hypocrisy; having their conscience seared with a hot iron.” Now I know that there are many people that suffer from things like depression, anxiety, and things like that. So here is my thinking. I am also speaking from experience. When a person is depressed or something like that, could it be our Father is chastising this person? He talks to us through our conscience. I was taking antidepressants after I tried to take my life in '09. I did not feel any different when I was taking them. I actually quit taking them because they did not make me feel any different other than being a little hornier. I now know why, but at that time, I didn't have any of the knowledge I have now. When a person gets depressed, could this be because our Father is trying to tell you that you are doing something that He does not want you to do? I am not saying this is what is going on; however, I am just asking if that is what could be going on, for our Father will not tell me anything about what He wants for another person. He will only tell me what He wants or needs from me. But if our Father is trying to chastise you, and then you take these drugs and block Him out, could this now mean that you are now without chastisement? If so, this means that you become a bastard

JESUS IS HERE

and will be kept in the outer courts, as we showed in this book. Or better said in Matthew 8:11–12, “And I say unto you, That many shall come from the east and west, and shall sit down with Abraham, and Isaac, and Jacob, in the kingdom of heaven. But the children of the kingdom shall be cast out into outer darkness: there shall be weeping and gnashing of teeth.” Notice how Jesus is telling us right here that we are in the kingdom right here.

JUST AS THE DAYS OF NOAH



One of the first things I want to say is that this is going to be a very fun chapter for me. I say this because we showed you all in the last book that this world is covered in a spiritual flood just as it was covered in the days of Noah, but now I have seen this flood with my own eyes while in the flesh. Now before we dive into this, we are going to be showing what is said in John 4:23–24, **“But the hour cometh, and now is, when the true worshippers shall worship the Father in spirit and in truth: for the Father seeketh such to worship him. God is a Spirit: and they that worship him must worship him in spirit and in truth.”** I will be explaining how I have seen cities, ships, and humongous waves of water, but all of this is between four and five miles above the earth.

I feel as if I need to take the time to explain as to why I can see and hear things from the scriptures that others can't. The first thing we need to be looking at is Matthew 13:17, **“For verily I say unto you, That many prophets and righteous men have desired to see those things which ye see, and have not seen them; and to hear those things which ye hear, and have not heard them.”** “For I tell you, that many prophets and kings have desired to see those things which ye see, and have not seen them; and to hear those things which ye hear, and have not heard them” (Luke 10:24). Yes, I can see things and hear things that righteous men, prophets, and kings have desired to see and hear before but could not.

We have explained in the last book that David willingly gave up his life in this world, thinking he was going to be with our Father and Jesus in the spiritual realm of things. This was the process of me

being baptized with the Holy Ghost. This was described in detail in the third book in which our Father had me write and somewhat in the last chapter. When David did this, he was quickened with Christ.

And you hath he quickened, who were dead in trespasses and sins; Wherein in time past ye walked according to the course of this world, according to the prince of the power of the air, the spirit that now worketh in the children of disobedience: Among whom also we all had our conversation in times past in the lusts of our flesh, fulfilling the desires of the flesh and of the mind; and were by nature the children of wrath, even as others. But God, who is rich in mercy, for his great love wherewith he loved us, Even when we were dead in sins, **hath quickened us together with Christ,** (by grace ye are saved;). (Ephesians 2:1–5)

Before going on with this area, we need to be listening to how important the writings of Moses and the rest of the Old Testament are.

I am come in my Father's name, and ye receive me not: if another shall come in his own name, him ye will receive. How can ye believe, which receive honour one of another, and seek not the honour that cometh from God only? Do not think that I will accuse you to the Father: there is one that accuseth you, even Moses, in whom ye trust. **For had ye believed Moses, ye would have believed me; for he wrote of me. But if ye believe not his writings, how shall ye believe my words?** (John 5:43–47)

This is where so many people think of the Bible being about the people of the past and not relating to their very own lives. Most read the Bible as if it is a story about those of the past, and that is about as

far as they get with it. They do not allow the Bible to speak to them personally.

I want to show the first few verses in Hebrews 11.

Now faith is the substance of things hoped for, the evidence of things not seen. For by it the elders obtained a good report. Through faith we understand that the worlds were framed by the word of God, so that things which are seen were not made of things which do appear. By faith Abel offered unto God a more excellent sacrifice than Cain, **by which he obtained witness that he was righteous, God testifying of his gifts: and by it he being dead yet speaketh.** (Hebrews 11:1–4)

We all know that Cain is one of the first characters in the Bible, and even though he be dead, his spirit still talketh. Now we need to listen to what Jesus tell us in John 6:63, “It is the spirit that quickeneth; the flesh profiteth nothing: **the words that I speak unto you, they are spirit, and they are life.**”

Now I am not going to show all the details as to how I allowed the spirit of Moses lead out of Egypt, but we will really start seeing what Galatians is talking about. “Wherefore the law was our school-master to bring us unto Christ, that we might be justified by faith” (Galatians 3:24). When I first read the Bible, I immediately started to hear things that really made me feel as if it was talking about me and not just about the people of the past. These are explained in the third book. This was me hearing the spiritual words talk to me. Over the next few years, I let the spirit of Moses lead me out of Egypt. At this time, I didn’t know what was going on, but I did—and do still—very strongly believe the writings of Moses. It was me believing in the writings of Moses that led me through the prophets so that our Father would lead me to Christ. “It is written in the prophets, **And they shall be all taught of God. Every man therefore that hath heard, and hath learned of the Father, cometh unto me**” (John 6:45).

I have no doubt in my mind that this is why our Father led me to the wilderness on March 8–9 of 2016 to be baptized with the Holy Ghost. This was me willingly giving everything that I owned to the poor and needy. This included all the clothing I had except of what I was wearing, all the money that I had; I had no way of getting any food. There was a creek beside the place I spent the forty hours, but in my mind, I was going to die, so I wouldn't drink anything. This is where we learn of what it means that we are quickened unless we die. "But some man will say, How are the dead raised up? and with what body do they come? **Thou fool, that which thou sowest is not quickened, except it die**" (1 Corinthians 15:35–36). This was David giving up the ways of this world and going to work with our Father. This is when the spirit of the invisible Jesus took over David's vessel. That is why I can see and hear things that those of the past have desired to see and hear but could not.

Now that we have gotten somewhat of an idea of how I can see and hear the things that I do, I need to describe this flood that I have seen with my own eyes that covers this earth. I am going to be putting this into a very detailed explanation so that I can paint a picture in your minds of what I have seen. I am going to be giving details of what led up to this happening so that you can hear how our Father has this under His control, down to the very minute.

I had been having a couple of rough weeks at work, so I decided I was going to take a vacation and just get away from it all for a week or so. I decided that I was going to take a trip to Hawaii; I had never been there. This is October that I decided to take this trip. I booked the trip for November 4 through November 12, and my flight back to the mainland was on the thirteenth. About a week before the trip, I started to ask our Father if I was doing right by taking this trip. He reminded me of the scriptures saying that I do nothing on my own.

And therefore did the Jews persecute Jesus, and sought to slay him, because he had done these things on the sabbath day. But Jesus answered them, My Father worketh hitherto, and I work. Therefore the

JESUS IS HERE

Jews sought the more to kill him, because he not only had broken the sabbath, but said also that God was his Father, making himself equal with God. Then answered Jesus and said unto them, Verily, verily, I say unto you, **The Son can do nothing of himself, but what he seeth the Father do: for what things soever he doeth, these also doeth the Son likewise.** (John 5:16–19)

Then again in John 5:30–34.

I can of mine own self do nothing: as I hear, I judge: and my judgment is just; because I seek not mine own will, but the will of the Father which hath sent me. If I bear witness of myself, my witness is not true. There is another that beareth witness of me; and I know that the witness which he witnesseth of me is true. Ye sent unto John, and he bare witness unto the truth. But I receive not testimony from man: but these things I say, that ye might be saved.

From that time, I knew I wasn't going there for pleasure, but I was being sent over there for a reason. I had no idea of what I was being sent over there for, but I knew I was being sent. My dispatcher and others at work were telling me to have a good time while I was there, and I told them that our Father was sending me over. I do not remember exactly what time my flight left, but it was around six in the morning on the fourth. We flew to Denver, in which happened to be around a two-hour flight or so. There was only an hour layover or so in Denver before catching the next flight to Maui.

Now I bring this up because as I told you all in the last book, I do smoke cigarettes. I have flown to Israel twice and did enjoy watching some movies and such to help me keep my mind off smoking while flying. After we got on this jet and were getting ready for takeoff, they mentioned that if we wanted to watch movies and such, we needed to

have their app on our phone. This was the first time I had flown with this airline and did not have the app. I immediately tried to download it but couldn't get it done before they told us to switch to airplane mode. I knew this leg of the flight was going to be around eight hours or so. I started thinking this was going to suck and started thinking that I would never fly this airline again.

We were departing the airport in Denver at around 9:00 a.m. or so, and I figured I would just play some solitaire or something to keep me occupied. I do not like to sleep when I fly; it is something in me that likes to be seeing things going on around me at all times. This is the main reason I always use airlines that allow you to choose your seat- ing. I will always sit by the window if I can. Now that we are in flight, and about halfway through, I get really bored, so I decide to just watch out the window for a while. We were well over the Pacific Ocean now, and all I could see was the beautiful blue waters beneath us.

Now we are going to get a little sidetracked with staying on track, but there is something that really needs to be shown here. As we were flying over the ocean and I was playing solitaire, I started remembering scriptures about chastisement. First let us look at to where we are told to meditate on the word of God all the time.

This book of the law shall not depart out of thy mouth; **but thou shalt meditate therein day and night**, that thou mayest observe to do according to all that is written therein: for then thou shalt make thy way prosperous, and then thou shalt have good success. (Joshua 1:8).

Blessed is the man that walketh not in the coun- sel of the ungodly, nor standeth in the way of sinners, nor sitteth in the seat of the scornful. **But his delight is in the law of the Lord; and in his law doth he meditate day and night.** (Psalm 1:1–2)

JESUS IS HERE

Neglect not the gift that is in thee, which was given thee by prophecy, with the laying on of the hands of the presbytery. **Meditate upon these things; give thyself wholly to them; that thy profiting may appear to all.** Take heed unto thyself, and unto the doctrine; continue in them: for in doing this thou shalt both save thyself, and them that hear thee. (1 Timothy 4:14–16)

Now I have shown this in other books, but to paint this picture with words, it needs to be shown again. I do nothing but think about the word of God, the scriptures, and the Bible. I do not care what I am doing, I am relating it to the Bible one way or another. With that being said, I started to think of scriptures telling me that I must accept my chastisement.

For whom the Lord loveth he chasteneth, and scourgeth every son whom he receiveth. **If ye endure chastening, God dealeth with you as with sons; for what son is he whom the father chasteneth not? But if ye be without chastisement, whereof all are partakers, then are ye bastards, and not sons.** (Hebrews 12:6–8)

We bring this up because I had told you all that I had been going through a couple of hard weeks at work, and that is why I originally booked this trip. Then I was told that I was being sent over to Maui and that this trip was not doing it on my own. That is why I was having the bad weeks; it was our Father putting pressure on me so that I would book the trip. As I told you all, we were about halfway in the flight when I decided to just watch out the window. I had been just admiring everything outside. We were flying at thirty-two thousand feet when I started to notice these clouds gathering together. These were not storm clouds, but rather unique clouds. I started seeing these vertical clouds. They were all bunched together but all different sizes.

What I mean by that is that they were all in the vertical position, but some were narrow and really tall. Some were wider but yet shorter.

There was a couple on their honeymoon sitting next to me. I got their attention and asked them if they could see something that looked kind of like buildings. They looked out the window for a few seconds and then replied, "Yeah, we can kind of see it too." The more I watched, the more I could see this and truly got mesmerized with it. I am a truck driver and drive into the big cities all the time. So, I must ask you this: have you ever drove into a big city from a couple of miles away? Could you see how all the buildings were in a vertical position, but yet they were all of different sizes and shapes? This is what I had seen in the sky, in the clouds forming from thirty-two thousand feet. These clouds were different shades of white and gray, so the buildings didn't have lights or anything like that.

So, as I am truly being amazed by this, I started to look in different areas to see if I could see any other formations. At this time, all I could really see was a bunch of thin clouds that were at a higher altitude, but they were all over the place and looked to be coming from under the plane or something like that. This is when I must reflect back to when I have been swimming in the ocean or on a cruise ship. These thin clouds looked like the foam on top of the water. Just like you see the foam in the oceans up close. The plane was flying at around 500 mph or so, but with being at thirty-two thousand feet, everything outside of the plane seemed to be moving in slow motion. My eyes were now fastened to the window. I couldn't turn away. As I was watching this, I started to see more thin clouds a little farther out to the right of the plane but at a little lower altitude and still looking something like foam. I couldn't believe what I was seeing. I started to look at the thin clouds, closer to the plane, at a higher altitude, as if they were on a humongous wave that was getting ready to crash down onto the lower-level thin clouds that were farther out to the right of the plane. It was like I was watching a 3D movie or something out my window.

I started to look at the screen they have for passengers so they can track where they are on their flight. I kept thinking, *We can't be*

at thirty-two thousand feet anymore, but I was wrong, and we still had a couple more hours of flight. As I was watching out the window, I started to see these clouds start to form in a very weird way. I started to see something that looked like great big ships. I could see smokestacks and the different levels on these ships. There was probably four or five of them that seemed to be lined up at some kind of dock or something. Then as I was watching this happen, I started to notice another ship forming in the clouds, but this one was different. Now we were heading to the southwest, going to Maui. This ship looked to be heading to northeast. Or better said, it seemed to be heading in the direction in which we were coming from. As I was watching this ship form in the clouds, it looked like it was trying to go up that big wave that I was just talking about with the thin clouds at the higher altitude, coming from under the plane. The back side of this ship almost looked to be sinking because this ship was trying to go up such a steep incline.

With everything that I was seeing, it was like I was watching some kind of movie, but this time it was me watching from my window of a Boeing 737. As we were getting closer to our destination, I started remembering how we had just published a book talking about this. I started asking the Father if this was the flood that He had me write about in the last book. Before we finished our flight, I knew I had just seen the great flood that covers the earth today. And yes, I think it is safe to say that it is between four and five miles deep. Now can you see why our Father didn't allow me to be able to download the app. He didn't want me to watch a television screen or the screen on my phone. He provided the "best movie I have ever seen" for me.

Now we get to Maui, and I am in total awe. I cannot believe what I just had seen. I just had to tell somebody. I found a smoking area and immediately called my daughter. I told her that I just saw the great flood that our Father had me show in the last book. As I was describing this to her, unbeknownst to me, there was a gentleman sitting behind me. He overheard me talking to her, and when I got off the phone, he asked what I was talking about. I explained to him of what the Father had me put in the last book. He was intrigued

and wanted to know more about this. I gave him one of these books and showed him how to obtain the other books our Father has had me write.

So now I have been in Maui for three or four days now, and as I have been telling you all in the other books, I get the verse of the day every day, and I know that our Father has something within that chapter and the following two chapters every day. It changes all the time, so I am constantly trying to connect the verse of the day to the entire Bible. I think it was about the fourth day down there when I heard a certain verse of the day. I do not remember what the verse of the day was that day, but I distinctly remember what chapters it covered.

Okay, I just had one of those aha moments. On my phone, I cannot look at email received more than thirty days ago, but on my laptop, I can go back that far. It was on November 10 when I received this email of the verse of the day.

Job 37:5–6 King James Version

God thundereth marvellously with his voice; great things doeth he, which we cannot comprehend. For he saith to the snow, Be thou on the earth; likewise to the small rain, and to the great rain of his strength.

Now what I do is I will read this verse of the day, and then I will click on the link stating “Read all of Job 37.” Once it moves over to the chapter, I will hit the speaker icon so that I can listen to this chapter and the next two.

I am going to show the entire chapter of Job 37 so that we can hear more of our Father’s perfection. I do this because I today am at total amazement with His perfection.

At this also my heart trembleth, and is moved out of his place. Hear attentively the noise of his voice, and the sound that goeth out of his mouth. He directeth

JESUS IS HERE

it under the whole heaven, and his lightning unto the ends of the earth. After it a voice roareth: he thundereth with the voice of his excellency; and he will not stay them when his voice is heard. God thundereth marvellously with his voice; great things doeth he, which we cannot comprehend. For he saith to the snow, Be thou on the earth; likewise to the small rain, and to the great rain of his strength. He sealeth up the hand of every man; that all men may know his work. Then the beasts go into dens, and remain in their places. Out of the south cometh the whirlwind: and cold out of the north. By the breath of God frost is given: and the breadth of the waters is straitened. Also by watering he wearieth the thick cloud: he scattereth his bright cloud: And it is turned round about by his counsels: that they may do whatsoever he commandeth them upon the face of the world in the earth. He causeth it to come, whether for correction, or for his land, or for mercy. Hearken unto this, O Job: stand still, and consider the wondrous works of God. Dost thou know when God disposed them, and caused the light of his cloud to shine? **Dost thou know the balancings of the clouds, the wondrous works of him which is perfect in knowledge?** How thy garments are warm, when he quieteth the earth by the south wind? Hast thou with him spread out the sky, which is strong, and as a mol- ten looking glass? Teach us what we shall say unto him; for we cannot order our speech by reason of darkness. Shall it be told him that I speak? if a man speak, surely he shall be swallowed up. And now men see not the bright light which is in the clouds: but the wind passeth, and cleanseth them. Fair weather cometh out of the north: with God is terrible majesty. Touching the Almighty, we cannot find him out: he is excellent in power,

and in judgment, and in plenty of justice: he will not afflict. Men do therefore fear him: he respecteth not any that are wise of heart. (Job 37:1–24)

Can you see that? Or better yet, can you hear that? Our Father balances the clouds. Now check this out. I had to book that flight on the day that I did and had to be in flight at just the right time so that I could see everything that I had seen. He balanced those clouds at the precise moment that He did so that I could see everything that I saw, when I saw it. Now can you see how our Father has this in His control, down to the very minute?

I am hoping that I have done well enough painting this picture so that you could see it. The memory of it is etched into my mind. I can still picture myself sitting there in the plane witnessing all of this. But now we need to look as to where in the Bible we are told about this flood. Let us listen to where we can hear that Egypt will come up like a great flood and cover the earth. **“Egypt riseth up like a flood, and his waters are moved like the rivers; and he saith, I will go up, and will cover the earth; I will destroy the city and the inhabitants thereof”** (Jeremiah 46:8).

Now before going on, we need to pay attention to what is being said at the end of the verse. Notice how Egypt is saying he will destroy the city and the inhabitants thereof? He is saying this at the same time we are being told that these waters will cover the earth, but why only one city? This is something that was shown in the second book. We must venture back to the book of Jonah to understand this. We are going to skip everything up until after Jonah came out of the whale’s belly and took his journey into the city of Nineveh.

I also want to bring up what our Father showed me during the three weeks at my mom’s place directly after the baptism of the Holy Ghost. This was not shown to me before I had laid down my life, because at that time, I was still in the stages of strongly believing every word that proceedeth out of the mouth of God. Being every word of the Bible from Genesis 1 through Revelation 22. Then when He sent me to my mom’s house, I started to listen to the Bible on Bible

Gateway with the Internet, for she had it, and she allowed me to use the laptop that I had given her. As I was listening to it, I came to the book of Genesis, and I heard this.

And the word of the Lord came unto Jonah the second time, saying, Arise, go unto Nineveh, that great city, and preach unto it the preaching that I bid thee. **So Jonah arose, and went unto Nineveh, according to the word of the Lord. Now Nineveh was an exceeding great city of three days' journey.** And Jonah began to enter into the city a day's journey, and he cried, and said, Yet forty days, and Nineveh shall be over- thrown. (Jonah 3:1-4)

This was very fresh in my mind as I was listening further into the scriptures. Then I came upon the book of Nahum.

The burden of Nineveh. The book of the vision of Nahum the Elkoshite. God is jealous, and the Lord revengeth; the Lord revengeth, and is furious; the Lord will take vengeance on his adversaries, and he reserveth wrath for his enemies. The Lord is slow to anger, and great in power, and will not at all acquit the wicked: the Lord hath his way in the whirlwind and in the storm, and the clouds are the dust of his feet. He rebuketh the sea, and maketh it dry, and drieth up all the rivers: Bashan languisheth, and Carmel, and the flower of Lebanon languisheth. **The mountains quake at him, and the hills melt, and the earth is burned at his presence, yea, the world, and all that dwell therein.** (Nahum 1:1-5)

I immediately paused the Bible and thought, *Hold on a minute. How long did it take our Father to create the earth?* So, let us venture back to Genesis so that we can see how long it took.

In the beginning God created the heaven and the earth. And the earth was without form, and void; and darkness was upon the face of the deep. And the Spirit of God moved upon the face of the waters. And God said, Let there be light: and there was light. And God saw the light, that it was good: and God divided the light from the darkness. And God called the light Day, and the darkness he called Night. And the evening and the morning were the first day. And God said, Let there be a firmament in the midst of the waters, and let it divide the waters from the waters. And God made the firmament, and divided the waters which were under the firmament from the waters which were above the firmament: and it was so. And God called the firmament Heaven. And the evening and the morning were the second day. And God said, Let the waters under the heaven be gathered together unto one place, and let the dry land appear: and it was so. And God called the dry land Earth; and the gathering together of the waters called he Seas: and God saw that it was good. And God said, Let the earth bring forth grass, the herb yielding seed, and the fruit tree yielding fruit after his kind, whose seed is in itself, upon the earth: and it was so. And the earth brought forth grass, and herb yielding seed after his kind, and the tree yielding fruit, whose seed was in itself, after his kind: and God saw that it was good. **And the evening and the morning were the third day.** And God said, Let there be lights in the firmament of the heaven to divide the day from the night; and let them be for signs, and for seasons, and for days, and years: And let them be for lights in the firmament of the heaven to give light upon the earth: and it was so. And God made two great lights; the greater light to rule the day, and the lesser light

JESUS IS HERE

to rule the night: he made the stars also. And God set them in the firmament of the heaven to give light upon the earth, And to rule over the day and over the night, and to divide the light from the darkness: and God saw that it was good. And the evening and the morning were the fourth day. (Genesis 1:1-19)

I went ahead and posted through the fourth day of creation so that all could see that He finished creating the earth in three days. The sun, moon, and stars are not part of the earth, for they are in the heavens above us. Notice how it was a three-day journey for Jonah to go throughout Nineveh? Then when we read in the book of Nahum, the burden of Nineveh consists of the whole world and all that dwell in it. I realized right away that Jonah was not an actual man but rather a spirit that had to go throughout the earth and tell the conscience of all to repent. It was some time before any of this happened, but I remembered that I had seen a video or something on clouds that are called the whale's mouth. I have asked the Father about putting a picture of this in here, and I truly feel He is saying not to. So, I encourage you all to do a quick Internet search on clouds called the whale's mouth. There is the whale that Jonah was in for three days and nights.

It was not an actual whale; however, it was a spiritual whale. Just as when I was in the coma for three days and three nights, I was not actually in the belly of the earth, but in a medical condition as to be the same as dead. What do we do with the dead, do not we bury them? So, I was spiritually in the belly of the earth for three days and three nights. This whale that Jonah was in is above us, just as that city I had seen in the clouds. Those ships lined up at the dock or pier. That is why we must worship God in spirit; the prophecies in the Bible are not going to happen here on earth, but rather above us in the spirit world. When things turn for the worse here on the earth, that is the end. And that is not a day we should be looking forward to because it will be a day of darkness and not of light.

This is why we are told that I am the only sign this generation will be given.

Then certain of the scribes and of the Pharisees answered, saying, Master, we would see a sign from thee. But he answered and said unto them, An evil and adulterous generation seeketh after a sign; and there shall no sign be given to it, but the sign of the prophet Jonas: For as Jonas was three days and three nights in the whale's belly; so shall the Son of man be three days and three nights in the heart of the earth. The men of Nineveh shall rise in judgment with this generation, and shall condemn it: because they repented at the preaching of Jonas; and, behold, a greater than Jonas is here. (Matthew 12:38–41)

Now I am hoping that you are starting to see that this world in which we live is covered in a spiritual water, and this water is called Egypt. We need to venture back to show a few spots as to when Moses leads the Israelites out of Egypt. We will be looking at a few areas in which many people would refuse to hearken to Moses's voice.

Wherefore say unto the children of Israel, I am the Lord, and I will bring you out from under the burdens of the Egyptians, and I will rid you out of their bondage, and I will redeem you with a stretched out arm, and with great judgments: And I will take you to me for a people, and I will be to you a God: and ye shall know that I am the Lord your God, which bringeth you out from under the burdens of the Egyptians. And I will bring you in unto the land, concerning the which I did swear to give it to Abraham, to Isaac, and to Jacob; and I will give it you for an heritage: I am the Lord. And Moses spake so unto the children of Israel: **but they hearkened not unto Moses for anguish of spirit, and for cruel bondage.** (Exodus 6:6–9)

JESUS IS HERE

Let us listen to when they were given manna from heaven.

This is the thing which the Lord hath com- manded, Gather of it every man according to his eating, an omer for every man, according to the number of your persons; take ye every man for them which are in his tents. And the chil- dren of Israel did so, and gathered, some more, some less. And when they did mete it with an omer, he that gathered much had nothing over, and he that gathered little had no lack; they gathered every man according to his eating. And Moses said, Let no man leave of it till the morning. **Notwithstanding they hearkened not unto Moses; but some of them left of it until the morning, and it bred worms, and stank: and Moses was wroth with them.** And they gathered it every morning, every man according to his eating: and when the sun waxed hot, it melted. And it came to pass, that on the sixth day they gathered twice as much bread, two omers for one man: and all the rulers of the congregation came and told Moses. And he said unto them, This is that which the Lord hath said, To morrow is the rest of the holy sabbath unto the Lord: bake that which ye will bake to day, and seethe that ye will seethe; and that which remaineth over lay up for you to be kept until the morning. And they laid it up till the morning, as Moses bade: and it did not stink, neither was there any worm therein. And Moses said, Eat that to day; for to day is a sabbath unto the Lord: to day ye shall not find it in the field. Six days ye shall gather it; but on the seventh day, which is the sabbath, in it there shall be none. And it came to pass, that there went out some of the people on the seventh day for to gather, and they found none. **And the Lord said unto Moses,**

How long refuse ye to keep my commandments and my laws? (Exodus 16:16–28)

Now we need to listen to the first few verses of 1 Corinthians 10.

Moreover, brethren, I would not that ye should be ignorant, how that all our fathers were under the cloud, and all passed through the sea; And were all baptized unto Moses in the cloud and in the sea; And did all eat the same spiritual meat; And did all drink the same spiritual drink: for they drank of that spiritual Rock that followed them: and that Rock was Christ. But with many of them God was not well pleased: for they were overthrown in the wilderness. Now these things were our examples, to the intent we should not lust after evil things, as they also lusted. Neither be ye idolaters, as were some of them; as it is written, The people sat down to eat and drink, and rose up to play. Neither let us commit fornication, as some of them committed, and fell in one day three and twenty thousand. Neither let us tempt Christ, as some of them also tempted, and were destroyed of serpents. Neither murmur ye, as some of them also murmured, and were destroyed of the destroyer. **Now all these things happened unto them for examples: and they are written for our admonition, upon whom the ends of the world are come.** (1 Corinthians 10:1–11)

Notice how we are being told in the New Testament that these things happened unto them for examples? How can anyone learn from these examples if they refuse to listen to what has been written in the Old Testament? Now let us listen again to how we are told that Egypt will rise like a flood and that he will cover the earth. **“Egypt riseth up like a flood, and his waters are moved like the rivers; and he saith, I will go up, and will cover the earth; I will destroy the city and the**

inhabitants thereof" (Jeremiah 46:8). Notice how Egypt is noted as **a he and that he rises like a flood that covers the earth?** Now let us listen to the name of the king of Egypt and note that this is not in the books of Moses or the first five books of the Bible. **"Son of man, take up a lamentation for Pharaoh king of Egypt, and say unto him, Thou art like a young lion of the nations, and thou art as a whale in the seas:** and thou camest forth with thy rivers, and troubledst the waters with thy feet, and fouledst their rivers" (Ezekiel 32:2).

Let us make a quick sidenote here. Remember in the last book as to when we showed that the book of Revelation is how a lot of this began and not how the world ends? Let us look at this great dragon in Revelation again. I won't show it all again for time's sake, but listen to Revelation 12:9, **"And the great dragon was cast out, that old serpent, called the Devil, and Satan, which deceiveth the whole world: he was cast out into the earth, and his angels were cast out with him."** Now let us listen to Ezekiel 29:3, "Speak, and say, Thus saith the Lord God; Behold, I am against thee, Pharaoh king of Egypt, **the great dragon that lieth in the midst of his rivers,** which hath said, My river is mine own, and I have made it for myself." How could this dragon be here if this doesn't happen till the end of the world?

Can you hear that? The king of Egypt is Pharaoh and is also as a whale in the sea. Remember how we just told you all that Jonas was in the belly of the whale? Can you see what whale he was in? Now we can see clearly of how Jonah was in the spiritual whale, in the spiritual water or sea or flood. Just as I was in the spiritual belly of the earth for three days and nights. This is where we really need to be listening to what we are being told in Ecclesiastes 1:8–11, "All things are full of labour; man cannot utter it: the eye is not satisfied with seeing, nor the ear filled with hearing. **The thing that hath been, it is that which shall be; and that which is done is that which shall be done: and there is no new thing under the sun.** Is there any thing whereof it may be said, See, this is new? **it hath been already of old time, which was before us.** There is no remembrance of former things; neither shall there be any remembrance of things that are to come with those that shall come after."

Now we are going to dive into a topic that will trouble a lot of souls. This is where readers are going to realize how spiritual the entire Bible is. This is where people must stop thinking carnally because to think carnally is death. **“For to be carnally minded is death; but to be spiritually minded is life and peace”** (Romans 8:6). And remember the hour is now that we must worship in spirit, for our Father seeketh such. **“But the hour cometh, and now is, when the true worshippers shall worship the Father in spirit and in truth: for the Father seeketh such to worship him. God is a Spirit: and they that worship him must worship him in spirit and in truth”** (John 4:23–24).

Now we need to listen to when Jesus said his words are spirit. “It is the spirit that quickeneth; the flesh profiteth nothing: **the words that I speak unto you, they are spirit**, and they are life” (John 6:63). Now anyone that knows anything about the Bible realizes that Jesus did not write any of the books. In fact, the books of the Bible did not happen as it happened. Later on holy me was instructed by the Holy Ghost as to what to put in the books. **“For the prophecy came not in old time by the will of man: but holy men of God spake as they were moved by the Holy Ghost”** (2 Peter 1:21). The entire Bible was written so that we could learn how to love in the same way that our Father does.

With that being said, we need to be listening to what we are being told when we hear that Jerusalem is above and the mother of all. **“But Jerusalem which is above is free, which is the mother of us all”** (Galatians 4:26). As we showed a little while ago, I have seen these cities with my own eyes now, and I can say with all certainty that most of what we read or hear in the Bible has or is taking place above of us and not here on this earth as we see it. Now we need to look at something that most look at as being here on the earth. “And Jesus, walking by the sea of Galilee, saw two brethren, Simon called Peter, and Andrew his brother, casting a net into the sea: for they were fishers. **And he saith unto them, Follow me, and I will make you fishers of men”** (Matthew 4:18–19). **“And Jesus said unto them,**

**“Come ye after me, and I will make you to become fishers of men”
(Mark 1:17).**

Now that we are hearing Jesus gather the disciples to be fishers of men, we need to listen to where these fish are.

Then said he unto me, These waters issue out toward the east country, and go down into the desert, and go into the sea: which being brought forth into the sea, the waters shall be healed. And it shall come to pass, that every thing that liveth, which moveth, whithersoever the rivers shall come, shall live: and there shall be a very great multitude of fish, because these waters shall come thither: for they shall be healed; and every thing shall live whither the river cometh. And it shall come to pass, that the fishers shall stand upon it from Engedi even unto Eneglaim; they shall be a place to spread forth nets; their fish shall be according to their kinds, as the fish of the great sea, exceeding many. (Ezekiel 47:8–10)

This is where we mention that this could have been in the last chapter, but I wanted to put it here, for it just seems to fit better. This is when we need to look at when we hear them say “let us make man in our image again.” “And God said, Let us make man in our image, after our likeness: **and let them have dominion over the fish of the sea**, and over the fowl of the air, and over the cattle, and over all the earth, and over every creeping thing that creepeth upon the earth” (Genesis 1:28). If you haven’t heard it yet, we are saying that we are the fish in which they have dominion over, just as we have dominion over the fish of the sea.

When we hear Jesus tell the disciples to follow him so that he could make fishers of men out of them, we are hearing what is being said above us. And yes, that means we are the fish in which they are fishing for. Let us look at when they say they have cast their nets.

And he entered into one of the ships, which was Simon's, and prayed him that he would thrust out a little from the land. And he sat down, and taught the people out of the ship. Now when he had left speaking, he said unto Simon, Launch out into the deep, and let down your nets for a draught. **And Simon answering said unto him, Master, we have toiled all the night, and have taken nothing: nevertheless at thy word I will let down the net. And when they had this done, they inclosed a great multitude of fishes: and their net brake.** And they beckoned unto their partners, which were in the other ship, that they should come and help them. And they came, and filled both the ships, so that they began to sink. (Luke 5:3-7)

Now we are going to be looking at a few spots that we can hear they cast nets in the Old Testament. Yes, even our Father has cast nets also. Well, I think I should rephrase that; He is the master behind all of these nets. Whether it be a good net or an evil net. This will take a little explaining, for we are going to be looking into a few different types of nets. This is something that was covered in the last book, but we are going further into detail in this book. The first net we need to be looking into is another area in which Jesus speaks of the kingdom of heaven being like a net.

Again, the kingdom of heaven is like unto a net, that was cast into the sea, and gathered of every kind: Which, when it was full, they drew to shore, and sat down, and gathered the good into vessels, but cast the bad away. So shall it be at the end of the world: the angels shall come forth, and sever the wicked from among the just, And shall cast them into the furnace of fire: there shall be wailing and gnashing of teeth. (Matthew 13:47-50)

JESUS IS HERE

This also is talking about something that has been shown in the other books. Many believe in this rapture concept, and we have shown with several biblical witnesses that there is no rapture. Here again we can hear that the wicked will be severed from among the just and cast away.

Now let us listen to some other nets that are set as traps or such. When we do this, we need to remember that they are fishing for us, and at the same time, we cast our own nets and trap others with them.

Then answered Bildad the Shuhite, and said, How long will it be ere ye make an end of words? mark, and afterwards we will speak. Wherefore are we counted as beasts, and reputed vile in your sight? He teareth himself in his anger: shall the earth be forsaken for thee? and shall the rock be removed out of his place? Yea, the light of the wicked shall be put out, and the spark of his fire shall not shine. The light shall be dark in his tab- ernacle, and his candle shall be put out with him. The steps of his strength shall be straitened, and his own counsel shall cast him down. **For he is cast into a net by his own feet, and he walketh upon a snare.** (Job 18:1-8)

Then listen to Job 19:1-6.

Then Job answered and said, How long will ye vex my soul, and break me in pieces with words? These ten times have ye reproached me: ye are not ashamed that ye make yourselves strange to me. And be it indeed that I have erred, mine error remaineth with myself. If indeed ye will magnify yourselves against me, and plead against me my reproach: **Know now that God hath overthrown me, and hath compassed me with his net.**

In the second book in which our Father had me write, we showed how we are instructed not to as the heathen. As shown in Jeremiah 10, the heathen are the ones that celebrate Christmas. Now listen to this. **“The heathen are sunk down in the pit that they made: in the net which they hid is their own foot taken.** The Lord is known by the judgment which he executeth: the wicked is snared in the work of his own hands. Higgaion. Selah” (Psalm 9:15–16).

Now let us listen to how people set nets.

Be merciful unto me, O God, be merciful unto me: for my soul trusteth in thee: yea, in the shadow of thy wings will I make my refuge, until these calamities be overpast. 2 I will cry unto God most high; unto God that performeth all things for me. 3 He shall send from heaven, and save me from the reproach of him that would swallow me up. Selah. God shall send forth his mercy and his truth. 4 My soul is among lions: and I lie even among them that are set on fire, even the sons of men, whose teeth are spears and arrows, and their tongue a sharp sword. 5 Be thou exalted, O God, above the heavens; let thy glory be above all the earth. 6 **They have prepared a net for my steps; my soul is bowed down: they have digged a pit before me, into the midst whereof they are fallen themselves. Selah.** (Psalm 57:1–6)

We need to make a quick sidenote here. Notice in verse 5 that we hear that God is above the heavens. Remember how we showed in the last book of how the thousand-year reign is explained in Ezekiel 40–46? Remember how we showed Jesus at the very top of this holy mountain and that he is the only one that reports to our Father? Back on showing how people set nets.

Deliver me, O Lord, from the evil man: preserve me from the violent man; Which imagine mis- chiefs in

JESUS IS HERE

their heart; continually are they gathered together for war. They have sharpened their tongues like a serpent; adders' poison is under their lips. Selah. Keep me, O Lord, from the hands of the wicked; preserve me from the violent man; who have purposed to overthrow my goings. **The proud have hid a snare for me, and cords; they have spread a net by the wayside; they have set gins for me. Selah.** (Psalm 140:1-5)

Now let us listen to how some desire to be cast into these nets.

Whoso loveth instruction loveth knowledge: but he that hateth reproof is brutish. A good man obtaineth favour of the Lord: but a man of wicked devices will he condemn. A man shall not be established by wickedness: but the root of the righteous shall not be moved. A virtuous woman is a crown to her husband: but she that maketh ashamed is as rottenness in his bones. The thoughts of the righteous are right: but the counsels of the wicked are deceit. The words of the wicked are to lie in wait for blood: but the mouth of the upright shall deliver them. The wicked are overthrown, and are not: but the house of the righteous shall stand. A man shall be commended according to his wisdom: but he that is of a perverse heart shall be despised. He that is despised, and hath a servant, is better than he that honoureth himself, and lacketh bread. A righteous man regardeth the life of his beast: but the tender mercies of the wicked are cruel. He that tilleth his land shall be satisfied with bread: but he that followeth vain persons is void of understanding. **The wicked desireth the net of evil men: but the root of the righteous yieldeth fruit.** (Proverbs 12:1-12)

Now I want to post one more chapter that concludes people cast nets, but at the same time, we need to listen to are counted as fish.

The burden which Habakkuk the prophet did see. O Lord, how long shall I cry, and thou wilt not hear! even cry out unto thee of violence, and thou wilt not save! Why dost thou shew me iniquity, and cause me to behold grievance? for spoiling and violence are before me: and there are that raise up strife and contention. Therefore the law is slacked, and judgment doth never go forth: for the wicked doth compass about the righteous; therefore wrong judgment proceedeth. Behold ye among the heathen, and regard, and wonder marvelously: for I will work a work in your days which ye will not believe, though it be told you. For, lo, I raise up the Chaldeans, that bitter and hasty nation, which shall march through the breadth of the land, to possess the dwellingplaces that are not their's. They are terrible and dreadful: their judgment and their dignity shall proceed of themselves. Their horses also are swifter than the leopards, and are more fierce than the evening wolves: and their horsemen shall spread themselves, and their horsemen shall come from far; they shall fly as the eagle that hasteth to eat. They shall come all for violence: their faces shall sup up as the east wind, and they shall gather the captivity as the sand. with how how men And they shall scoff at the kings, and the princes shall be a scorn unto them: they shall deride every strong hold; for they shall heap dust, and take it. Then shall his mind change, and he shall pass over, and offend, imputing this his power unto his god. Art thou not from everlasting, O Lord my God, mine Holy One? we shall not die. O Lord, thou hast ordained them for judgment; and, O mighty God, thou hast established them for correction. Thou

JESUS IS HERE

art of purer eyes than to behold evil, and canst not look on iniquity: wherefore lookest thou upon them that deal treacherously, and holdest thy tongue when the wicked devoureth the man that is more righteous than he? **And makest men as the fishes of the sea, as the creeping things, that have no ruler over them? They take up all of them with the angle, they catch them in their net, and gather them in their drag: therefore they rejoyce and are glad. Therefore they sacrifice unto their net, and burn incense unto their drag; because by them their portion is fat, and their meat plenteous. Shall they therefore empty their net, and not spare continually to slay the nations?** (Habakkuk 1:1–17)

As we have heard through reading some of these, we can know that it is our Father in which we should be hoping to bring us out of the sea or flood in which we live in. It isn't another God in which will bring us out of these nets, but our Father can and will bring us out with His own net. "Mine eyes are ever toward the Lord; for he shall pluck my feet out of the net" (Psalm 25:15). And if that is not working, listen to how He will bring some of us out of this sea in which we live.

And the word of the Lord came unto me, saying, Son of man, set thy face against Gog, the land of Magog, the chief prince of Meshech and Tubal, and prophesy against him, And say, Thus saith the Lord God; Behold, I am against thee, O Gog, the chief prince of Meshech and Tubal: **And I will turn thee back, and put hooks into thy jaws, and I will bring thee forth, and all thine army, horses and horsemen, all of them clothed with all sorts of armour, even a great company with bucklers and shields, all of them handling swords.** (Ezekiel 38:1–4)

Now let us listen to when the disciples caught 153 great fish.

After these things Jesus shewed himself again to the disciples at the sea of Tiberias; and on this wise shewed he himself. There were together Simon Peter, and Thomas called Didymus, and Nathanael of Cana in Galilee, and the sons of Zebedee, and two other of his disciples. Simon Peter saith unto them, I go a fishing. They say unto him, We also go with thee. They went forth, and entered into a ship immediately; and that night they caught nothing. But when the morning was now come, Jesus stood on the shore: but the disciples knew not that it was Jesus. Then Jesus saith unto them, Children, have ye any meat? They answered him, No. And he said unto them, Cast the net on the right side of the ship, and ye shall find. They cast therefore, and now they were not able to draw it for the multitude of fishes. Therefore that disciple whom Jesus loved saith unto Peter, It is the Lord. Now when Simon Peter heard that it was the Lord, he girt his fisher's coat unto him, (for he was naked,) and did cast himself into the sea. And the other disciples came in a little ship; (for they were not far from land, but as it were two hundred cubits,) dragging the net with fishes. As soon then as they were come to land, they saw a fire of coals there, and fish laid thereon, and bread. Jesus saith unto them, Bring of the fish which ye have now caught. **Simon Peter went up, and drew the net to land full of great fishes, an hundred and fifty and three: and for all there were so many, yet was not the net broken.** (John 21:1-11)

This is the only time in the Bible that the number of the fish caught is numbered and is the only time in which they are described as being great. As stated in the last book, I believe that this is the

remnant that will be saved. Being as how these are noted as to being great fish, I relate to when we are told that one person in the Bible can represent hundreds or thousands, or hundreds or thousands can represent one man or fish. This was explained in the second and third book our Father had me write.

Now that we are seeing that we all are under water, let us listen to a few times in which we can hear that we are dead. Before we do this, I ask you as the reader, can a person live underwater? If we think as if we are under physical water, we can think of times when we have opened our eyes and could see the light coming from above. The deeper you go into the water, the darker it gets, but we can still see the light above us. We have been showing you all that we are living in the thousand-year reign with Christ now, so let us listen to when we are told that we are all dead.

For whether we be beside ourselves, it is to God: or whether we be sober, it is for your cause. **For the love of Christ constraineth us; because we thus judge, that if one died for all, then were all dead:** And that he died for all, that they which live should not henceforth live unto themselves, but unto him which died for them, and rose again. (2 Corinthians 5:13–15)

Remember how we all die in Adam? **“For as in Adam all die, even so in Christ shall all be made alive”** (1 Corinthians 15:22). I am sure there are some now saying, “But we are alive in Christ,” and this is true if you follow the instructions of Christ. As shown in detail in the last book we wrote, nowhere in the Bible does Jesus tell us that our Father has changed. Nowhere in the Bible does Christ tell us to forget about the Old Testament or that we only need the New Testament. As shown in the last book, Jesus refers us to the scripture several times, so he is actually telling us that we need to really study the Old Testament before we can understand the New Testament.

Now let us listen to Jesus give instructions as to let the dead bury the dead.

And Jesus saith unto him, The foxes have holes, and the birds of the air have nests; but the Son of man hath not where to lay his head. And another of his disciples said unto him, Lord, suffer me first to go and bury my father. **But Jesus said unto him, Follow me; and let the dead bury their dead.** (Matthew 8:20–22)

Now we are going to listen to a parable from Jesus on being lost is just the same as being dead.

And he said, A certain man had two sons: And the younger of them said to his father, Father, give me the portion of goods that falleth to me. And he divided unto them his living. And not many days after the younger son gathered all together, and took his journey into a far country, and there wasted his substance with riotous living. And when he had spent all, there arose a mighty famine in that land; and he began to be in want. And he went and joined himself to a citizen of that country; and he sent him into his fields to feed swine. And he would fain have filled his belly with the husks that the swine did eat: and no man gave unto him. And when he came to himself, he said, How many hired servants of my father's have bread enough and to spare, and I perish with hunger! I will arise and go to my father, and will say unto him, Father, I have sinned against heaven, and before thee, And am no more worthy to be called thy son: make me as one of thy hired servants. And he arose, and came to his father. But when he was yet a great way off, his father saw him, and had compassion, and ran, and fell on his neck, and kissed him. And the son said unto him, Father, I have sinned against heaven, and in thy sight, and am no more worthy to be called thy son. But the father said to his servants,

JESUS IS HERE

Bring forth the best robe, and put it on him; and put a ring on his hand, and shoes on his feet: And bring hither the fatted calf, and kill it; and let us eat, and be merry: **For this my son was dead, and is alive again; he was lost, and is found.** And they began to be merry. Now his elder son was in the field: and as he came and drew nigh to the house, he heard musick and dancing. And he called one of the servants, and asked what these things meant. And he said unto him, Thy brother is come; and thy father hath killed the fatted calf, because he hath received him safe and sound. And he was angry, and would not go in: therefore came his father out, and intreated him. And he answering said to his father, Lo, these many years do I serve thee, neither transgressed I at any time thy commandment: and yet thou never gavest me a kid, that I might make merry with my friends: But as soon as this thy son was come, which hath devoured thy living with harlots, thou hast killed for him the fatted calf. And he said unto him, Son, thou art ever with me, and all that I have is thine. **It was meet that we should make merry, and be glad: for this thy brother was dead, and is alive again; and was lost, and is found.** (Luke 15:11–32)

Notice how this man was not actually dead but was lost; in turn, he was also described as being dead. Now let us think about what made this man be dead even though he was alive. He took his portion of his inheritance and did things that were for his own pleasure. He didn't use this money to show his love and compassion for others. So, let us listen to where we can hear this. Where in the Bible does it tell us to love ourselves before we love others? *Nowhere* in the Bible are we instructed to do so, and as long as you think of yourself before you think of others, you are walking dead. Just listen to 1 Timothy 5:1–6.

Rebuke not an elder, but intreat him as a father; and the younger men as brethren; The elder women as mothers; the younger as sisters, with all purity. Honour widows that are widows indeed. But if any widow have children or nephews, let them learn first to shew piety at home, and to requite their parents: for that is good and acceptable before God. Now she that is a widow indeed, and desolate, trusteth in God, and continueth in supplications and prayers night and day. **But she that liveth in pleasure is dead while she liveth.**

Be ye therefore followers of God, as dear children; 2 And walk in love, as Christ also hath loved us, and hath given himself for us an offering and a sacrifice to God for a sweetsmelling savour. 3 But fornication, and all uncleanness, or covetousness, let it not be once named among you, as becometh saints; 4 Neither filthiness, nor foolish talking, nor jesting, which are not convenient: but rather giving of thanks. 5 For this ye know, that no whoremonger, nor unclean person, nor covetous man, who is an idolater, hath any inheritance in the kingdom of Christ and of God. 6 Let no man deceive you with vain words: for because of these things cometh the wrath of God upon the children of disobedience. 7 Be not ye therefore partakers with them. 8 For ye were sometimes darkness, but now are ye light in the Lord: walk as children of light: 9 (For the fruit of the Spirit is in all goodness and righteousness and truth;) 10 Proving what is acceptable unto the Lord. 11 And have no fellowship with the unfruitful works of darkness, but rather reprove them. 12 For it is a shame even to speak of those things which are done of them in secret. 13 But all things that are reprov-

JESUS IS HERE

are made manifest by the light: for whatsoever doth make manifest is light. 14 **Wherefore he saith, Awake thou that sleepest, and arise from the dead, and Christ shall give thee light.** 15 See then that ye walk circumspectly, not as fools, but as wise, 16 Redeeming the time, because the days are evil. 17 Wherefore be ye not unwise, but understanding what the will of the Lord is. 18 And be not drunk with wine, wherein is excess; but be filled with the Spirit; 19 Speaking to yourselves in psalms and hymns and spiritual songs, singing and making melody in your heart to the Lord; 20 Giving thanks always for all things unto God and the Father in the name of our Lord Jesus Christ; 21 **Submitting yourselves one to another in the fear of God.** (Ephesians 5:1–21)

As you can hear in verse 14, if you are not awake and learning of our Father, you are asleep and dead.

Now we are going to be venturing in a little bit of a different perspective and looking at this sea that we all live in from heaven. But to do this, it will take some explaining after we recall a few things. First thing that we need to recall is the dream I had that I told you all about in the last chapter. This dream involved me seeing myself being wheeled into a delivery room on a gurney. As I was seeing this, I was pointing to myself on the gurney saying my water broke. Then we need to remember of what Jesus told us to pray.

After this manner therefore pray ye: Our Father which art in heaven, Hallowed be thy name. **Thy kingdom come, Thy will be done in earth, as it is in heaven.** Give us this day our daily bread. And forgive us our debts, as we forgive our debtors. And lead us not into temptation, but deliver us from evil: For thine is the kingdom, and the power, and the glory, for ever. Amen. (Matthew 6:9–13)

We explained in the second and third books that these spirits of the Bible are much larger than you and I. We are as grasshoppers compared to them. “It is he that sitteth upon the circle of the earth, and the inhabitants thereof are as grasshoppers; that stretcheth out the heavens as a curtain, and spreadeth them out as a tent to dwell in” (Isaiah 40:22). Now just think about the last time you saw a grasshopper. Then think of how big we look to be in their eyes. We are humongous compared to them, just as those above us are humongous compared to us. Let us listen to how big Immanuel is.

Moreover the Lord said unto me, Take thee a great roll, and write in it with a man’s pen concerning Mahershalalhashbaz. And I took unto me faithful witnesses to record, Uriah the priest, and Zechariah the son of Jeberechiah. And I went unto the prophetess; and she conceived, and bare a son. Then said the Lord to me, Call his name Mahershalalhashbaz. For before the child shall have knowledge to cry, My father, and my mother, the riches of Damascus and the spoil of Samaria shall be taken away before the king of Assyria. The Lord spake also unto me again, saying, Forasmuch as this people refuseth the waters of Shiloah that go softly, and rejoice in Rezin and Remaliah’s son; Now therefore, behold, the Lord bringeth up upon them the waters of the river, strong and many, even the king of Assyria, and all his glory: and he shall come up over all his channels, and go over all his banks: **And he shall pass through Judah; he shall overflow and go over, he shall reach even to the neck; and the stretching out of his wings shall fill the breadth of thy land, O Immanuel.** (Isaiah 8:1–8)

JESUS IS HERE

Now once again, looking at the earth from heaven, we can see that the one son of God covers the entire earth. He has almost eight billion functioning body parts.

Without showing it all again, let us remember on how we are married to our Father. Then let us listen to again of where our mother is. “But Jerusalem which is above is free, which is the mother of us all” (Galatians 4:26). Now we are going to be off topic with staying on topic. I will say this also would fit into the chapter of “let us make man in our image,” but I feel it will make a lot more sense here now that we can see that this world is covered in a spiritual water. We need to be thinking about how a baby’s first nine months is in water. To do this, we just did a quick Internet search as to how big a baby is at conception. Conception occurs about two weeks from this day, and that’s when you’re truly considered pregnant. In just forty short weeks, your baby will grow from the size of a tiny seed to the size of a plump watermelon (Baby’s Length: 0.00in. <https://www.parents.com/www.parents.com › pregnancy › week-by-week 1 Week Pregnant—Parents.com>). Then let us do another search to note where these forty weeks are. Amniotic fluid is mainly water. The unborn baby swallows the amniotic fluid and passes tiny amounts of urine into the fluid. The amount of amniotic fluid increases gradually during pregnancy until about week 38, when it reduces slightly until the baby’s born (<https://www.nhs.uk/www.nhs.uk › common-health-questions › pregnancy › what-is-the-amn...>).

Now that we can see and hear that the baby grows from nothing and is in water for the first nine months, we need to be thinking of how we are in water. But this isn’t a physical water, it is spiritual water. This is the water that just broke. Let us think about a woman that is pregnant. If this woman does not carry this child close to the nine-month mark, there is a good chance the baby will not live. Now compare that to Matthew 5:18, “For verily I say unto you, Till heaven and earth pass, one jot or one tittle shall in no wise pass from the law, till all be fulfilled.” Now we can make more sense of what we hear in Psalm 139:1–13.

O lord, thou hast searched me, and known me. Thou knowest my downsitting and mine uprising, thou understandest my thought afar off. Thou compassest my path and my lying down, and art acquainted with all my ways. For there is not a word in my tongue, but, lo, O Lord, thou knowest it altogether. Thou hast beset me behind and before, and laid thine hand upon me. Such knowledge is too wonderful for me; it is high, I cannot attain unto it. Whither shall I go from thy spirit? or whither shall I flee from thy presence? If I ascend up into heaven, thou art there: if I make my bed in hell, behold, thou art there. If I take the wings of the morning, and dwell in the uttermost parts of the sea; Even there shall thy hand lead me, and thy right hand shall hold me. If I say, Surely the darkness shall cover me; even the night shall be light about me. Yea, the darkness hideth not from thee; but the night shineth as the day: the darkness and the light are both alike to thee. **For thou hast possessed my reins: thou hast covered me in my mother's womb.**

But at the same time, we know that Jerusalem or our mother will not carry us the full complete nine months. "And except those days should be shortened, there should no flesh be saved: but for the elect's sake those days shall be shortened" (Matthew 24:22). Now I am going to relate this to when my daughter had my granddaughter. This is my mom and dad as one flesh. The doctor said the baby was due on August 15, 2017. However, my mom was born again as Avalinn, reincarnated as my granddaughter was born on the fourth of August. She was very tiny being premature, but as of now, you cannot tell. Just as we will be born as one premature.

Let us now listen to where our Father is telling those above us to not pity those in the womb.

JESUS IS HERE

The burden of Babylon, which Isaiah the son of Amoz did see. Lift ye up a banner upon the high mountain, exalt the voice unto them, shake the hand, that they may go into the gates of the nobles. I have commanded my sanctified ones, I have also called my mighty ones for mine anger, even them that rejoice in my highness. The noise of a multitude in the mountains, like as of a great people; a tumultuous noise of the kingdoms of nations gathered together: the Lord of hosts mustereth the host of the battle. They come from a far country, from the end of heaven, even the Lord, and the weapons of his indignation, to destroy the whole land. Howl ye; for the day of the Lord is at hand; it shall come as a destruction from the Almighty. Therefore shall all hands be faint, and every man's heart shall melt: And they shall be afraid: pangs and sorrows shall take hold of them; they shall be in pain as a woman that travaileth: they shall be amazed one at another; their faces shall be as flames. Behold, the day of the Lord cometh, cruel both with wrath and fierce anger, to lay the land desolate: and he shall destroy the sinners thereof out of it. For the stars of heaven and the constellations thereof shall not give their light: the sun shall be darkened in his going forth, and the moon shall not cause her light to shine. And I will punish the world for their evil, and the wicked for their iniquity; and I will cause the arrogance of the proud to cease, and will lay low the haughtiness of the terrible. I will make a man more precious than fine gold; even a man than the golden wedge of Ophir. Therefore I will shake the heavens, and the earth shall remove out of her place, in the wrath of the Lord of hosts, and in the day of his fierce anger. And it shall be as the chased roe, and as a sheep that no man taketh up: they shall every man turn to

his own people, and flee every one into his own land. Every one that is found shall be thrust through; and every one that is joined unto them shall fall by the sword. Their children also shall be dashed to pieces before their eyes; their houses shall be spoiled, and their wives ravished. Behold, I will stir up the Medes against them, which shall not regard silver; and as for gold, they shall not delight in it. **Their bows also shall dash the young men to pieces; and they shall have no pity on the fruit of the womb; their eyes shall not spare children.**

Now we can make sense of when we hear that we all will be in travail as woman during childbirth. “Ask ye now, and see whether a man doth travail with child? wherefore do I see every man with his hands on his loins, as a woman in travail, and all faces are turned into paleness? Alas! for that day is great, so that none is like it: it is even the time of Jacob’s trouble, but he shall be saved out of it” (Jeremiah 30:6–7). Obviously, we do know the day nor hour, just as when a baby in the flesh is born. But we know that we are about to give delivery of this child being as how the water now broke. And then we can listen to Galatians 4:1–4, “Now I say, That the heir, as long as he is a child, differeth nothing from a servant, though he be lord of all; But is under tutors and governors until the time appointed of the father. Even so we, when we were children, were in bondage under the elements of the world: **But when the fulness of the time was come, God sent forth his Son, made of a woman, made under the law.**” As we explained in the last book, David willingly laid down his life on March 8–9 of 2016. When this happened is when Jesus took over his body. This happened this way so that the scriptures would not be broken.

Now let us listen to what will happen to all of those that have done only for themselves and sought their own glory while yet in the womb of our mother.

JESUS IS HERE

Do ye indeed speak righteousness, O congrega- tion? do ye judge uprightly, O ye sons of men? Yea, in heart ye work wickedness; ye weigh the violence of your hands in the earth. **The wicked are estranged from the womb: they go astray as soon as they be born, speaking lies. Their poi- son is like the poison of a serpent: they are like the deaf adder that stoppeth her ear;** Which will not hearken to the voice of charmers, charming never so wisely. Break their teeth, O God, in their mouth: break out the great teeth of the young lions, O Lord. Let them melt away as waters which run continually: when he bendeth his bow to shoot his arrows, let them be as cut in pieces. As a snail which melteth, let every one of them pass away: like the untimely birth of a woman, that they may not see the sun. Before your pots can feel the thorns, he shall take them away as with a whirlwind, both living, and in his wrath. The righteous shall rejoice when he seeth the vengeance: he shall wash his feet in the blood of the wicked. So that a man shall say, Verily there is a reward for the righteous: verily he is a God that judgeth in the earth. (Psalm 58:1-11)

We can know without a doubt that no baby that just comes out of the womb goes astray and tells lies as soon as they are born. But now seeing that we are in the womb and this child is about to be born, many will go astray. Now with us realizing of how everybody on the planet is in this womb, we need to mention something else. There are many that believe they will be raptured out of here. Have you ever heard of part of a child being partially born and then days later the other part of the child was born? Now you can know that this is talking about the womb that covers the earth.

Now we are going to be looking at this flood in which we are in from a different perspective. We brought up how I watch our Father part the sea for me all the time. I didn't go too in-depth with it, for I

was in kind of a rush to get the last book done, and that chapter was already quite long. We need to be listening to how people are also counted as waters. Let us listen to Jude 1:11–13, “Woe unto them! for they have gone in the way of Cain, and ran greedily after the error of Balaam for reward, and perished in the gainsaying of Core. These are spots in your feasts of charity, when they feast with you, feeding themselves without fear: clouds they are without water, carried about of winds; trees whose fruit withereth, without fruit, twice dead, plucked up by the roots; **Raging waves of the sea, foaming out their own shame; wandering stars, to whom is reserved the blackness of darkness for ever.**”

As you can see, man is counted as many things, but we are focusing on how we sometimes are raging waves. Now I want to listen to how we are the living waters. “For my people have committed two evils; **they have forsaken me the fountain of living waters**, and hewed them out cisterns, broken cisterns, that can hold no water” (Jeremiah 2:13). “O Lord, the hope of Israel, all that forsake thee shall be ashamed, and they that depart from me shall be written in the earth, because they have forsaken the Lord, **the fountain of living waters**” (Jeremiah 17:13). Yes, this is telling us that our Father is the fountain of living waters, but we must recall that God our Father dwells in each of us. “Know ye not that ye are the temple of God, **and that the Spirit of God dwelleth in you?**” (1 Corinthians 3:16). Yes, this is where many people defile the temple of God. It is by not getting to know Him and what He is doing. “When the boughs thereof are withered, they shall be broken off: the women come, and set them on fire: **for it is a people of no understanding: therefore he that made them will not have mercy on them, and he that formed them will shew them no favour**” (Isaiah 27:11).

Before I get way off topic, let us listen to how people are floods.

The Lord reigneth, he is clothed with majesty; the Lord is clothed with strength, wherewith he hath girded himself: the world also is stablished, that it cannot be moved. Thy throne is established of old:

JESUS IS HERE

thou art from everlasting. **The floods have lifted up, O Lord, the floods have lifted up their voice; the floods lift up their waves. The Lord on high is mightier than the noise of many waters, yea, than the mighty waves of the sea.** Thy testimonies are very sure: holiness becometh thine house, O Lord, for ever. (Psalm 93:1–5)

Which by his strength setteth fast the mountains; being girded with power: **Which stilleth the noise of the seas, the noise of their waves, and the tumult of the people.** (Psalm 65:6–7)

Woe to the multitude of many people, which make a noise like the noise of the seas; and to the rushing of nations, that make a rushing like the rushing of mighty waters! (Isaiah 17:12)

But the wicked are like the troubled sea, when it cannot rest, whose waters cast up mire and dirt. There is no peace, saith my God, to the wicked. (Isaiah 57:20–21)

The sorrows of death compassed me, **and the floods of ungodly men made me afraid.** (Psalm 18:4)

Now let us listen to when these people can make us feel as if we are drowning.

Who is this that cometh up as a flood, whose waters are moved as the rivers? Egypt riseth up like a flood, and his waters are moved like the rivers; and he saith, I will go up, and will cover the earth; I will destroy the city and the inhabitants thereof. (Jeremiah 46:7–8)

Deliver me out of the mire, and let me not sink: let me be delivered from them that hate me, and out of the deep waters. Let not the waterflood overflow me, neither let the deep swallow me up, and let not the pit shut her mouth upon me. (Psalm 69:14–15)

If it had not been the Lord who was on our side, now may Israel say; If it had not been the Lord who was on our side, when men rose up against us: **Then they had swallowed us up quick, when their wrath was kindled against us: Then the waters had overwhelmed us, the stream had gone over our soul:** Then the proud waters had gone over our soul. Blessed be the Lord, who hath not given us as a prey to their teeth. Our soul is escaped as a bird out of the snare of the fowlers: the snare is broken, and we are escaped. Our help is in the name of the Lord, who made heaven and earth. (Psalm 124:1–8)

Send thine hand from above; rid me, **and deliver me out of great waters,** from the hand of strange children; Whose mouth speaketh vanity, and their right hand is a right hand of falsehood. (Psalm 144:7–8)

I think we all should be getting an idea of how I watch our Father part the sea for me all the time. I am not even sure if I could count how many times in one day I watch this happen, and I am very thankful. And He reminds me of this if I start to stop being thankful.

But I am the Lord thy God, that divided the sea, whose waves roared: The Lord of hosts is his name. (Isaiah 51:15)

Thus saith the Lord, which giveth the sun for a light by day, and the ordinances of the moon and of the

JESUS IS HERE

stars for a light by night, **which divideth the sea when the waves thereof roar; The Lord of hosts is his name:** If those ordinances depart from before me, saith the Lord, then the seed of Israel also shall cease from being a nation before me for ever. Thus saith the Lord; If heaven above can be measured, and the foundations of the earth searched out beneath, I will also cast off all the seed of Israel for all that they have done, saith the Lord. (Jeremiah 31:35–37)

Now getting back to the living waters, listen to when we are told that living waters will divide. “And it shall be in that day, **that living waters shall go out from Jerusalem; half of them toward the former sea, and half of them toward the hinder sea: in summer and in winter shall it be**” (Zechariah 14:8). Now we need to when we hear Jesus or myself give of this water.

When therefore the Lord knew how the Pharisees had heard that Jesus made and baptized more disciples than John, (Though Jesus himself baptized not, but his disciples,) He left Judaea, and departed again into Galilee. And he must needs go through Samaria. Then cometh he to a city of Samaria, which is called Sychar, near to the parcel of ground that Jacob gave to his son Joseph. Now Jacob's well was there. Jesus therefore, being wearied with his journey, sat thus on the well: and it was about the sixth hour. There cometh a woman of Samaria to draw water: Jesus saith unto her, Give me to drink. (For his disciples were gone away unto the city to buy meat.) Then saith the woman of Samaria unto him, How is it that thou, being a Jew, askest drink of me, which am a woman of Samaria? for the Jews have no dealings with the Samaritans. Jesus answered and said unto her, If thou knewest the gift of God, and who it is that saith to

thee, Give me to drink; thou wouldest have asked of him, and he would have given thee living water. The woman saith unto him, Sir, thou hast nothing to draw with, and the well is deep: from whence then hast thou that living water? Art thou greater than our father Jacob, which gave us the well, and drank thereof himself, and his children, and his cattle? Jesus answered and said unto her, Whosoever drinketh of this water shall thirst again: **But whosoever drinketh of the water that I shall give him shall never thirst; but the water that I shall give him shall be in him a well of water springing up into everlasting life.** The woman saith unto him, Sir, listen to give me this water, that I thirst not, neither come hither to draw. Jesus saith unto her, Go, call thy husband, and come hither. The woman answered and said, I have no husband. Jesus said unto her, Thou hast well said, I have no husband: For thou hast had five husbands; and he whom thou now hast is not thy husband: in that saidst thou truly. The woman saith unto him, Sir, I perceive that thou art a prophet. Our fathers worshipped in this mountain; and ye say, that in Jerusalem is the place where men ought to worship. Jesus saith unto her, Woman, believe me, the hour cometh, when ye shall neither in this mountain, nor yet at Jerusalem, worship the Father. Ye worship ye know not what: we know what we worship: for salvation is of the Jews. But the hour cometh, and now is, when the true worshippers shall worship the Father in spirit and in truth: for the Father seeketh such to worship him. God is a Spirit: and they that worship him must worship him in spirit and in truth. The woman saith unto him, **I know that Messias cometh, which is called Christ: when he is come, he will tell**

us all things. Jesus saith unto her, I that speak unto thee am he. (John 4:1-26)

Through all the books that our Father has had me write, I glorify our Father and how marvelous He is. I have been showing a lot of secrets that man has never understood since the beginning of time, or better said, I show all things of the Bible and what it really is saying. I try to show people how important it is to turn back to our Father instead of listening to some god that has told you that our perfect Father has changed His ways. Listen to what we are told in Revelation 7:17, “For the Lamb which is in the midst of the throne shall feed them, **and shall lead them unto living fountains of waters:** and God shall wipe away all tears from their eyes.”

Now we are going to be reflecting back to when I had seen with my own two eyes this flood that covers the earth. The first thing I am being told to bring to your attention is when we are told that there will be no sign given to this generation.

Then certain of the scribes and of the Pharisees answered, saying, Master, we would see a sign from thee. But he answered and said unto them, **An evil and adulterous generation seeketh after a sign; and there shall no sign be given to it, but the sign of the prophet Jonas: For as Jonas was three days and three nights in the whale’s belly; so shall the Son of man be three days and three nights in the heart of the earth. The men of Nineveh shall rise in judgment with this generation, and shall condemn it: because they repented at the preaching of Jonas; and, behold, a greater than Jonas is here.** The queen of the south shall rise up in the judgment with this generation, and shall condemn it: for she came from the uttermost parts of the earth to hear the wisdom of Solomon; and, behold, a greater than Solomon is here. (Matthew 12:38-42)

Just a quick couple of sidenotes here. First, *Behold, a Greater Than Jonas Is Here!!!* is the name of the second book our Father had me write. Second, how could the men of Nineveh rise in judgment if they are not reincarnated, for the dead know nothing? “For the living know that they shall die: **but the dead know not any thing**, neither have they any more a reward; for the memory of them is forgotten” (Ecclesiastes 9:5). Now I know there are many people who look for signs of the end but tend not to listen to what we are being told. I am the only sign this evil and adulterous generation will get. As we showed in the last book, the book of Revelation is how a lot of this began and is not how it will end. That is why we are told that our Father declares the end from the beginning. “Remember the former things of old: for I am God, and there is none else; I am God, and there is none like me, **Declaring the end from the beginning, and from ancient times the things that are not yet done, saying, My counsel shall stand, and I will do all my pleasure**” (Isaiah 46:9–10).

This is something that will bother many people, for there are so many that continue to look at the Bible as it happened just as it reads or sounds. We have shown this in the previous books, but we need to be focusing on how we are hearing conversations that are being held in heaven and not here on earth. “For our conversation is in heaven; from whence also we look for the Saviour, the Lord Jesus Christ” (Philippians 3:20). Now let us listen to where we can hear that one-third of the ships in the sea will be destroyed.

And the seven angels which had the seven trumpets prepared themselves to sound. The first angel sounded, and there followed hail and fire mingled with blood, and they were cast upon the earth: and the third part of trees was burnt up, and all green grass was burnt up. And the second angel sounded, and as it were a great mountain burning with fire was cast into the sea: and the third part of the sea became blood; **And the third part of the creatures which were in**

the sea, and had life, died; and the third part of the ships were destroyed. (Revelation 8:6–9)

We showed in the last book that a third of the trees and grass have already been burnt up, but we will show it again. Let us just google “how much of the earth is desert.”

33 percent

Most of the world’s surface is covered in water, in the form of oceans. The remaining landmass of Earth amounts to approximately 29 percent of the surface. Of this remaining 29 percent, deserts of all types constitute an estimated 33 percent, or one-third, of the Earth’s total landmass. (What Percent of the Planet Is Desert? | Education – Seattle Pieducation. seattlepi.com › Science)

Because this has already happened is why we have exactly one-third of the landmass as desert.

Now let us listen to a few times in which we can hear that Jesus taught the people while he was in a ship.

And he began again to teach by the sea side: and there was gathered unto him a great multitude, so that he entered into a ship, and sat in the sea; and the whole multitude was by the sea on the land. And he taught them many things by parables, and said unto them in his doctrine. (Mark 1:1–2)

And it came to pass, that, as the people pressed upon him to hear the word of God, he stood by the lake of Gennesaret, And saw two ships standing by the lake: but the fishermen were gone out of them, and were washing their nets. **And he entered into one of**

the ships, which was Simon's, and prayed him that he would thrust out a little from the land. And he sat down, and taught the people out of the ship. (Luke 5:1-3)

The same day went Jesus out of the house, and sat by the sea side. **And great multitudes were gathered together unto him, so that he went into a ship, and sat; and the whole multitude stood on the shore. And he spake many things unto them in parables, saying, Behold, a sower went forth to sow.** (Matthew 13:1-3)

Can you hear how Jesus seemed to get into the ship while the multitudes of people stood on the shore? Do you think they had microphones when this happened? How could Jesus talk to all these people and have all of them hear the same teaching that he was or is teaching? This is where we must realize that the words of Jesus are spirit. "It is the spirit that quickeneth; the flesh profiteth nothing: **the words that I speak unto you, they are spirit, and they are life**" (John 6:63). Now picture the flood and the waves that I had seen from thirty-two thousand feet. Then picture those ships that I had seen floating on top of this flood in which we are in. Now think about this as you read or listen to the Bible. Can you hear the words that Jesus is speaking in your conscience?

Now we are not going to try and show all the times that we can hear that what is being done is being done above us and it has not happened on earth. As we showed in the last book, Jesus was crucified before our Father gave him this world to have reign over. That is why we are now living in the "thousand-year reign with Christ" now. Let us listen to when Jesus was crucified.

And about the ninth hour Jesus cried with a loud voice, saying, Eli, Eli, lama sabachthani? that is to say, My God, my God, why hast thou forsaken me? Some of them that stood there, when they heard that,

JESUS IS HERE

said, This man calleth for Elias. And straightway one of them ran, and took a sponge, and filled it with vinegar, and put it on a reed, and gave him to drink. The rest said, Let be, let us see whether Elias will come to save him. Jesus, when he had cried again with a loud voice, yielded up the ghost. And, behold, the veil of the temple was rent in twain from the top to the bottom; and the earth did quake, and the rocks rent; And the graves were opened; and many bodies of the saints which slept arose, And came out of the graves after his resurrection, and went into the holy city, and appeared unto many. **Now when the centurion, and they that were with him, watching Jesus, saw the earthquake,** and those things that were done, they feared greatly, saying, Truly this was the Son of God. (Matthew 27:46–54)

How can these people that were with Jesus see the earthquake and not feel it? They saw him in spirit. Or better yet, they saw the son of God who covers the entire earth. That is why we are told to seek things from above and not here on earth. “But seek ye first the kingdom of God, and his righteousness; and all these things shall be added unto you. Take therefore no thought for the morrow: for the morrow shall take thought for the things of itself. Sufficient unto the day is the evil thereof” (Matthew 6:33–34). **“If ye then be risen with Christ, seek those things which are above, where Christ sitteth on the right hand of God. Set your affection on things above, not on things on the earth”** (Colossians 3:1–2). **“The way of life is above to the wise, that he may depart from hell beneath”** (Proverbs 15:24).

Now these ships that I saw floating on this flood that we are living in are the ships that will be destroyed. It is those ships that Jesus talks from. When you read or listen to the Bible, you are hearing the words of Jesus in your conscience. Yes, that means the water that I saw from thirty-two thousand feet is the water that Jesus walks on. And we are the fish that will die off. And this is why we are told

that nobody knows the day or hour except our Father. “Verily I say unto you, that this generation shall not pass, till all these things be done. Heaven and earth shall pass away: but my words shall not pass away. **But of that day and that hour knoweth no man, no, not the angels which are in heaven, neither the Son, but the Father**” (Mark 13:30–32). This is not taking place here on earth, and there is no sign that we will be given except my deep and true understanding of our Father and the scriptures.

THE SON OF PERDITION “REVEALED”



This chapter is going to take a lot of people for a surprise. Some people might already be leaning to this idea after reading the chapters of “Believing” and “The Thousand-Year Reign.” We are reigning with Christ now, and the end of all things is at hand, so we need to be learning where Satan will be loosed from. To understand this fully, we will be jumping back and forth through our Bibles. So, let us start with Revelation 12:9–11, **“And the great dragon was cast out, that old serpent, called the Devil, and Satan, which deceiveth the whole world: he was cast out into the earth, and his angels were cast out with him. And I heard a loud voice saying in heaven, Now is come salvation, and strength, and the kingdom of our God, and the power of his Christ: for the accuser of our brethren is cast down, which accused them before our God day and night. And they overcame him by the blood of the Lamb, and by the word of their testimony; and they loved not their lives unto the death.”** This is where Satan and his angels were cast out of heaven. Now let us listen to how many stars the dragon took to earth with him. **“And his tail drew the third part of the stars of heaven, and did cast them to the earth: and the dragon stood before the woman his is an updated chapter in which a lot is the same. However, there is more knowledge that needs to be added, and yes, it will be covering what is going on in the world now known as COVID-19. We will be learning more of what it means when we hear there will be a great falling away. “Let no man deceive you by any means: for that day shall not come, except there come a falling away first, and**

that man of sin be revealed, the son of perdition” (2 Thessalonians 2:3). which was ready to be delivered, for to devour her child as soon as it was born” (Revelation 12:4).

We are going to cover something right here before we get deep into this chapter. Now what did Adam and Eve do in the very beginning of the Bible? Let us listen when God approached Adam.

And the Lord God called unto Adam, and said unto him, Where art thou? 10 And he said, I heard thy voice in the garden, and I was afraid, because I was naked; and I hid myself. 11 And he said, Who told thee that thou wast naked? Hast thou eaten of the tree, whereof I commanded thee that thou shouldest not eat? 12 **And the man said, The woman whom thou gavest to be with me, she gave me of the tree, and I did eat.** 13 And the Lord God said unto the woman, What is this that thou hast done? **And the woman said, The serpent beguiled me, and I did eat.** (Genesis 3:9–13)

They blamed their disobedience on others. They would not take responsibility for their own actions. Let us just look at the difference between *accuse* and *blame*.

The difference between BLAME and ACCUSE. BLAME—to say or think that a person is responsible for something wrong; hold someone responsible for an accident, bad situation or a problem. ACCUSE—to say that a person did something wrong or illegal; to charge with offense, fault or crime.

We can see that they are pretty much the same thing.

Notice how in verse 10 the accuser was cast down to earth? I hear people say this all the time that it is someone else’s fault that they did what they did. If you haven’t heard it in this book or any of the

other two, everything that goes wrong in our lives is our own fault and nobody else's. How many people today accuse someone else when something is wrong in their life? How many turn to the Bible to find out why something is going wrong in their life? How many people make others feel as if they are worthless when they put the blame on others? How many of us ask our Father forgiveness for our trespasses but do not forgive others when they trespass against us?

Now I realize that there a lot of people who believe that this is something that has not happened yet. I need to ask a question here: how many times do you think Satan is going to be cast out of heaven? Let us listen to our Father tell us that the great dragon is here already. By now we all should be realizing that the world is covered with Egypt and the spiritual waters of Egypt. "In the tenth year, in the tenth month, in the twelfth day of the month, the word of the Lord came unto me, saying, Son of man, set thy face against Pharaoh king of Egypt, and prophesy against him, and against all Egypt: Speak, and say, **Thus saith the Lord God; Behold, I am against thee, Pharaoh king of Egypt, the great dragon that lieth in the midst of his rivers, which hath said, My river is mine own, and I have made it for myself**" (Ezekiel 29:1-3). As we showed in previous chapters, we are in Satan's kingdom now.

Now remember there was a star born when Jesus was born? "Now when Jesus was born in Bethlehem of Judaea in the days of Herod the king, behold, there came wise men from the east to Jerusalem, Saying, Where is he that is born King of the Jews? **for we have seen his star in the east**, and are come to worship him" (Matthew 2:1-2). Now we showed in the last book that when we lift ourselves about the clouds and look down on the earth from above, we can see almost 8 billion functioning body parts of the son of God. Or almost 8 billion little Jesuses running around like little grasshoppers. "It is he that sitteth upon the circle of the earth, **and the inhabitants thereof are as grasshoppers**; that stretcheth out the heavens as a curtain, and spreadeth them out as a tent to dwell in" (Isaiah 40:22). I believe that there has been a star born and will be a star born every time some soul is cast out of heaven.

“The Lord your God hath multiplied you, and, behold, **ye are this day as the stars of heaven for multitude**” (Deuteronomy 1:10). “Thy fathers went down into Egypt with threescore and ten persons; and now the Lord thy God hath made thee as the stars of heaven for multitude” (Deuteronomy 10:22). “And ye shall be left few in number, **whereas ye were as the stars of heaven for multitude**; because thou wouldest not obey the voice of the Lord thy God” (Deuteronomy 28:62). This is when we got kicked out of heaven. Remember no man remembers anything. This is when we were cast to the lowest part of hell. This probably happened tens of millions of years ago. But we cleaved onto our Father somehow or another, and that is why our Father brought us to where His son’s kingdom was established.

So now we need to go back to Genesis.

In the beginning God created the heaven and the earth. And the earth was without form, and void; and darkness was upon the face of the deep. And the Spirit of God moved upon the face of the waters. **And God said, Let there be light: and there was light. And God saw the light, that it was good: and God divided the light from the darkness. And God called the light Day, and the darkness he called Night.** And the evening and the morning were the first day. And God said, Let there be a firmament in the midst of the waters, and let it divide the waters from the waters. And God made the firmament, and divided the waters which were under the firmament from the waters which were above the firmament: and it was so. And God called the firmament Heaven. And the evening and the morning were the second day. And God said, Let the waters under the heaven be gathered together unto one place, and let the dry land appear: and it was so. And God called the dry land Earth; and the gathering together of the waters called he Seas: and God saw that it was good. And

JESUS IS HERE

God said, Let the earth bring forth grass, the herb yielding seed, and the fruit tree yielding fruit after his kind, whose seed is in itself, upon the earth: and it was so. And the earth brought forth grass, and herb yielding seed after his kind, and the tree yielding fruit, whose seed was in itself, after his kind: and God saw that it was good. And the evening and the morning were the third day. (Genesis 1:1–13)

Notice in the very beginning that the earth was without form and nothing but water? As you read you this, note that the human body is made up of 60 percent water. Note that the earth was full of darkness? That is because we were here and had been cast out of heaven, so we were without form or light. Remember man was man before our Father breathed life into him. “**And the Lord God formed man of the dust of the ground, and breathed into his nostrils the breath of life; and man became a living soul**” (Genesis 2:7). Now remember that the land wasn’t here, but our Father brought up the land from under the waters to divide the waters. Then formed man from the dust of the earth. Now let us listen to what Abraham said. “And Abraham answered and said, Behold now, I have taken upon me to speak unto the Lord, **which am but dust and ashes**” (Genesis 18:27). God formed man from the dust in which our Father brought up from under the water.

This was the process of Satan being locked up right here. When he was cast out of heaven, they rejoiced, for he could no longer deceive the nations that are in heaven.

And the great dragon was cast out, that old serpent, called the Devil, and Satan, which deceiveth the whole world: he was cast out into the earth, and his angels were cast out with him. And I heard a loud voice saying in heaven, Now is come salvation, and strength, and the kingdom of our God, and the power of his Christ: for the accuser of our brethren is

cast down, which accused them before our God day and night. And they overcame him by the blood of the Lamb, and by the word of their testimony; and they loved not their lives unto the death. Therefore rejoice, ye heavens, and ye that dwell in them. **Woe to the inhabitants of the earth and of the sea! for the devil is come down unto you, having great wrath, because he knoweth that he hath but a short time.** (Revelation 12:9–12)

We are being told right here that Satan is cast down to the earth, so woe to the inhabitants of the earth. Remember, in the spiritual world, a short time could be thousands of years. Where he is locked up will surprise many.

Remember how Jesus told us to pray.

After this manner therefore pray ye: Our Father which art in heaven, Hallowed be thy name. Thy kingdom come, **Thy will be done in earth, as it is in heaven.** Give us this day our daily bread. And forgive us our debts, as we forgive our debtors. And lead us not into temptation, but deliver us from evil: For thine is the kingdom, and the power, and the glory, for ever. Amen. (Matthew 6:9–13)

This is where Satan was sent before our Father formed man from the dust of the ground. This is why we told that the earth is given over to the wicked. **“The earth is given into the hand of the wicked: he covereth the faces of the judges thereof; if not, where, and who is he?”** (Job 9:24). In the last book, we showed where the son of perdition sits. We are going to have to cover some of that again. We know that we are the temple of God, right? **“Know ye not that ye are the temple of God, and that the Spirit of God dwelleth in you?”** (1 Corinthians 3:16). Now let us listen to where the son of perdition sits.

JESUS IS HERE

Now we beseech you, brethren, by the coming of our Lord Jesus Christ, and by our gathering together unto him, That ye be not soon shaken in mind, or be troubled, neither by spirit, nor by word, nor by letter as from us, as that the day of Christ is at hand. **Let no man deceive you by any means: for that day shall not come, except there come a falling away first, and that man of sin be revealed, the son of perdition; Who opposeth and exalteth himself above all that is called God, or that is worshipped; so that he as God sitteth in the temple of God, shewing himself that he is God.** (2 Thessalonians 2:1-4)

The son of perdition sits in each person on the planet, as we showed in the last book.

This is when we need to be paying attention to what Jesus was talking about when he said a kingdom cannot be divided. “And Jesus knew their thoughts, and said unto them, **Every kingdom divided against itself is brought to desolation; and every city or house divided against itself shall not stand: And if Satan cast out Satan, he is divided against himself; how shall then his kingdom stand?**” (Matthew 12:25-26). Remember our Father is working a works that no man will believe. When I went out willingly to die, and the spirit of Jesus took over David’s body, Satan’s kingdom no longer had dominion over me. I forced my house to worship God and God only.

Sidenote here. This is why it is going to hurt so bad for so many. Remember when Jesus told the parable of the rich man? “Jesus said unto him, **If thou wilt be perfect, go and sell that thou hast, and give to the poor, and thou shalt have treasure in heaven: and come and follow me.** But when the young man heard that saying, he went away sorrowful: for he had great possessions” (Matthew 19:21-22). There are going to be so many people that are not willing to give things up of this world. But our Father is going to bring this world to an end. All those that are not willing to give up their possessions will have them stripped from them, and it will hurt. There is no way to stop

it. This makes me think of when we are told that a woman forgets the travail after the child is born. “Verily, verily, I say unto you, That ye shall weep and lament, but the world shall rejoice: and ye shall be sorrowful, but your sorrow shall be turned into joy. A woman when she is in travail hath sorrow, because her hour is come: but as soon as she is delivered of the child, she remembereth no more the anguish, for joy that a man is born into the world” (John 16:20–21).

These kingdoms are the kingdoms in which we live now. Let us listen to Daniel 2:27–45.

Daniel answered in the presence of the king, and said, The secret which the king hath demanded cannot the wise men, the astrologers, the magicians, the soothsayers, shew unto the king; But there is a God in heaven that revealeth secrets, and maketh known to the king Nebuchadnezzar what shall be in the latter days. Thy dream, and the visions of thy head upon thy bed, are these; As for thee, O king, thy thoughts came into thy mind upon thy bed, what should come to pass hereafter: and he that revealeth secrets maketh known to thee what shall come to pass. But as for me, this secret is not revealed to me for any wisdom that I have more than any living, but for their sakes that shall make known the interpretation to the king, and that thou mightest know the thoughts of thy heart. Thou, O king, sawest, and behold a great image. This great image, whose brightness was excellent, stood before thee; and the form thereof was terrible. This image's head was of fine gold, his breast and his arms of silver, his belly and his thighs of brass, His legs of iron, his feet part of iron and part of clay. Thou sawest till that a stone was cut out without hands, which smote the image upon his feet that were of iron and clay, and brake them to pieces. Then was the iron, the clay, the brass, the silver, and the gold, broken to pieces

JESUS IS HERE

together, and became like the chaff of the summer threshing floors; and the wind carried them away, that no place was found for them: and the stone that smote the image became a great mountain, and filled the whole earth. This is the dream; and we will tell the interpretation thereof before the king. Thou, O king, art a king of kings: for the God of heaven hath given thee a kingdom, power, and strength, and glory. And wheresoever the children of men dwell, the beasts of the field and the fowls of the heaven hath he given into thine hand, and hath made thee ruler over them all. Thou art this head of gold. And after thee shall arise another kingdom inferior to thee, and another third kingdom of brass, which shall bear rule over all the earth. And the fourth kingdom shall be strong as iron: forasmuch as iron breaketh in pieces and subdueth all things: and as iron that breaketh all these, shall it break in pieces and bruise. And whereas thou sawest the feet and toes, part of potters' clay, and part of iron, the kingdom shall be divided; but there shall be in it of the strength of the iron, forasmuch as thou sawest the iron mixed with miry clay. And as the toes of the feet were part of iron, and part of clay, so the kingdom shall be partly strong, and partly broken. And whereas thou sawest iron mixed with miry clay, they shall mingle themselves with the seed of men: but they shall not cleave one to another, even as iron is not mixed with clay. And in the days of these kings shall the God of heaven set up a kingdom, which shall never be destroyed: and the kingdom shall not be left to other people, but it shall break in pieces and consume all these kingdoms, and it shall stand for ever. Forasmuch as thou sawest that the stone was cut out of the mountain without hands, and that it brake in pieces the iron, the brass, the clay, the silver,

and the gold; the great God hath made known to the king what shall come to pass hereafter: and the dream is certain, and the interpretation thereof sure.

Remember the spiritual mountain that our Father is on? Remember man is not made with hands? This image that King Nebuchadnezzar saw is the how man is made. In the last book, we showed that Jesus is building the tabernacle without his hands throughout the entire world. These kingdoms go throughout the entire world as well. These different areas of the body in this image represent parts of us. Now we showed in the last book how we must get to know the Father and learn of the Father before He raises Jesus up in our bodies. He is in our bodies doing what must be done. As we showed just a bit ago, he is the one that reports to the Father on that mountain shown in Ezekiel. So, no, you are not getting to the Father but through Jesus. Notice how the iron breaks all things.

Then notice how the toes are partly iron and partly clay. Now let us listen to a couple of spots in which we can hear that we are formed out of clay. **“Behold, I am according to thy wish in God’s stead: I also am formed out of the clay”** (Job 33:6). **“But now, O Lord, thou art our father; we are the clay, and thou our potter; and we all are the work of thy hand”** (Isaiah 64:8). Then notice how the kingdom should be partly strong and then partly broken. That is because Jesus is the iron made with the toes; we are the clay in the toes. Jesus is the strong part, and the people are partly broken. Now let us look at the head of this image. It is made of gold and is said to be King Nebuchadnezzar. Let us look at Jeremiah 49:28, **“Concerning Kedar, and concerning the kingdoms of Hazor, which Nebuchadnezzar king of Babylon shall smite, thus saith the Lord; Arise ye, go up to Kedar, and spoil the men of the east.”** Remember how I told you that I didn’t read the Bible until I was forty-one years of age? I didn’t understand it, for it confused me. So, let us look up the definition of *Babylon*.

JESUS IS HERE

H894 bâbel baw-bel' From H1101; **confusion**; Babel (that is, Babylon), including Babylonia and the Babylonian empire:—Babel, Babylon.

We are going to get sidetracked here for a minute, for we want to show how this connects to Genesis. Let us listen to Daniel 4:1–37.

Nebuchadnezzar the king, unto all people, nations, and languages, that dwell in all the earth; Peace be multiplied unto you. I thought it good to shew the signs and wonders that the high God hath wrought toward me. How great are his signs! and how mighty are his wonders! his kingdom is an everlasting kingdom, and his dominion is from generation to generation. I Nebuchadnezzar was at rest in mine house, and flourishing in my palace: I saw a dream which made me afraid, and the thoughts upon my bed and the visions of my head troubled me. Therefore made I a decree to bring in all the wise men of Babylon before me, that they might make known unto me the interpretation of the dream. Then came in the magicians, the astrologers, the Chaldeans, and the soothsayers: and I told the dream before them; but they did not make known unto me the interpretation thereof. But at the last Daniel came in before me, whose name was Belteshazzar, according to the name of my God, and in whom is the spirit of the holy gods: and before him I told the dream, saying, O Belteshazzar, master of the magicians, because I know that the spirit of the holy gods is in thee, and no secret troubleth thee, tell me the visions of my dream that I have seen, and the interpretation thereof. Thus were the visions of mine head in my bed; I saw, and behold a tree in the midst of the earth, and the height thereof was great. The tree grew, and was strong, and

the height thereof reached unto heaven, and the sight thereof to the end of all the earth: The leaves thereof were fair, and the fruit thereof much, and in it was meat for all: the beasts of the field had shadow under it, and the fowls of the heaven dwelt in the boughs thereof, and all flesh was fed of it. I saw in the visions of my head upon my bed, and, behold, a watcher and an holy one came down from heaven; He cried aloud, and said thus, Hew down the tree, and cut off his branches, shake off his leaves, and scatter his fruit: let the beasts get away from under it, and the fowls from his branches: Nevertheless leave the stump of his roots in the earth, even with a band of iron and brass, in the tender grass of the field; and let it be wet with the dew of heaven, and let his portion be with the beasts in the grass of the earth: Let his heart be changed from man's, and let a beast's heart be given unto him; and let seven times pass over him. This matter is by the decree of the watchers, and the demand by the word of the holy ones: to the intent that the living may know that the most High ruleth in the kingdom of men, and giveth it to whomsoever he will, and setteth up over it the basest of men. This dream I king Nebuchadnezzar have seen. Now thou, O Belteshazzar, declare the interpretation thereof, forasmuch as all the wise men of my kingdom are not able to make known unto me the interpretation: but thou art able; for the spirit of the holy gods is in thee. Then Daniel, whose name was Belteshazzar, was astonished for one hour, and his thoughts troubled him. The king spake, and said, Belteshazzar, let not the dream, or the interpretation thereof, trouble thee. Belteshazzar answered and said, My lord, the dream be to them that hate thee, and the interpretation thereof to thine enemies. **The tree that thou sawest, which**

grew, and was strong, whose height reached unto the heaven, and the sight thereof to all the earth;

Whose leaves were fair, and the fruit thereof much, and in it was meat for all; under which the beasts of the field dwelt, and upon whose branches the fowls of the heaven had their habitation: It is thou, O king, that art grown and become strong: for thy greatness is grown, and reacheth unto heaven, and thy dominion to the end of the earth. And whereas the king saw a watcher and an holy one coming down from heaven, and saying, Hew the tree down, and destroy it; yet leave the stump of the roots thereof in the earth, even with a band of iron and brass, in the tender grass of the field; and let it be wet with the dew of heaven, and let his portion be with the beasts of the field, till seven times pass over him; This is the interpretation, O king, and this is the decree of the most High, which is come upon my lord the king: That they shall drive thee from men, and thy dwelling shall be with the beasts of the field, and they shall make thee to eat grass as oxen, and they shall wet thee with the dew of heaven, and seven times shall pass over thee, till thou know that the most High ruleth in the kingdom of men, and giveth it to whomsoever he will. And whereas they commanded to leave the stump of the tree roots; thy kingdom shall be sure unto thee, after that thou shalt have known that the heavens do rule. Wherefore, O king, let my counsel be acceptable unto thee, and break off thy sins by righteousness, and thine iniquities by shewing mercy to the poor; if it may be a lengthening of thy tranquillity. All this came upon the king Nebuchadnezzar. At the end of twelve months he walked in the palace of the kingdom of Babylon. The king spake, and said, Is not this great Babylon, that I have built for the house of the kingdom by the

might of my power, and for the honour of my majesty? While the word was in the king's mouth, there fell a voice from heaven, saying, O king Nebuchadnezzar, to thee it is spoken; The kingdom is departed from thee. **And they shall drive thee from men, and thy dwelling shall be with the beasts of the field: they shall make thee to eat grass as oxen, and seven times shall pass over thee, until thou know that the most High ruleth in the kingdom of men, and giveth it to whomsoever he will.** The same hour was the thing fulfilled upon Nebuchadnezzar: and he was driven from men, and did eat grass as oxen, and his body was wet with the dew of heaven, till his hairs were grown like eagles' feathers, and his nails like birds' claws. And at the end of the days I Nebuchadnezzar lifted up mine eyes unto heaven, and mine understanding returned unto me, and I blessed the most High, and I praised and honoured him that liveth for ever, whose dominion is an everlasting dominion, and his kingdom is from generation to generation: And all the inhabitants of the earth are reputed as nothing: and he doeth according to his will in the army of heaven, and among the inhabitants of the earth: and none can stay his hand, or say unto him, What doest thou? At the same time my reason returned unto me; and for the glory of my kingdom, mine honour and brightness returned unto me; and my counsellors and my lords sought unto me; and I was established in my kingdom, and excellent majesty was added unto me. Now I Nebuchadnezzar praise and extol and honour the King of heaven, all whose works are truth, and his ways judgment: and those that walk in pride he is able to abase.

JESUS IS HERE

And the whole earth was of one language, and of one speech. And it came to pass, as they journeyed from the east, that they found a plain in the land of Shinar; and they dwelt there. And they said one to another, Go to, let us make brick, and burn them thoroughly. And they had brick for stone, and slime had they for mortar. And they said, Go to, let us build us a city and a tower, whose top may reach unto heaven; and let us make us a name, lest we be scattered abroad upon the face of the whole earth. And the Lord came down to see the city and the tower, which the children of men builded. And the Lord said, Behold, the people is one, and they have all one language; and this they begin to do: and now nothing will be restrained from them, which they have imagined to do. Go to, let us go down, and there confound their language, that they may not understand one another's speech. So the Lord scattered them abroad from thence upon the face of all the earth: and they left off to build the city. Therefore is the name of it called Babel; because the Lord did there confound the language of all the earth: and from thence did the Lord scatter them abroad upon the face of all the earth. (Genesis 11:1-9)

Can you hear the similarities here? Are you seeing how the entire Bible is connected as one long letter of instructions as to how we are to live our lives today? Then the King was told that He would reign until seven times passed over. Let us do a Google search and listen to what *times* means. Historicist interpreters have usually understood the “time, times and half a time” (i.e., $1+2+0.5=3.5$), “1,260 days” and “42 months” mentioned in Daniel and Revelation to be references to represent a period of 1,260 years (based on the 360-day Jewish year multiplied by 3.5). Day-year principle. But yet, this king is commanded to do this for seven times. How many years is that exactly?

Now to get back on track. Notice how these kingdoms have rule over the entire earth. Then pay attention to how at the end of the chapter how we are told that God will set up a kingdom that will destroy all the other kingdoms. It will not be left to the other people. This is after we get to know our Father, and He completely raises His invisible son inside of us. This will be the end of the world, and everybody will be judged by every word they speak. “But I say unto you, **That every idle word that men shall speak, they shall give account thereof in the day of judgment. For by thy words thou shalt be justified, and by thy words thou shalt be condemned**” (Matthew 12:36–37).

Now back to the kingdoms that cannot be divided. This is where we realize that our Father will not force himself on us. It truly must be our own choice as to which god we will serve. Let us listen to what our Father told Satan after he beguiled Eve.

Now the serpent was more subtil than any beast of the field which the Lord God had made. And he said unto the woman, Yea, hath God said, Ye shall not eat of every tree of the garden? And the woman said unto the serpent, We may eat of the fruit of the trees of the garden: But of the fruit of the tree which is in the midst of the garden, God hath said, Ye shall not eat of it, neither shall ye touch it, lest ye die. And the serpent said unto the woman, Ye shall not surely die: For God doth know that in the day ye eat thereof, then your eyes shall be opened, and ye shall be as gods, knowing good and evil. And when the woman saw that the tree was good for food, and that it was pleasant to the eyes, and a tree to be desired to make one wise, she took of the fruit thereof, and did eat, and gave also unto her husband with her; and he did eat. And the eyes of them both were opened, and they knew that they were naked; and they sewed fig leaves together, and made themselves aprons. And they heard the voice of

JESUS IS HERE

the Lord God walking in the garden in the cool of the day: and Adam and his wife hid themselves from the presence of the Lord God amongst the trees of the garden. And the Lord God called unto Adam, and said unto him, Where art thou? And he said, I heard thy voice in the garden, and I was afraid, because I was naked; and I hid myself. And he said, Who told thee that thou wast naked? Hast thou eaten of the tree, whereof I commanded thee that thou shouldest not eat? And the man said, The woman whom thou gavest to be with me, she gave me of the tree, and I did eat. And the Lord God said unto the woman, What is this that thou hast done? And the woman said, The serpent beguiled me, and I did eat. **And the Lord God said unto the serpent, Because thou hast done this, thou art cursed above all cattle, and above every beast of the field; upon thy belly shalt thou go, and dust shalt thou eat all the days of thy life.** (Genesis 3:1–14)

First thing we need to be paying attention to is the very first verse of this chapter. We have touched on this in this book and really laid it out in the last book. Man is counted as beast. Note that our Father did not say that the serpent is a beast. Man has just naturally assumed with his imagination that this must be some creature or something. Notice how He said it is more subtle than any beast. That includes man. This is just another reason our Father had me name the first book as He did. *Father, Forgive Us, We Haven't Been Listening*. Now pay attention to where our Father said the serpent would be. Remember how we are made in their image and we have dominion over the beast of the field? Notice how he is above the beast of the field? Many have heard “upon thy belly shalt thou go” and just naturally figured this to be a snake or something. Let us jump back to Daniel 2:32, “This image’s head was of fine gold, his breast and his arms of silver, **his belly and his thighs of brass.**” Now that we are learning that we are

the image in which this king saw, we can know that this is our belly. Our Father cursed Satan to our bellies. God was saying “on the man’s belly thou shalt go.”

Now we are going to look at something that might freak you out as it did me when our Father brought this to my attention. Notice how God said “dust shalt thou eat all of the days of thy life.” Let us do a Google search to show how much dust the human body eats. As it turns out, the average person ingests about 100 milligrams of dirt every single day. Overall, that equates to roughly six pounds of dirt in an average lifespan! That’s right, dirt is actually a pretty common staple of the human diet (April 29, 2015, “Strange Facts: **The Average Person Eats 6 LBS of Dirt in Their Lifetime**”).

Now let us listen to a few things we are told about our belly. “For our soul is bowed down to the dust: **our belly cleaveth unto the earth**” (Psalm 44:25). Remember we came from dust. “Should a wise man utter vain knowledge, **and fill his belly with the east wind?**” (Job 15:2). “They conceive mischief, and bring forth vanity, **and their belly prepareth deceit**” (Job 15:35). “**Surely he shall not feel quietness in his belly**, he shall not save of that which he desired” (Job 20:20). “Behold, **my belly is as wine which hath no vent; it is ready to burst like new bottles**” (Job 32:19). “**Whose end is destruction, whose God is their belly, and whose glory is in their shame, who mind earthly things.**” (Philippians 3:19). “**For they that are such serve not our Lord Jesus Christ, but their own belly; and by good words and fair speeches deceive the hearts of the simple**” (Romans 16:18).

Now this is what we are now hearing in Job 32, it is going to take us on a little journey. We need to listen to when Jesus talks about putting wine into old bottles. “Neither do men put new wine into old bottles: else the bottles break, and the wine runneth out, and the bottles perish: but they put new wine into new bottles, and both are preserved” (Matthew 9:17). This is where we need to realize that wine in knowledge in the Bible. So, when Jesus turned water in wine, he actually turned basic knowledge into a more in-depth knowledge. Remember this was what happened to me when I willingly gave everything I owned to the poor and needy and went out

JESUS IS HERE

in the wilderness to die. When I went out, that was me giving up the things and ways of this world. That was the old wine being poured out, and then I had this new wine poured into me. If our Father would have tried to pour this knowledge into me while I was yet in the old body of David, I would have lost my mind. I would have not understood of what I am being taught and would have vomited it up. It would not have broken the kingdom in which was in my belly. To help some to understand this, just read the books and listen to how a forty-nine-year-old man that failed at school, marriage (by man's terms), and college can understand the Bible in the fashion that I do. Then wrap all that up into one shot.

This is what Jesus was talking about when he said in Matthew 9:15–17, “And Jesus said unto them, Can the children of the bride-chamber mourn, as long as the bridegroom is with them? but the days will come, when the bridegroom shall be taken from them, and then shall they fast. No man putteth a piece of new cloth unto an old garment, for that which is put in to fill it up taketh from the garment, and the rent is made worse. Neither do men put new wine into old bottles: else the bottles break, and the wine runneth out, and the bottles perish: but they put new wine into new bottles, and both are preserved.” This was me when I went into the wilderness to die. I got rid of all the old wine when I willingly gave up everything of this world and even a place to lay my head. To this day, I have no place to call home.

Now to get back on the belly. “The righteous eateth to the satisfying of his soul: **but the belly of the wicked shall want**” (Proverbs 13:25). “When I heard, **my belly trembled**; my lips quivered at the voice: rottenness entered into my bones, and I trembled in myself, that I might rest in the day of trouble: when he cometh up unto the people, he will invade them with his troops” (Habakkuk 3:16). Now when we read this, it makes me think of James 2:19, “Thou believest that there is one God; thou doest well: **the devils also believe, and tremble.**” That is where these devils are. We all think of these things as being things we should be able to see; however, just as our Father and Jesus are invisible, so are all these spirits.

This is how Satan is able to walk to and fro in the earth even though he is locked up. He is locked up inside of man. Listen to God and Satan talk with each other in Job 1:7, “And the Lord said unto Satan, Whence comest thou? **Then Satan answered the Lord, and said, From going to and fro in the earth, and from walking up and down in it. God dwells inside us and so does Satan.**”

Remember how Jesus said the kingdom of God does not come with observation, but the kingdom is within you. “And when he was demanded of the Pharisees, when the kingdom of God should come, he answered them and said, **The kingdom of God cometh not with observation: Neither shall they say, Lo here! or, lo there! for, behold, the kingdom of God is within you.**” This is the kingdom that is made up of iron and clay. Remember how Satan will bruise the feet of the son of God. “And I will put enmity between thee and the woman, and between thy seed and her seed; **it shall bruise thy head, and thou shalt bruise his heel**” (Genesis 3:15). Bruising the head is bruising our conscience, for that is where our minds are. And look at what we walk on all the time. Are you starting to see this image in your head as the king sees it? Remember how everybody is part of the son of God.

This is why we are told that many people will not inherit the kingdom of God.

Know ye not that the unrighteous shall not inherit the kingdom of God? Be not deceived: neither fornicators, nor idolaters, nor adulterers, nor effeminate, nor abusers of themselves with mankind, Nor thieves, nor covetous, nor drunk- ards, nor revilers, nor extortioners, shall inherit the kingdom of God. And such were some of you: but ye are washed, but ye are sanctified, but ye are justified in the name of the Lord Jesus, and by the Spirit of our God. All things are lawful unto me, but all things are not expedient: all things are lawful for me, but I will not be brought under the power of any. Meats for the belly, and the

JESUS IS HERE

belly for meats: but God shall destroy both it and them. Now the body is not for fornication, but for the Lord; and the Lord for the body. (1 Corinthians 6:9–13)

Now the works of the flesh are manifest, which are these; Adultery, fornication, uncleanness, lasciviousness, Idolatry, witchcraft, hatred, variance, emulations, wrath, strife, seditions, here-sies, Envyings, murders, drunkenness, revellings, and such like: of the which I tell you before, as I have also told you in time past, that they which do such things shall not inherit the kingdom of God. (Galatians 5:19–21)

So, this is where I ask you to look deep into yourself and really think about what you think of other people. Then remember the cross that they are carrying. It is not gold, silver, wooden, or any other kind of material in which is a graven image. It is a spiritual cross built into their bodies. I am not talking about just the people in your immediate family. I am talking about any person you see with your eyes in your life. If you lay your eyes on them, they are now your neighbor. We are in the kingdom of God if it is within a person, even though most can't see it. Quick example: I cannot see you reading this book, does that mean you are not reading it?

Now we need to be realizing something else too. “For we are unto God a sweet savour of Christ, in them that are saved, and in them that perish: **To the one we are the savour of death unto death; and to the other the savour of life unto life.** And who is sufficient for these things. For we are not as many, which corrupt the word of God: but as of sincerity, but as of God, in the sight of God speak we in Christ” (2 Corinthians 2:15–17). Remember how a sacrifice can be a sweet savor unto our Father? “And Aaron’s sons shall burn it on the altar upon the burnt sacrifice, which is upon the wood that is on the fire: **it is an offering made by fire, of a sweet savour unto the Lord**” (Leviticus 3:5). “And that which they have need of, both young bullocks, and rams, and lambs, for the burnt offerings of the

God of heaven, wheat, salt, wine, and oil, according to the appointment of the priests which are at Jerusalem, let it be given them day by day without fail: **That they may offer sacrifices of sweet savours unto the God of heaven, and pray for the life of the king, and of his sons.** Also I have made a decree, **that whosoever shall alter this word,** let timber be pulled down from his house, and being set up, let him be hanged thereon; and let his house be made a dunghill for this” (Ezra 6:9–11). How many people make sacrifices and make sure others know about it? Such as doing alms to be seen by man. How many will drive by the poor and needy and ignore them so that they can give some guy standing behind a pulpit so that he can make his garments enlarged? Remember Jesus said to follow him, take up your cross and follow him. In other words, take up a bubble of love and give it unto others just as Jesus did.

I am going to post something that just happened minutes ago. I decided to take a little break and go for a walk. It is now after 1:00 a.m., so when I went outside, I could see lightning and could hear thunder in the distance. As I was walking, I heard this guy yell something toward me. I crossed the street to get closer. As I approached, he explained that he has been asking people for just some change; he was trying to get \$10, for he and his family needed to get into their room but needed \$10 more. He told me that he had been asking for a few hours now. If I lose my reward for telling this, then so be it. I gave him \$20. You could just hear the sigh of relief in his voice. I didn’t look at his skin color, I didn’t think about whether or not he deserved it. I saw a fellow servant of God in need of some help. It is not for me to judge whether or not if this man was going to do right or wrong with this money. I know that if did does wrong or got the money on false pretenses, then he is the one that must answer for that. I have done well no matter what. Now if I would have just thought he was not worth it, even if he was doing wrong, then we both would have had to answer to our Father.

I am sure it was our Father who caused me to go for the short walk because about ten to fifteen minutes after I gave him the money, and he got his family in the room, there started a downpour. But this

just reminds me of the scriptures that tell us that everyman is out for his own gain. “For all seek their own, not the things which are Jesus Christ’s” (Philippians 2:21). “His watchmen are blind: they are all ignorant, they are all dumb dogs, they cannot bark; sleeping, lying down, loving to slumber. Yea, they are greedy dogs which can never have enough, and they are shepherds that cannot understand: they all look to their own way, every one for his gain, from his quarter” (Isaiah 56:10–11). Now we can understand what the scriptures are saying when we hear they serve their own belly. “(For many walk, of whom I have told you often, and now tell you even weeping, that they are the enemies of the cross of Christ: **Whose end is destruction, whose God is their belly, and whose glory is in their shame, who mind earthly things.**)” (Philippians 3:18–19).

Now listen to what we are being told in Ephesians 4:28, “Let him that stole steal no more: but rather let him labour, working with his hands the thing which is good, that he may have to give to him that needeth.” When we listen to this, we can hear that the reason we work is so that we can help others. How is buying fancy cars, fancy boats, fancy clothes, and any other thing that is not a basic need to survive, working to help others? This was really shown in the chapter of “Jesus the Carpenter” in the last book. These are those that have not had Christ come into them and flip the tables of their hearts. “Forasmuch as ye are manifestly declared to be the epistle of Christ ministered by us, written not with ink, but with the Spirit of the living God; not in tables of stone, **but in fleshy tables of the heart**” (2 Corinthians 3:3). “Let their table become a snare before them: and that which should have been for their welfare, let it become a trap” (Psalm 69:22). “And David saith, Let their table be made a snare, and a trap, and a stumblingblock, and a recompence unto them: These tables are full of things of this world for yourself and not others” (Romans 11:9). Notice how these tables are fleshy and not of God.

This is where we realize that man is Satan. Listen to Jesus when he rebuked Satan. “From that time forth began Jesus to shew unto his disciples, how that he must go unto Jerusalem, and suffer many things of the elders and chief priests and scribes, and be killed, and be raised

again the third day. Then Peter took him, and began to rebuke him, saying, Be it far from thee, Lord: this shall not be unto thee. **But he turned, and said unto Peter, Get thee behind me, Satan: thou art an offence unto me: for thou savourest not the things that be of God, but those that be of men**” (Matthew 16:21–23). Wait, I thought Peter is a disciple? Yeah, that is right, instantly turned into Satan when he didn’t think Jesus should die the way that he said. “Now when he was in Jerusalem at the passover, in the feast day, many believed in his name, when they saw the miracles which he did. **But Jesus did not commit himself unto them, because he knew all men, And needed not that any should testify of man: for he knew what was in man**” (John 2:23–25).

Now we need to go back and listen to what the serpent told Eve. “And the serpent said unto the woman, Ye shall not surely die” (Genesis 3:4). Hear what he is telling Eve? He is saying you will not die. Let us listen to why our Father hated Esau. Let us listen to the story of Jacob and Esau.

And the boys grew: and Esau was a cunning hunter, a man of the field; and Jacob was a plain man, dwelling in tents. And Isaac loved Esau, because he did eat of his venison: but Rebekah loved Jacob. And Jacob sod pottage: and Esau came from the field, and he was faint: And Esau said to Jacob, Feed me, I pray thee, with that same red pottage; for I am faint: therefore was his name called Edom. And Jacob said, Sell me this day thy birthright. **And Esau said, Behold, I am at the point to die: and what profit shall this birthright do to me?** And Jacob said, Swear to me this day; and he sware unto him: and he sold his birthright unto Jacob. Then Jacob gave Esau bread and pottage of lentiles; and he did eat and drink, and rose up, and went his way: thus Esau despised his birthright. (Genesis 25:27–34)

JESUS IS HERE

Now this is where we are going to have to listen to what the outcome was for Esau when Esau sold his birthright for a morsel of meat.

And it came to pass, that when Isaac was old, and his eyes were dim, so that he could not see, he called Esau his eldest son, and said unto him, My son: and he said unto him, Behold, here am I. And he said, Behold now, I am old, I know not the day of my death: Now therefore take, I pray thee, thy weapons, thy quiver and thy bow, and go out to the field, and take me some veni- son; And make me savoury meat, such as I love, and bring it to me, that I may eat; that my soul may bless thee before I die. And Rebekah heard when Isaac spake to Esau his son. And Esau went to the field to hunt for venison, and to bring it. And Rebekah spake unto Jacob her son, saying, Behold, I heard thy father speak unto Esau thy brother, saying, Bring me venison, and make me savoury meat, that I may eat, and bless thee before the Lord before my death. Now therefore, my son, obey my voice according to that which I command thee. Go now to the flock, and fetch me from thence two good kids of the goats; and I will make them savoury meat for thy father, such as he loveth: And thou shalt bring it to thy father, that he may eat, and that he may bless thee before his death. And Jacob said to Rebekah his mother, Behold, Esau my brother is a hairy man, and I am a smooth man: My father peradventure will feel me, and I shall seem to him as a deceiver; and I shall bring a curse upon me, and not a bless- ing. And his mother said unto him, Upon me be thy curse, my son: only obey my voice, and go fetch me them. And he went, and fetched, and brought them to his mother: and his mother made savoury meat, such as his father loved.

And Rebekah took goodly raiment of her eldest son Esau, which were with her in the house, and put them upon Jacob her younger son: And she put the skins of the kids of the goats upon his hands, and upon the smooth of his neck: And she gave the savoury meat and the bread, which she had prepared, into the hand of her son Jacob. And he came unto his father, and said, My father: and he said, Here am I; who art thou, my son? And Jacob said unto his father, I am Esau thy first born; I have done according as thou badest me: arise, I pray thee, sit and eat of my venison, that thy soul may bless me. And Isaac said unto his son, How is it that thou hast found it so quickly, my son? And he said, Because the Lord thy God brought it to me. And Isaac said unto Jacob, Come near, I pray thee, that I may feel thee, my son, whether thou be my very son Esau or not. And Jacob went near unto Isaac his father; and he felt him, and said, The voice is Jacob's voice, but the hands are the hands of Esau. And he discerned him not, because his hands were hairy, as his brother Esau's hands: so he blessed him. And he said, Art thou my very son Esau? And he said, I am. And he said, Bring it near to me, and I will eat of my son's venison, that my soul may bless thee. And he brought it near to him, and he did eat: and he brought him wine and he drank. And his father Isaac said unto him, Come near now, and kiss me, my son. And he came near, and kissed him: and he smelled the smell of his raiment, and blessed him, and said, See, the smell of my son is as the smell of a field which the Lord hath blessed: Therefore God give thee of the dew of heaven, and the fatness of the earth, and plenty of corn and wine: Let people serve thee, and nations bow down to thee: be lord over thy brethren, and let thy mother's sons bow down to thee:

cursed be every one that curseth thee, and blessed be he that blesseth thee. And it came to pass, as soon as Isaac had made an end of blessing Jacob, and Jacob was yet scarce gone out from the presence of Isaac his father, that Esau his brother came in from his hunting. And he also had made savoury meat, and brought it unto his father, and said unto his father, Let my father arise, and eat of his son's venison, that thy soul may bless me. And Isaac his father said unto him, Who art thou? And he said, I am thy son, thy firstborn Esau. And Isaac trembled very exceedingly, and said, Who? where is he that hath taken venison, and brought it me, and I have eaten of all before thou camest, and have blessed him? yea, and he shall be blessed. And when Esau heard the words of his father, he cried with a great and exceeding bitter cry, and said unto his father, Bless me, even me also, O my father. And he said, **Thy brother came with subtilty, and hath taken away thy blessing. And he said, Is not he rightly named Jacob? for he hath supplanted me these two times: he took away my birthright; and, behold, now he hath taken away my blessing.** And he said, Hast thou not reserved a blessing for me? And Isaac answered and said unto Esau, Behold, I have made him thy lord, and all his brethren have I given to him for servants; and with corn and wine have I sustained him: and what shall I do now unto thee, my son? And Esau said unto his father, Hast thou but one blessing, my father? bless me, even me also, O my father. And Esau lifted up his voice, and wept. And Isaac his father answered and said unto him, Behold, thy dwelling shall be the fatness of the earth, and of the dew of heaven from above; And by thy sword shalt thou live, and shalt serve thy brother; and it shall come to pass when thou shalt have the dominion,

that thou shalt break his yoke from off thy neck. **And Esau hated Jacob because of the blessing wherewith his father blessed him: and Esau said in his heart, The days of mourning for my father are at hand; then will I slay my brother Jacob. And these words of Esau her elder son were told to Rebekah: and she sent and called Jacob her younger son, and said unto him, Behold, thy brother Esau, as touching thee, doth comfort himself, purposing to kill thee.** (Genesis 27:1–42)

Now we didn't post everything that happened after the deal went down, for that would just take too much room. Notice how after Jacob received the blessing, Esau was very angry for what his brother had done. I won't post it again; however, isn't this the same thing Adam and Eve did in the very beginning? Jacob did not force Esau to give up his birthright. Esau did not have to give up his birthright. But, because Esau was mad at himself for doing so, he hated his brother. That would be like me driving my semi down the interstate at 100 mph in a 65-mph speed zone and getting stopped by the police and thinking it was the officer's fault that I was getting a ticket.

Now let us listen to what we are told about Esau in the New Testament. **"Lest there be any fornicator, or profane person, as Esau, who for one morsel of meat sold his birthright. For ye know how that afterward, when he would have inherited the blessing, he was rejected: for he found no place of repentance, though he sought it carefully with tears"** (Hebrews 12:16–17). Are you hearing why Esau was hated by our Father? Most are probably thinking it is because he sold his birthright for a morsel of meat. That is only part of it; he sold it so that he wouldn't die. We all know that our Father and Jesus are not of this world. This is because this is Satan's world or kingdom. When we want to live in this world longer than our Father needs us to be here, we are loving Satan's kingdom. That is why we are told several times that those that save their lives will lose it. **"For whosoever will save his life shall lose it: and whosoever will lose his life for my sake**

shall find it” (Matthew 16:25). **“Whosoever shall seek to save his life shall lose it; and whosoever shall lose his life shall preserve it”** (Luke 17:33).

This is why we are told that the last enemy that must be destroyed is death. This is not a physical death, but rather a spiritual death. It is letting go of the ways and things of this world. Let us listen to 1 Corinthians 13:24–26, “Then cometh the end, when he shall have delivered up the kingdom to God, even the Father; when he shall have put down all rule and all authority and power. For he must reign, till he hath put all enemies under his feet. **The last enemy that shall be destroyed is death.**” We are made to naturally want to live. We are brought up in a world in which we learn that we must take care of ourselves before we can help others, but we just heard in Luke 17 that if we will lose our life, we will save/preserve it. This entire Bible is about learning how to love others as you love yourself. If we were supposed to try and live as long as we can, then why do we hear this in 1 Timothy 4:8, **“For bodily exercise profiteth little: but godliness is profitable unto all things, having promise of the life that now is, and of that which is to come”**? It is not about actually dying, but rather about dying to the things and ways of the world.

Now we know of police officers and military who put their lives in danger to help others, right? When someone runs into a burning building or a good Samaritan helps someone from extreme dangers and loses his or her life, this world marks them for a hero. And rightfully so. But now let us reflect back to the last book our Father had me write. We showed that we are in hell now and that we all are walking through spiritual fire. That includes the homeless, poor and needy, widows, handicaps, homosexuals, etc. But yet there are so many people that will just ignore these people and let them burn. Can you see how trying to save your own life will hurt others? And then when our Father sees you allowing this servant child of His and vessel of God burn, you’re provoking Him to anger. This person is in the fire the same as you are. Be the hero without being the known hero.

Now this does not mean that you should run out and kill your- self or anything like that because if our Father has allowed you to live, you are still needed in the flesh.

For to me to live is Christ, and to die is gain. But if I live in the flesh, this is the fruit of my labour: yet what I shall choose I wot not. For I am in a strait betwixt two, having a desire to depart, and to be with Christ; which is far better: **Nevertheless to abide in the flesh is more need- ful for you.** (Philippians 1:21–24)

This is where we need to remember that Jesus dwells in everybody on the earth and is using you to finish building the body. What I mean by that is our Father has allowed you to live, and if you know Him, you know that He is the one that kills, as Jesus told us in Luke 12:5, “But I will forewarn you whom ye shall fear: **Fear him, which after he hath killed hath power to cast into hell; yea, I say unto you, Fear him.**” Satan or man does not have the authority to kill, as we heard in the book of Job.

Now that have learned that man is Satan, we need to listen to a few things about seeking glory of men. “Nevertheless among the chief rulers also many believed on him; but because of the Pharisees they did not confess him, lest they should be put out of the syna- gogue: **For they loved the praise of men more than the praise of God**” (John 12:42–43).

Take heed that ye do not your alms before men, to be seen of them: otherwise ye have no reward of your Father which is in heaven. Therefore when thou doest thine alms, do not sound a trumpet before thee, as the hypocrites do in the synagogues and in the streets, that they may have glory of men. Verily I say unto you, **They have their reward.** But when thou doest alms, let not thy left hand know what thy right hand doeth: That thine alms may be in secret:

JESUS IS HERE

and thy Father which seeth in secret himself shall reward thee openly. **And when thou prayest, thou shalt not be as the hypocrites are: for they love to pray standing in the synagogues and in the corners of the streets, that they may be seen of men. Verily I say unto you, They have their reward. But thou, when thou prayest, enter into thy closet, and when thou hast shut thy door, pray to thy Father which is in secret; and thy Father which seeth in secret shall reward thee openly. But when ye pray, use not vain repetitions, as the heathen do: for they think that they shall be heard for their much speaking.** (Matthew 6:1-7)

I must break here for a second, for I know that there are many that do not realize that this door we are to shut is our lips. “Set a watch, **O Lord, before my mouth; keep the door of my lips**” (Psalm 141:3). Our Father is inside of you and knows all of your thoughts, He does not need you to pray out loud.

Be not ye therefore like unto them: for your Father knoweth what things ye have need of, before ye ask him. After this manner therefore pray ye: Our Father which art in heaven, Hallowed be thy name. Thy kingdom come, Thy will be done in earth, as it is in heaven. Give us this day our daily bread. And forgive us our debts, as we forgive our debtors. And lead us not into temptation, but deliver us from evil: For thine is the kingdom, and the power, and the glory, for ever. Amen. For if ye forgive men their trespasses, your heavenly Father will also forgive you: But if ye forgive not men their trespasses, neither will your Father forgive your trespasses. Moreover when ye fast, be not, as the hypocrites, of a sad countenance: for they disfigure their faces, that they may appear unto men to fast.

Verily I say unto you, They have their reward. But thou, when thou fastest, anoint thine head, and wash thy face; That thou appear not unto men to fast, but unto thy Father which is in secret: and thy Father, which seeth in secret, shall reward thee openly. Lay not up for yourselves treasures upon earth, where moth and rust doth corrupt, and where thieves break through and steal: But lay up for yourselves treasures in heaven, where neither moth nor rust doth corrupt, and where thieves do not break through nor steal: For where your treasure is, there will your heart be also. (Matthew 6:8–21)

Now it probably makes a little more sense as to why we are told everyman sins. “**For all have sinned, and come short of the glory of God**” (Romans 3:23). Now we can really understand why we are told to do all these things so that man cannot see or hear what we do. This is how Satan is turned into an angel of light. “But what I do, that I will do, that I may cut off occasion from them which desire occasion; that wherein they glory, they may be found even as we. For such are false apostles, deceitful workers, transforming themselves into the apostles of Christ. And no marvel; **for Satan himself is transformed into an angel of light**” (2 Corinthians 11:12–14). The God of this world makes people feel as if they are doing right by our Father by thinking of themselves before they think of others. He makes people feel as if they should want to live in this world as long as they can. He makes people feel as if their life is measured by what they have and not what they can give. This is where we need to listen to Psalm 109:6, “**Set thou a wicked man over him: and let Satan stand at his right hand.**” There are so many people that believe that the power of prayer is working for them. I mean like groups of people praying out loud so that man or Satan can hear. Listen to what you just heard. There is no reward from our Father if you do any of these things so that man can hear or see of what you are doing. Remember that Satan will do many wonders.

JESUS IS HERE

And then shall that Wicked be revealed, whom the Lord shall consume with the spirit of his mouth, and shall destroy with the brightness of his coming: **Even him, whose coming is after the working of Satan with all power and signs and lying wonders, And with all deceivableness of unrighteousness in them that perish; because they received not the love of the truth, that they might be saved.** And for this cause God shall send them strong delusion, that they should believe a lie: That they all might be damned who believed not the truth, but had pleasure in unrighteousness. (2 Thessalonians 2:8–12)

Now I know there are a lot of people who think that there is no harm in having things like pictures, statues, knickknacks, models, crosses, or anything that resembles anything in the heavens, in the earth, or in the water beneath the earth. Let us listen to what our Father says about that.

And the covenant that I have made with you ye shall not forget; neither shall ye fear other gods. But the Lord your God ye shall fear; and he shall deliver you out of the hand of all your enemies. Howbeit they did not hearken, but they did after their former manner. So these nations feared the Lord, **and served their graven images, both their children, and their children's children: as did their fathers, so do they unto this day.** (2 Kings 17:38–41)

Now let us listen to the second commandment, Exodus 20:4–5, **“Thou shalt not make unto thee any graven image, or any likeness of any thing that is in heaven above, or that is in the earth beneath, or that is in the water under the earth. Thou shalt not bow down thyself to them, nor serve them: for I the Lord thy God am a jealous God, visiting the iniquity of the fathers upon the children unto**

the third and fourth generation of them that hate me.” It does not matter if it is in the image of anything in the heavens, earth, or the water, it is a graven image. When people buy these things, what are they for? They are to impress others to let them know what you are about. We are supposed to become as living waters. “For my people have committed two evils; they have forsaken me the fountain of living waters, and hewed them out cisterns, broken cisterns, that can hold no water” (Jeremiah 2:13). Remember that we showed that water is knowledge? That knowledge is the knowledge of a love for others. This is why we are told to just be content with the very basics. **“And having food and raiment let us be therewith content”** (1 Timothy 6:8). Now I am sure there are many that are going to try and defraud me for having my picture on the back cover over the last book and the front cover of this book. That is so that this world can truly see that Jesus is here! Other than that, I do not have any graven images. I will not even let people send me pictures.

Now look how man is rewarded by man for his deeds. Look how man feels that they have to look good in the eyes of others. Look how this world thinks that if a person is not cleaned up and dressed to impress, they are unworthy. I have heard so many people say that they dress nice to feel better about themselves and not to impress. I will say that is just another way of trying to justify yourself. You do not put on nice clothes or fix your makeup unless you are somewhat trying to look good for the opinion of others. Then people will go and spend a lot of money on themselves instead of helping others. I personally feel that if you think you need makeup or to fancy up to be around people, you are not allowing the inner self to be seen. As we are told in 1 Peter 3:3–4, “Whose adorning let it not be that **outward adorning of plaiting the hair, and of wearing of gold, or of putting on of apparel;** But let it be the hidden man of the heart, in that which is not corruptible, even the ornament of a meek and quiet spirit, which is in the sight of God of great price.” Then listen to what we are told in Galatians 1:10, **“For do I now persuade men, or God? or do I seek to please men? for if I yet pleased men, I should not be the servant of Christ.”** “Nevertheless among the chief rulers also many believed

on him; but because of the Pharisees they did not confess him, lest they should be put out of the synagogue: **For they loved the praise of men more than the praise of God**" (John 12:42– 43). Who are you trying to be praised by when you dress in skimpy clothes, suits, or put on expensive jewelry? I could go on forever in the ways this world ignores the ways of God, but if you have read any or all of the three books our Father has had me write, listen to your conscience and decide who your heart will be for.

This leads us into the last part of this chapter. There are any people that are watching for the antichrist and the mark of the beast. Our Father had me show in the first book that this mark is not going to be a computer chip or anything like that. By now I hope people can tell that the Bible is spiritual, and this mark is spiritual. Let us listen to Revelation 13:1–18.

And I stood upon the sand of the sea, and saw a beast rise up out of the sea, having seven heads and ten horns, and upon his horns ten crowns, and upon his heads the name of blasphemy. And the beast which I saw was like unto a leopard, and his feet were as the feet of a bear, and his mouth as the mouth of a lion: and the dragon gave him his power, and his seat, and great authority. And I saw one of his heads as it were wounded to death; and his deadly wound was healed: and all the world wondered after the beast. And they worshipped the dragon which gave power unto the beast: and they worshipped the beast, saying, Who is like unto the beast? who is able to make war with him? And there was given unto him a mouth speaking great things and blasphemies; and power was given unto him to continue forty and two months. And he opened his mouth in blasphemy against God, to blaspheme his name, and his tabernacle, and them that dwell in heaven. And it was given unto him to make war with the saints, and to overcome them: and

power was given him over all kindreds, and tongues, and nations. And all that dwell upon the earth shall worship him, whose names are not written in the book of life of the Lamb slain from the foundation of the world. If any man have an ear, let him hear. He that leadeth into captivity shall go into captivity: he that killeth with the sword must be killed with the sword. Here is the patience and the faith of the saints. And I beheld another beast coming up out of the earth; and he had two horns like a lamb, and he spake as a dragon. And he exerciseth all the power of the first beast before him, and causeth the earth and them which dwell therein to worship the first beast, whose deadly wound was healed. And he doeth great wonders, so that he maketh fire come down from heaven on the earth in the sight of men, And deceiveth them that dwell on the earth by the means of those miracles which he had power to do in the sight of the beast; saying to them that dwell on the earth, that they should make an image to the beast, which had the wound by a sword, and did live. And he had power to give life unto the image of the beast, that the image of the beast should both speak, and cause that as many as would not worship the image of the beast should be killed. And he causeth all, both small and great, rich and poor, free and bond, to receive a mark in their right hand, or in their foreheads: And that no man might buy or sell, save he that had the mark, or the name of the beast, or the number of his name. **Here is wisdom. Let him that hath understanding count the number of the beast: for it is the number of a man; and his number is Six hundred threescore and six.**

Let us listen to the two greatest commandments.

JESUS IS HERE

Master, which is the great commandment in the law? Jesus said unto him, **Thou shalt love the Lord thy God with all thy heart, and with all thy soul, and with all thy mind. This is the first and great commandment. And the second is like unto it, Thou shalt love thy neighbour as thy- self. On these two commandments hang all the law and the prophets.** (Mathew 22:36–40)

Now we need to be thinking of when our Father created man.

And God said, Let us make man in our image, after our likeness: and let them have dominion over the fish of the sea, and over the fowl of the air, and over the cattle, and over all the earth, and over every creeping thing that creepeth upon the earth. So God created man in his own image, in the image of God created he him; male and female created he them. And God blessed them, and God said unto them, Be fruitful, and multiply, and replenish the earth, and subdue it: and have dominion over the fish of the sea, and over the fowl of the air, and over every living thing that moveth upon the earth. And God said, Behold, I have given you every herb bearing seed, which is upon the face of all the earth, and every tree, in the which is the fruit of a tree yielding seed; to you it shall be for meat. And to every beast of the earth, and to every fowl of the air, and to every thing that creepeth upon the earth, wherein there is life, I have given every green herb for meat: and it was so. **And God saw every thing that he had made, and, behold, it was very good. And the evening and the morning were the sixth day.** (Genesis 1:26–31)

Man was created on the sixth day of creation, so when a man chooses not to love God with all of his heart, first six. When a man chooses not to love God with all of his soul, second six. When a man chooses not to love God with all of his mind, third six. Now I know that there are many that believe there will come a day in which we will not be able to buy and sell. This transaction has already been completed. Remember our Father has purchased us with the blood of His son. "I have blotted out, as a thick cloud, thy transgressions, and, as a cloud, thy sins: return unto me; **for I have redeemed thee**" (Isaiah 44:22). That is why we are now in the thousand-year reign with Christ. You got here by cleaving onto our Father somehow or another. This is when our Father has put man to the test to see whose heart would be for Him and whose would not. "All the command- ments which I command thee this day shall ye observe to do, that ye may live, and multiply, and go in and possess the land which the Lord sware unto your fathers. And thou shalt remember all the way which the Lord thy God led thee these forty years in the wil- derness, to humble thee, and to prove thee, **to know what was in thine heart, whether thou wouldest keep his commandments, or no**" (Deuteronomy 8:1-2). When you decide not to love God just by not trying to take the time to get to know Him, you are taking the spiritual mark of the beast.

Now we also need to be looking at how many believe that there will be a new world order before the end. This new world order has been set up for a long time. Let us listen to Luke 2:1-3, "And it came to pass in those days, **that there went out a decree from Caesar Augustus that all the world should be taxed.** (And this taxing was first made when Cyrenius was governor of Syria.) And all went to be taxed, every one into his own city." Obviously, this was new at the time. It went throughout the world. **There is the new world order.** There is not going to be a time in which you will not be able to physically buy your food. You were purchased already by our Father, and He is the mastermind behind it all. It is your choice as to which king, lord, or spirit has dominion over you, but you still belong to our Father. Are you starting to see why our Father has raised me to be

the ensign of the end of the world? It is part of all this being hidden from the wise and prudent.

Now if you are seeing how this beast is devouring this world, you should be able to start understanding 1 John 2:18, "Little children, it is the last time: and as ye have heard that antichrist shall come, even now are there many antichrists; whereby we know that it is the last time." Now from the last book, and we touched on it in this one, many people can and do represent one person, or one person can represent many people in our Bible.

Then all the children of Israel went out, **and the congregation was gathered together as one man**, from Dan even to Beersheba, with the land of Gilead, unto the Lord in Mizpeh. And the chief of all the people, even of all the tribes of Israel, presented themselves in the assembly of the people of God, four hundred thousand footmen that drew sword. (Now the children of Benjamin heard that the children of Israel were gone up to Mizpeh.) Then said the children of Israel, Tell us, how was this wickedness? And the Levite, the husband of the woman that was slain, answered and said, I came into Gibeah that belongeth to Benjamin, I and my concubine, to lodge. And the men of Gibeah rose against me, and beset the house round about upon me by night, and thought to have slain me: and my concubine have they forced, that she is dead. And I took my concubine, and cut her in pieces, and sent her throughout all the country of the inheritance of Israel: for they have committed lewdness and folly in Israel. Behold, ye are all children of Israel; give here your advice and counsel. **And all the people arose as one man**, saying, We will not any of us go to his tent, neither will we any of us turn into his house. But now this shall be the thing which we will do to Gibeah; we will go up by lot against it;

And we will take ten men of an hundred throughout all the tribes of Israel, and an hundred of a thousand, and a thousand out of ten thousand, to fetch victual for the people, that they may do, when they come to Gibeah of Benjamin, according to all the folly that they have wrought in Israel. **So all the men of Israel were gathered against the city, knit together as one man.** (Judges 20:1–11)

And all the people gathered themselves together as one man into the street that was before the water gate; and they spake unto Ezra the scribe to bring the book of the law of Moses, which the Lord had commanded to Israel. (Nehemiah 8:1)

This antichrist that everybody is looking for is and has been here since the beginning. Remember we are hearing conversations being held in heaven when we listen to the Bible. This antichrist does not believe the Bible. He believes God changed so that man can do as he wants, and his sins are automatically forgiven. He believes that the Bible is about people of the past. This antichrist believes his life matters more than others'. This antichrist believes that he does not have to take the time to get to know our Father. This antichrist thinks he is doing right in his own eyes. **“Every way of a man is right in his own eyes: but the Lord pondereth the hearts”** (Proverbs 21:2). This antichrist loves this world and the things of it. **“Love not the world, neither the things that are in the world. If any man love the world, the love of the Father is not in him. For all that is in the world, the lust of the flesh, and the lust of the eyes, and the pride of life, is not of the Father, but is of the world”** (1 John 2:15–16).

Notice how the pride of life is not of the Father? Look at how this world wants to live longer. Then listen to this in Proverbs 16:5, **“Every one that is proud in heart is an abomination to the Lord: though hand join in hand, he shall not be unpunished.”** **“Woe to the crown of pride,** to the drunkards of Ephraim, whose glorious

beauty is a fading flower, which are on the head of the fat valleys of them that are overcome with wine! Behold, the Lord hath a mighty and strong one, which as a tempest of hail and a destroying storm, as a flood of mighty waters overflowing, shall cast down to the earth with the hand. **The crown of pride, the drunkards of Ephraim, shall be trodden under feet**" (Isaiah 28:1–3).

Now I have shown you of many witnesses showing that I am the son of man that has been prophesied about. And I know that there are many that think this is something that happened in the past or is way off in the future, for many don't think it can happen in their lifetime. Here is the catch: it was then, and it is now. Just as I showed in the chapter "Believing," the first time I read the Bible, I believed it was about our lives today. So now listen to 1 John 4:1–21.

Beloved, believe not every spirit, but try the spir- its whether they are of God: because many false prophets are gone out into the world. Hereby know ye the Spirit of God: **Every spirit that con- fesseth that Jesus Christ is come in the flesh is of God: And every spirit that confesseth not that Jesus Christ is come in the flesh is not of God: and this is that spirit of antichrist, whereof ye have heard that it should come; and even now already is it in the world.** Ye are of God, little chil- dren, and have overcome them: because greater is he that is in you, than he that is in the world. They are of the world: therefore speak they of the world, and the world heareth them. We are of God: he that knoweth God heareth us; he that is not of God heareth not us. Hereby know we the spirit of truth, and the spirit of error. Beloved, let us love one another: for love is of God; and every one that loveth is born of God, and knoweth God. He that loveth not knoweth not God; for God is love. In this was manifested the love of God toward us, because that God sent his only begotten Son into the world, that

we might live through him. Herein is love, not that we loved God, but that he loved us, and sent his Son to be the propitiation for our sins. Beloved, if God so loved us, we ought also to love one another. No man hath seen God at any time. If we love one another, God dwelleth in us, and his love is perfected in us. Hereby know we that we dwell in him, and he in us, because he hath given us of his Spirit. And we have seen and do testify that the Father sent the Son to be the Saviour of the world. Whosoever shall confess that Jesus is the Son of God, God dwelleth in him, and he in God. And we have known and believed the love that God hath to us. God is love; and he that dwelleth in love dwelleth in God, and God in him. Herein is our love made perfect, that we may have boldness in the day of judgment: because as he is, so are we in this world. There is no fear in love; but perfect love casteth out fear: because fear hath torment. He that feareth is not made perfect in love. We love him, because he first loved us. If a man say, I love God, and hateth his brother, he is a liar: for he that loveth not his brother whom he hath seen, how can he love God whom he hath not seen? And this commandment have we from him, That he who loveth God love his brother also.

The antichrist is not going to be one man like the president of a country or something like that. Many people represent one person, as shown earlier in the book. Or one person can represent one person. This antichrist is already here and not going to be set up or coming in the future. And the mark of the beast, as shown in the first book our Father had me write, is not a computer chip or something like that. Let us listen to the two greatest commandments.

Master, which is the great commandment in the law? Jesus said unto him, Thou shalt love the Lord

JESUS IS HERE

thy God with all thy heart, and with all thy soul, and with all thy mind. This is the first and great commandment. And the second is like unto it, Thou shalt love thy neighbour as thyself. On these two commandments hang all the law and the prophets. (Matthew 22:36–40)

Now check this out, for it is spiritual as well. When a man chooses not to love God with all of his heart=6, soul=6, mind=6. Now when it comes to loving thy neighbor as yourself, God dwells in every person on this planet, so if you do not have a love for all, then you do not love God. That is why it is equal.

Now let us listen to 2 John 1:7, “For many deceivers are entered into the world, who confess not that Jesus Christ is come in the flesh.” This is a deceiver and an antichrist. Notice how this tells us that “Jesus Christ is come in the flesh.” It does not say that Jesus came in the flesh; however, he is in the flesh. This is why believing is about believing that the Bible is one long letter from our Father, giving us instructions on how we are to live our lives today and not just for the people of the past. And this is not some plot to say that you better believe or else or something like that. If you have made it this far in the book, then obviously you believe.

In the last book, our Father had me show what makes a man desolate. “The Lord redeemeth the soul of his servants: **and none of them that trust in him shall be desolate**” (Psalm 34:22). These books that our Father has had me write will bring people back to learn of Him and His ways. They will start putting their trust back into our Father and stop listening to Satan. So, I am saying that I believe I am the abomination of desolation spoken of in the book of Daniel. “**When ye therefore shall see the abomination of desolation, spoken of by Daniel the prophet, stand in the holy place, (whoso readeth, let him understand:)**” (Matthew 24:15). Remember our Father did say that He will make a people from those that are not His people. “**And I will sow her unto me in the earth; and I will have mercy upon her that had not obtained mercy; and I will say to them which**

were not my people, Thou art my people; and they shall say, Thou art my God” (Hosea 2:23). I am not in the country we call Israel, but I am married to our Father, as explained in the last book.

Now I know that there are many that are going to try and figure out the day.

And at that time shall Michael stand up, the great prince which standeth for the children of thy people: and there shall be a time of trouble, such as never was since there was a nation even to that same time: and at that time thy people shall be delivered, every one that shall be found written in the book. And many of them that sleep in the dust of the earth shall awake, some to everlasting life, and some to shame and everlasting contempt. And they that be wise shall shine as the brightness of the firmament; and they that turn many to righteousness as the stars for ever and ever. But thou, O Daniel, shut up the words, and seal the book, even to the time of the end: many shall run to and fro, and knowledge shall be increased. Then I Daniel looked, and, behold, there stood other two, the one on this side of the bank of the river, and the other on that side of the bank of the river. And one said to the man clothed in linen, which was upon the waters of the river, How long shall it be to the end of these wonders? And I heard the man clothed in linen, which was upon the waters of the river, when he held up his right hand and his left hand unto heaven, and swore by him that liveth for ever that it shall be for a time, times, and an half; and when he shall have accomplished to scatter the power of the holy people, all these things shall be finished. And I heard, but I understood not: then said I, O my Lord, what shall be the end of these things? And he said, Go thy way, Daniel: for the words are closed up and

JESUS IS HERE

sealed till the time of the end. Many shall be purified, and made white, and tried; but the wicked shall do wickedly: and none of the wicked shall understand; but the wise shall understand. And from the time that the daily sacrifice shall be taken away, and the abomination that maketh desolate set up, there shall be a thousand two hundred and ninety days. Blessed is he that waiteth, and cometh to the thousand three hundred and five and thirty days. But go thou thy way till the end be: for thou shalt rest, and stand in thy lot at the end of the days. (Daniel 12:1–13)

For those that want to try and figure this out. When was this set up? March of 2016? October of 2018, or maybe even after this book is published. Even if you do figure something out, remember the days will be cut short. **“And except those days should be shortened, there should no flesh be saved: but for the elect’s sake those days shall be shortened”** (Matthew 24:22).

For the Lord will have mercy on Jacob, and will yet choose Israel, and set them in their own land: and the strangers shall be joined with them, and they shall cleave to the house of Jacob. And the people shall take them, and bring them to their place: and the house of Israel shall possess them in the land of the Lord for servants and hand- maids: and they shall take them captives, whose captives they were; and they shall rule over their oppressors. And it shall come to pass in the day that the Lord shall give thee rest from thy sorrow, and from thy fear, and from the hard bondage wherein thou wast made to serve, That thou shalt take up this proverb against the king of Babylon, and say, How hath the oppressor ceased! the golden city ceased! The Lord hath broken the staff of the wicked, and the sceptre of the rulers. He who smote the people in wrath with a continual stroke, he that ruled the nations in anger, is persecuted, and none hindereth. The whole earth is at rest, and is quiet: they break forth into singing. Yea, the fir trees rejoice at thee, and the cedars of Lebanon, saying, Since thou art laid down, no feller is come up against us. Hell from beneath is moved for

thee to meet thee at thy coming: it stirreth up the dead for thee, even all the chief ones of the earth; it hath raised up from their thrones all the kings of the nations. All they shall speak and say unto thee, Art thou also become weak as we? art thou become like unto us? Thy pomp is brought down to the grave, and the noise of thy viols: the worm is spread under thee, and the worms cover thee. How art thou fallen from heaven, O Lucifer, son of the morn- ing! how art thou cut down to the ground, which didst weaken the nations! For thou hast said in thine heart, I will ascend into heaven, I will exalt my throne above the stars of God: I will sit also upon the mount of the congregation, in the sides of the north: I will ascend above the heights of the clouds; I will be like the most High. Yet thou shalt be brought down to hell, to the sides of the pit. They that see thee shall narrowly look upon thee, and consider thee, saying, Is this the man that made the earth to tremble, that did shake kingdoms; That made the world as a wilderness, and destroyed the cities thereof; that opened not the house of his prisoners? All the kings of the nations, even all of them, lie in glory, every one in his own house. But thou art cast out of thy grave like an abominable branch, and as the raiment of those that are slain, thrust through with a sword, that go down to the stones of the pit; as a carcase trodden under feet. Thou shalt not be joined with them in burial, because thou hast destroyed thy land, and slain thy people: the seed of evildoers shall never be renowned. Prepare slaughter for his children for the iniquity of their fathers; that they do not rise, nor possess the land, nor fill the face of the world with cities. For I will rise up against them, saith the Lord of hosts, and cut off from Babylon the name, and remnant, and son, and nephew, saith the Lord. I will also make it a pos- session for the bittern, and pools of water: and I will sweep it with the besom of destruction, saith the Lord of hosts. **The Lord of hosts hath sworn, saying, Surely as I have thought, so shall it come to pass; and as I have purposed, so shall it stand: That I will break the Assyrian in my land, and upon my mountains tread him under foot: then shall his yoke depart from off them, and his bur- den depart from off their shoulders. This is the purpose that is purposed upon the whole earth: and this is the hand**

that is stretched out upon all the nations. For the Lord of hosts hath pur- posed, and who shall disannul it? and his hand is stretched out, and who shall turn it back? In the year that king Ahaz died was this burden. Rejoice not thou, whole Palestina, because the rod of him that smote thee is broken: for out of the serpent's root shall come forth a cock- atrice, and his fruit shall be a fiery flying serpent. And the firstborn of the poor shall feed, and the needy shall lie down in safety: and I will kill thy root with famine, and he shall slay thy remnant. Howl, O gate; cry, O city; thou, whole Palestina, art dissolved: for there shall come from the north a smoke, and none shall be alone in his appointed times. What shall one then answer the messengers of the nation? That the Lord hath founded Zion, and the poor of his people shall trust in it. (Isaiah 14:1–32)

In closing of this chapter, I want to talk about a movie that I have seen that is based on a true story. Earlier in the book, I told you all that I think of our Father every moment of the day. I am giving an example of this now. Have you ever seen the movie *The Exorcism of Emily Rose*? She was possessed. Toward the end of the movie, when they did the exorcism on her, they asked what the name of the demon was. She replied, “One, two, three, four, five, six. I am the one the dwells within.” This movie is based on a true story, and her grave can be visited still. Without getting into all the details of the movie, that was our Father showing the world that Satan is locked up inside of us, and yes, he wants out. I know that there are some that believe that it is just a movie. To that, I say you do not believe that our Father is the creator of everything. Our Father has the ultimate dominion over every person on this planet. And yes, He has the power to make movies also.

This does not mean that every movie that we see is a direct message from our Father. If that was the case, that would make Him the author of confusion, and we know that He is not. To give an example of what I mean. I have seen many “end of the world” type of movies. All but one of them has man changing God’s mind or surviving the end, if you will. The one that I mention, nobody survived, but I

can- not remember the name of it. When the end comes, there will be no changing or stopping it.

Now that we have reviewed the chapter, we are going to be looking at this vision a little different. It is still the same vision, but as you noticed, it was stated that we live in these kingdoms. The truth is these kingdoms are within each of us. Let us remember that we are told that our Father nor Jesus are from this world. Let us listen to a few times that we can hear Jesus say that he is not of this world.

Jesus answered, **My kingdom is not of this world:** if my kingdom were of this world, then would my servants fight, that I should not be delivered to the Jews: but now is my kingdom not from hence. (John 18:36)

And he said unto them, Ye are from beneath; I am from above: ye are of this world; I am not of this world. (John 8:23)

I have given them thy word; and the world hath hated them, **because they are not of the world, even as I am not of the world.** I pray not that thou shouldest take them out of the world, but that thou shouldest keep them from the evil. They are not of the world, even as I am not of the world. Sanctify them through thy truth: thy word is truth. (John 17:14–17)

Now let us take a look as to who this world belongs to if you haven't heard it already. "**And be not conformed to this world:** but be ye transformed by the renewing of your mind, that ye may prove what is that good, and acceptable, and perfect, will of God" (Romans 12:2). "**In whom the god of this world hath blinded the minds of them which believe not,** lest the light of the glorious gospel of Christ, who is the image of God, should shine unto them" (2 Corinthians

JESUS IS HERE

4:4). Remember how man was man before our Father breathed life into man so that man became a living soul.

Now we need to listen to when Jesus tells us the kingdom will rise against kingdom.

And Jesus answered and said unto them, Take heed that no man deceive you. For many shall come in my name, saying, I am Christ; and shall deceive many. And ye shall hear of wars and rumours of wars: see that ye be not troubled: for all these things must come to pass, but the end is not yet. **For nation shall rise against nation, and kingdom against kingdom: and there shall be famines, and pestilences, and earthquakes, in divers places. All these are the beginning of sorrows.** (Matthew 24:4–8)

I showed in the last book of how many have come before me and claim to be Christ, but none of them could show that they have been in the belly of the earth for three days and three nights, as I have shown. This happened almost thirty years before I was baptized with the Holy Ghost, almost to the day.

Then certain of the scribes and of the Pharisees answered, saying, Master, we would see a sign from thee. But he answered and said unto them, **An evil and adulterous generation seeketh after a sign; and there shall no sign be given to it, but the sign of the prophet Jonas: For as Jonas was three days and three nights in the whale's belly; so shall the Son of man be three days and three nights in the heart of the earth.** The men of Nineveh shall rise in judgment with this generation, and shall condemn it: because they repented at the preaching of Jonas; and, **behold, a greater than Jonas is here.** The queen of the south shall rise up in the judgment with this

generation, and shall condemn it: for she came from the uttermost parts of the earth to hear the wisdom of Solomon; and, behold, a greater than Solomon is here. (Matthew 12:38–42)

Then let us listen to how old Jesus was when he was baptized. **“And Jesus himself began to be about thirty years of age,** being (as was supposed) the son of Joseph, which was the son of Heli” (Luke 3:23). March 28, Good Friday 1986; I was in a what man calls a car accident and was in a coma for three days and three nights. I awoke out of the coma Monday morning. Then thirty years later almost to the day, March 8–9 of 2016, is when I walked a few miles out into the wilderness to give up living in this world. Or better said, I was baptized with the Holy Ghost.

I will however make another note on this topic, for I believe our Father is telling me to do so. Anyone and all that have come before me claiming to be Jesus have not shown at least ten biblical witnesses of how their life events are shown in the Bible as I have. There has been nobody before me who’s been able to show their knowledge of the Bible from Genesis through Revelation in which glorifies our Father from the very beginning as I have, do, and will do until the very end.

Now we all know that we have been hearing about wars and rumors of wars for quite some time now, but I do believe many misunderstand what it means when we hear “nation will rise against nation and kingdom against kingdom.” First, we need to understand that a nation can be one person. To show this, we need to listen to when Rebekah was going to be giving birth to twins.

And Isaac intreated the Lord for his wife, because she was barren: and the Lord was intreated of him, and Rebekah his wife conceived. And the children struggled together within her; and she said, If it be so, why am I thus? And she went to enquire of the Lord. And the Lord said unto her, *Two nations are in thy womb, and two manner of people shall be separated*

from thy bowels; and the one people shall be stronger than the other people; and the elder shall serve the younger. And when her days to be delivered were fulfilled, behold, there were twins in her womb. And the first came out red, all over like an hairy garment; and they called his name Esau. And after that came his brother out, and his hand took hold on Esau's heel; and his name was called Jacob: and Isaac was threescore years old when she bare them.
(Genesis 25:21–26)

So to put this in a perspective that we can understand now, let us think of two people that have a heated argument over something. This is the probability of a nation rising against another. Just listen to 1 John 3:10–12, “In this the children of God are manifest, and the children of the devil: whosoever doeth not righteousness is not of God, neither he that loveth not his brother. For this is the message that ye heard from the beginning, that we should love one another. **Not as Cain, who was of that wicked one, and slew his brother. And wherefore slew he him? Because his own works were evil, and his brother's righteous.**”

Now I know there are many that think that when we hear “kingdom will rise against kingdom,” that means something as to USA will go to war with Russia, or something along those lines. This is far from what will happen. Yes, we are already hearing about wars and rumors of wars like in the Middle East. These kingdoms are within each of us. Satan has been locked up inside of us. Then when people read these books that our Father has had me write, they will in turn realize how marvelous and magnificent He is—and has always been, since the beginning—and start to turn back to Him instead of listening to this false god that has been telling them that they do not have to listen to the Father. Now I want to jump back to the beginning again so that we can hear what the serpent told Eve.

Now the serpent was more subtil than any beast of the field which the Lord God had made. And he said unto the woman, Yea, hath God said, Ye shall not eat of every tree of the garden? And the woman said unto the serpent, We may eat of the fruit of the trees of the garden: But of the fruit of the tree which is in the midst of the garden, God hath said, Ye shall not eat of it, neither shall ye touch it, lest ye die. **And the serpent said unto the woman, Ye shall not surely die: For God doth know that in the day ye eat thereof, then your eyes shall be opened, and ye shall be as gods, knowing good and evil.** (Genesis 3:1–5)

Without saying it, the serpent or Satan told Eve that she didn't have to listen to God the Father. Now I must ask, how many times have you been told that you do not need to listen to the entire Bible, especially not the Old Testament? How many times have you been told that Jesus came, died on the cross, and your sins are forgiven, so you don't need but a couple chapters of the Bible? Now listen to how Satan walks through the earth to devour who he can. "Again there was a day when the sons of God came to present themselves before the Lord, and Satan came also among them to present himself before the Lord. And the Lord said unto Satan, From whence comest thou? **And Satan answered the Lord, and said, From going to and fro in the earth, and from walking up and down in it**" (Job 2:1–2).

Now that we are realizing that these kingdoms are inside of us, we need to listen to when we are told a kingdom cannot be divided.

And the scribes which came down from Jerusalem said, He hath Beelzebub, and by the prince of the devils casteth he out devils. And he called them unto him, and said unto them in parables, **How can Satan cast out Satan? And if a kingdom be divided against itself, that kingdom cannot stand. And if a house be divided against itself, that house**

cannot stand. And if Satan rise up against himself, and be divided, he cannot stand, but hath an end.

(Mark 3:22–26)

When we listen, we can hear that man is Satan, and Satan cannot cast out Satan. This takes us to when we are told that we cannot see the kingdom of God unless we be born again. **“Jesus answered and said unto him, Verily, verily, I say unto thee, Except a man be born again, he cannot see the kingdom of God”** (John 3:3). Remember how I just told you all that I went out into the wilderness to die? When I did, this was when the spirit of the invisible Jesus took over the body or vessel of David Jenkins. David died on March 8–9 of 2016 and was born into the kingdom of God. He died to Satan’s world so that he could go into the kingdom of God. David does not work for man anymore, I work for our Father, and our Father is my boss in every aspect of my life, and I wouldn’t trade it for the world.

Therefore, we are told not to love the ways of this world.

Love not the world, neither the things that are in the world. If any man love the world, the love of the Father is not in him. For all that is in the world, the lust of the flesh, and the lust of the eyes, and the pride of life, is not of the Father, but is of the world. And the world passeth away, and the lust thereof: but he that doeth the will of God abideth for ever.

(1 John 2:15–17)

And be not conformed to this world: but be ye transformed by the renewing of your mind, that ye may prove what is that good, and acceptable, and perfect, will of God. (Romans 12:2)

Wherein in time past ye walked according to the course of this world, according to the prince of the

power of the air, the spirit that now worketh in the children of disobedience. (Ephesians 2:2)

If ye then be risen with Christ, **seek those things which are above, where Christ sitteth on the right hand of God. Set your affection on things above, not on things on the earth.** (Colossians 3:1-2)

Once people start to truly understand this, they will turn back to our Father, and our glorious Father will begin to heal them, and the kingdoms within them will rise against one another, and Satan will be cast out.

In the eighth month, in the second year of Darius, came the word of the Lord unto Zechariah, the son of Berechiah, the son of Iddo the prophet, saying, The Lord hath been sore displeased with your fathers. Therefore say thou unto them, Thus saith the Lord of hosts; **Turn ye unto me, saith the Lord of hosts, and I will turn unto you,** saith the Lord of hosts. (Zechariah 1:1-3)

So the posts went with the letters from the king and his princes throughout all Israel and Judah, and according to the commandment of the king, saying, Ye children of Israel, turn again unto the Lord God of Abraham, Isaac, and Israel, and he will return to the remnant of you, that are escaped out of the hand of the kings of Assyria. And be not ye like your fathers, and like your brethren, which trespassed against the Lord God of their fathers, who therefore gave them up to desolation, as ye see. Now be ye not stiffnecked, as your fathers were, but yield yourselves unto the Lord, and enter into his sanctuary, which he hath sanctified for ever: and serve the Lord your

JESUS IS HERE

God, that the fierceness of his wrath may turn away from you. **For if ye turn again unto the Lord, your brethren and your children shall find compassion before them that lead them captive, so that they shall come again into this land: for the Lord your God is gracious and merciful, and will not turn away his face from you, if ye return unto him.** (2 Chronicles 30:6–9)

A voice was heard upon the high places, weeping and supplications of the children of Israel: for they have perverted their way, and they have forgotten the Lord their God. **Return, ye backsliding children, and I will heal your backslidings. Behold, we come unto thee; for thou art the Lord our God.** (Jeremiah 3:21–22)

If my people, which are called by my name, shall humble themselves, and pray, and seek my face, and turn from their wicked ways; then will I hear from heaven, and will forgive their sin, and will heal their land. (2 Chronicles 7:14)

And he said, Go, and tell this people, Hear ye indeed, but understand not; and see ye indeed, but perceive not. Make the heart of this people fat, and make their ears heavy, and shut their eyes; **lest they see with their eyes, and hear with their ears, and understand with their heart, and convert, and be healed.** (Isaiah 6:9–10)

Isn't that a beautiful sound?

THE BIRTH OF JESUS



This chapter is going to be sensitive, intensive, and exciting all at once. This chapter will be moving mountains. If you have made it this far into the book, you should be seeing the mountains that will be moved already. What we are going to learn about now is going on with this COVID-19. When we first started to hear about it back in January, it didn't dawn on me of what was going on. At about the same time I heard of it is when the Father told me to stop listening till the end. Let me explain that. As I have told you all, I listen to the Bible repeatedly. I had just finished listening to the book of Daniel on my Bible on CD. I changed over the next CD and got one chapter of Hosea done, and my CD player kicked the CD out, and it hasn't worked since. Being as how I know that God is spirit and that everything happens for a reason, I took that as to our Father telling me to stop listening to the Bible till the end. "And he said, Go thy way, Daniel: **for the words are closed up and sealed till the time of the end**" (Daniel 12:9). Remember how we showed that we allow the spirits of the prophets to speak to us?

I heard it, and then I started paying close attention as to how fast it spreads. Then I started hearing about how fast it was sweeping over several countries. Then I heard our president say we are fighting an **invisible** enemy. Wow! It all fell into place as soon as I heard him say that. This is because I have all of the scriptures running through my mind, no matter what I am doing. Day or night. Now we have shown how the earth is our Father's footstool. And we know that our Father told Jesus to sit on His right side till He made His enemies

His footstool. Now we need to listen to what we are being told in Colossians 1:12–15.

Giving thanks unto the Father, which hath made us meet to be partakers of the inheritance of the saints in light: Who hath delivered us from the power of darkness, and hath translated us into the kingdom of his dear Son: In whom we have redemption through his blood, even the forgiveness of sins: **Who is the image of the invisible God, the firstborn of every creature.**

Listen to how fast this virus moves. Listen to what it is doing to the health of many. Listen to how it is taking out the economic structure of the world as it is affecting the health of so many. At the same time it is affecting the health of so many, listen to the economic stress that is happening to the world. Listen to how the medical field is saying that they don't have the proper equipment. Just listen to all the words that they are using. I keep hearing words like a wave of people, a tsunami is getting ready to hit us; we are on the outside of the perfect storm getting ready to hit and such. My personal favorite one that I heard one reporter state is that we are having a contraction. Then the most important thing that I keep hearing is "we will put the fires out." I will not show these; anyone with any kind of knowledge of the Bible knows that such things are talked about in the prophets. Being as how I know that everybody is a servant and/or vessel of God, I have no doubt that our Father is causing these people to say such things to show all that this is Him speaking and not man.

I have heard so many people try to blame this on someone. Just going back to the Adam-and-Eve thing there. But we must remember in the last two books that we have written: every person on this planet is a servant and/or vessel of God the Father. So now we need to listen to something else we are told. Now I have been watching and listening to a lot of news on this global pandemic that the earth is facing and have heard people say it is China's fault that we are in the predicament

JESUS IS HERE

we are in. Now I have researched it to some degree, and yes, China seems to be where it originated. Now if it was created in a lab by some people, who is to say that our Father didn't tell them to do so? "Then they said to Jeremiah, The Lord be a true and faithful witness between us, if we do not even according to all things for the which the Lord thy God shall send thee to us. **Whether it be good, or whether it be evil, we will obey the voice of the Lord our God, to whom we send thee; that it may be well with us, when we obey the voice of the Lord our God**" (Jeremiah 42:5–6). And if it was our Father that told them to do as they did, if that is what was done, they will be rewarded for doing what they did. And if you judge them and consider them to be doing wrong for what they have done, you will be the only one that will be doing wrong by our Father.

I believe that our Father has told me that this virus has been here since last summer. Let me explain. I delivered a load around the end of January with a young woman in Ohio. She was working in the guard shack, checking drivers in as we brought our loads in. She checked my temperature, and as she was waiting instructions from inside to tell me where to park, she told me that she thought she had this virus back in November. She said that she had several symptoms and was in and out of the hospital a couple of times. They tested her for the flu, but the test showed negative. This was in southwest Ohio—the first cases reported on the news was in Washington. How many people went to the hospital last fall with flu-like symptoms, tested negative, and sent home?

Then it was about two or three weeks later, another servant of God approached me and told me that he had been hearing that this virus has been here since last summer? I immediately told him that I listen to the news all day, every day, and that I had never heard that. He said it again, so I did what I do and asked our Father why he would say that. Then shortly after, our Father reminded me of the woman in Ohio, and that she, too, is a servant. This leads me to believe that He told me through these two servants that this COVID-19 has been here for almost a year. China was the first country to figure out that

the world was getting ready to fight a virus unknown to man. Why does it have to be someone else's fault that we are fighting this virus?

Now from what they are saying on the news, China tried to suppress the information of how contagious and deadly this virus is, and that is why the world is now suffering. This is targeted to anyone that is a parent or has parents. What is happening when a president is running for election? This individual is making a statement as to say in a way that he wants to be the country's dad-like figure. In return, the people of the country elects whoever they feel will be the best like dad-like figure for the country. Let us imagine you and your spouse have decent-paying jobs with good health benefits that allow your family to live comfortably in a decent neighborhood. No pun intended, but let us imagine you both lose your job from some unforeseen circumstances and cannot find work. Immediately, the parents of three children raise their awareness to the circumstances. The ages of your children are six, eight, and eleven. A month goes by, and you being the parent realize that you need to find work quickly, or they are going to shut off the utilities, repossess the cars, and eventually foreclose on the house. You know that this will be a humongous problem for the family.

Do you tell your children right away that they might have to move out onto the streets and be homeless? They might have to ask others for help all the time. Do you tell them that they may have to eat out of trash cans? Or do you do everything in your power to keep the situation under control so that you do not have to put your children through the emotional stress that you and your spouse are under? Speaking from experience, you don't involve the children in grown-up problems. You keep them calm as possible until you have no other option. Then when you have no other option, you take them through the experience as calmly as you can. Now because I do watch and listen to the news frequently, I can say with all certainty that our own president reacted the exact same way as the president of China.

Now we are going to be touching on something that we brought up in the first book we wrote. This is going to be very hard for some to hear and understand, but our Father told us that He would do this.

JESUS IS HERE

If thou wilt not observe to do all the words of this law that are written in this book, that thou mayest fear this glorious and fearful name, The Lord Thy God; Then the Lord will make thy plagues wonderful, and the plagues of thy seed, even great plagues, and of long continuance, and sore sicknesses, and of long continuance. Moreover he will bring upon thee all the diseases of Egypt, which thou wast afraid of; and they shall cleave unto thee. **Also every sickness, and every plague, which is not written in the book of this law, them will the Lord bring upon thee, until thou be destroyed. And ye shall be left few in number, whereas ye were as the stars of heaven for multitude; because thou wouldest not obey the voice of the Lord thy God. And it shall come to pass, that as the Lord rejoiced over you to do you good, and to multiply you; so the Lord will rejoice over you to destroy you, and to bring you to nought; and ye shall be plucked from off the land whither thou goest to possess it.** And the Lord shall scatter thee among all people, from the one end of the earth even unto the other; and there thou shalt serve other gods, which neither thou nor thy fathers have known, even wood and stone. And among these nations shalt thou find no ease, neither shall the sole of thy foot have rest: but the Lord shall give thee there a trembling heart, and failing of eyes, and sorrow of mind: And thy life shall hang in doubt before thee; and thou shalt fear day and night, and shalt have none assurance of thy life: In the morning thou shalt say, Would God it were even! and at even thou shalt say, Would God it were morning! for the fear of thine heart wherewith thou shalt fear, and for the sight of thine eyes which thou shalt see. And the Lord shall bring thee into Egypt again with ships, by the way whereof I spake unto thee, Thou

shalt see it no more again: and there ye shall be sold unto your enemies for bondmen and bondwomen, and no man shall buy you. (Deuteronomy 28:58–68)

Now we need to listen to when we are told that men's hearts will be failing.

And there shall be signs in the sun, and in the moon, and in the stars; and upon the earth distress of nations, with perplexity; the sea and the waves roaring; **Men's hearts failing them for fear, and for looking after those things which are coming on the earth: for the powers of heaven shall be shaken. And then shall they see the Son of man coming in a cloud with power and great glory. And when these things begin to come to pass, then look up, and lift up your heads; for your redemption draweth nigh. And he spake to them a parable; Behold the fig tree, and all the trees; When they now shoot forth, ye see and know of your own selves that summer is now nigh at hand. So likewise ye, when ye see these things come to pass, know ye that the kingdom of God is nigh at hand. Verily I say unto you, This generation shall not pass away, till all be fulfilled. Heaven and earth shall pass away: but my words shall not pass away. And take heed to yourselves, lest at any time your hearts be overcharged with surfeiting, and drunkenness, and cares of this life, and so that day come upon you unawares. For as a snare shall it come on all them that dwell on the face of the whole earth. Watch ye therefore, and pray always, that ye may be accounted worthy to escape all these things that shall come to pass, and to stand before the Son of man.** (Luke 21:25–36)

JESUS IS HERE

Now that we realize that man is where Satan is locked up and that man is living in Satan's world, we need to listen to when our Father told Jesus to sit on His right side while He makes His enemies His footstool. "But to which of the angels said he at any time, Sit on my right hand, until I make thine enemies thy footstool?" (Hebrews 1:13). I showed you all in earlier that everybody on the planet makes up the one son of God, and the planet earth is sitting on the right side of our Father. Now listen to what we are told back in the Old Testament. "Thus saith the Lord, The heaven is my throne, **and the earth is my footstool**: where is the house that ye build unto me? and where is the place of my rest?" (Isaiah 66:1). Remember this is Satan's world. so yes, man is the enemy of our Father. That is why our Father breathed life into man "Jesus" so that man became a living soul. "But made himself of no reputation, and took upon him the form of a servant, **and was made in the likeness of men**" (Philippians 2:7). Note that he wasn't made in the likeness of one man, but rather *men*. Now listen as to why our Father did this. "He that committeth sin is of the devil; for the devil sinneth from the beginning. For this purpose the Son of God was manifested, **that he might destroy the works of the devil**" (1 John 3:8).

So yes, this is an invisible enemy, and it is coming from above, and man "Satan" will not win this war. Now we want top-post some of Matthew 24.

And Jesus went out, and departed from the temple: and his disciples came to him for to shew him the buildings of the temple. And Jesus said unto them, See ye not all these things? verily I say unto you, There shall not be left here one stone upon another, that shall not be thrown down. And as he sat upon the mount of Olives, the disciples came unto him privately, saying, Tell us, when shall these things be? and what shall be the sign of thy coming, and of the end of the world? And Jesus answered and said unto them, Take heed that no man deceive you. For many

shall come in my name, saying, I am Christ; and shall deceive many. And ye shall hear of wars and rumours of wars: see that ye be not troubled: for all these things must come to pass, but the end is not yet. For nation shall rise against nation, and kingdom against kingdom: and there shall be famines, and pestilences, and earthquakes, in divers places. *All these are the beginning of sorrows.* (Matthew 24:1–8)

What is starting to impact the world now is what all the books that our Father has had me write is all about.

No, I do not know the day or hour in which the end will come, but I am rejoicing within myself, for I do know we are near. But at the same time, I have great sorrow, just as the scriptures teach. “And I gave my heart to know wisdom, and to know madness and folly: I perceived that this also is vexation of spirit. **For in much wisdom is much grief: and he that increaseth knowledge increaseth sorrow**” (Ecclesiastes 1:17–18).

As a final note, we need to be listening to one more thing. “John answered and said, **A man can receive nothing, except it be given him from heaven**” (John 3:27). This is something that we have shown in the previous book. There are almost 8 billion people on this planet that makes the one son of God. In other words, there are like 8 billion little Jesuses walking this planet. So, not one person receives anything unless it comes from above. And yes, that means even if it is bad or good.

Now that the son of perdition has been revealed, let us think about the great falling away. “Let no man deceive you by any means: for that day shall not come, **except there come a falling away first**, and that man of sin be revealed, the son of perdition” (2 Thessalonians 2:3). This falling away is a lot of people will fall away from this false god that has been telling them they should condemn, judge, think of themselves before others, and those that think they deserve better than others. But at the same time, it is unlocking hell. Let us listen to when we hear that I have the key to hell. “I am he that liveth, and

was dead; and, behold, I am alive for evermore, Amen; **and have the keys of hell and of death**” (Revelation 1:18). We will be seeing the true character come out of many.

Now I have heard of some saying that maybe this will just like magically disappear one day or so or something along those lines. Because everything I hear, I reflect back to the scriptures, one area of the Bible is brought to mind. “But of the times and the seasons, brethren, ye have no need that I write unto you. For yourselves know perfectly that the day of the Lord so cometh as a thief in the night. **For when they shall say, Peace and safety; then sudden destruction cometh upon them, as travail upon a woman with child; and they shall not escape**” (1 Thessalonians 5:1–3). This has not been confirmed by our Father, for it could just be me always thinking of the scriptures in everything that I see, hear, and do.

But at the same time, I do not think that it is going to go away anytime soon. Look how different cities are gradually growing in case count, and then all of a sudden, they are exploding in case count. We can hear certain cities say they expect their apex at different times. It will take time to rebuild the economic structure in the United States as well as the entire world. Because I know our Father, I know what He is doing. I understand what He is doing, and I also agree with what He is doing, for He has told for thousands of years that this was coming, but man chooses not to listen to Him.

Our Father has brought something up that really needs mentioning here. I am making another update after sending the original manuscript to the publishers for the first round of editing. After learning how the COVID-19 took over the world, we learned that it has disrupted the economic structure of the world.

Without showing everything again, let us recall that we are the woman married unto our Father. Recall how we have been telling you all that we all have to be born. Let us think of ourselves above the earth again. Now try to see this woman again.

And there appeared a great wonder in heaven; a woman clothed with the sun, and the moon under her

feet, and upon her head a crown of twelve stars: And she being with child cried, tra- vailing in birth, and pained to be delivered. And there appeared another wonder in heaven; and behold a great red dragon, having seven heads and ten horns, and seven crowns upon his heads. And his tail drew the third part of the stars of heaven, and did cast them to the earth: and the dragon stood before the woman which was ready to be delivered, for to devour her child as soon as it was born. And she brought forth a man child, who was to rule all nations with a rod of iron: and her child was caught up unto God, and to his throne. And the woman fled into the wilderness, where she hath a place prepared of God, that they should feed her there a thousand two hun- dred and threescore days. And there was war in heaven: Michael and his angels fought against the dragon; and the dragon fought and his angels, And prevailed not; neither was their place found any more in heaven. And the great dragon was cast out, that old serpent, called the Devil, and Satan, which deceiveth the whole world: he was cast out into the earth, and his angels were cast out with him. And I heard a loud voice saying in heaven, Now is come salvation, and strength, and the kingdom of our God, and the power of his Christ: for the accuser of our brethren is cast down, which accused them before our God day and night. And they overcame him by the blood of the Lamb, and by the word of their testimony; and they loved not their lives unto the death. Therefore rejoice, ye heavens, and ye that dwell in them. Woe to the inhabitors of the earth and of the sea! for the devil is come down unto you, having great wrath, because he knoweth that he hath but a short time. And when the dragon saw that he was cast unto the earth, he persecuted

JESUS IS HERE

the woman which brought forth the man child. And to the woman were given two wings of a great eagle, that she might fly into the wilderness, into her place, where she is nourished for a time, and times, and half a time, from the face of the serpent. And the serpent cast out of his mouth water as a flood after the woman, that he might cause her to be carried away of the flood. And the earth helped the woman, and the earth opened her mouth, and swallowed up the flood which the dragon cast out of his mouth. And the dragon was wroth with the woman, and went to make war with the remnant of her seed, which keep the commandments of God, and have the testimony of Jesus Christ. (Revelation 12:1–17)

Now picture this woman going into labor. This woman is the woman at the end of the chapter that has been nourished for time, and times, and a half a time. Now, try to picture the earth being in the belly of this spiritual woman. We are now in labor, and this is only the first contraction. I am thinking the virus in the first contraction and the economic shut down, through the world, is the second. Now, try to think of this as a woman in the flesh that is in labor. When she goes into labor, the contractions start out small, and the pain is not the greatest. As the labor goes on, the contractions get more intense, and they last longer.

I do want to mention that we all know that there has been a lot of death involved with this. We need to realize that this does not mean that these people have done wrong by our Father. Everything happens for a reason. And whether we live or die, we still belong to Christ. “For whether we live, we live unto the Lord; and whether we die, we die unto the Lord: whether we live therefore, or die, we are the Lord’s” (Romans 14:8).

Over the last week, something else has happened. This is the death of George Floyd. As you all know by now, this has caused havoc across the nation. Doing what I do, I asked our Father if this is the

next contraction. At first, I asked if this is by chance the second contraction. The first week of listening to the news on the matter, I didn't think that it would have an effect on the world. Then exactly one week later after the tragedy, I heard on the news that there are protests going on throughout the world. So, yes, this is the third contraction.

Before going any further, I want to explain something that was talked about in the second book. I started to feel as if our Father was telling me to put this in here, and I resisted at first. What we are going to be reflecting on is how I have cut, something like my pinky finger off, so that my entire body does not perish. Remember, everybody on the planet makes up the one son of God. I ask that you try to picture yourself in heaven, looking on the earth, and noticing your entire body covering the earth.

Since our Father has commanded me to pay attention to the news, I have been doing just that. At first, I spent a lot of time switching back and forth through the news channels. I wanted to hear what is going on, and not what people thought, or their opinion of what was going on. I listened to Fox news for a while but would switch channels when they seem to insult people all the time. I would listen to some other channels and wound up settling on CNN most of the time. Yes, this is the news channel that I listen to, or watch, when I can. I will not listen to others insult others all the time. CNN does not do this for the most part. I would switch back to Fox news, and within fifteen minutes or so, they would be insulting people and giving everybody nicknames.

Each person is a child of God. So, just as I showed you all in the second book, I cut this part of my body off so that I am not constantly hearing this type of talk all the time. I do not know if they are doing wrong or right, but I do know that this is not a person I am and have no desire to become a person like that. I have a love for all. I am not talking about the people they interview for the most part. I am talking about the news anchors, or the journalist. When they constantly insult and judge others as they do, they invite that type of audience.

I will not make any judgements on what happened with George Floyd, for I do know that everything does happen for a reason. I do

JESUS IS HERE

give my condolences, for I know that it is painful to lose a loved one. It is not for me to know why things happen the way they do for each person, but rather, it is for me to understand what is happening in the world. I have seen the video of the matter, and we are only going to comment on one thing for now, for it does reflect on something that you have already read in this book.

When I saw the video, I heard George calling out to his mama. I constantly hear the news reflect on this. I personally do not believe that he was calling out for his mama, but rather, he was talking to his mama. Remember how we showed that the soul never dies? Remember how we showed that once we die, we go up to that holy mountain above that Christ is at the top of? When his mama passed, this is where she went.

Now, they have done the second autopsy on George and said that he died on the scene, and not in the ambulance. I genuinely believe that his mama came down in the spiritual realm to bring comfort to him while he was going through this.

When this all happened the way it did, it ignited some deep feelings that the servants of God have been dealing with for quite some time. Now, I believe it is our Father causing all these people that are protesting, to protest. These protests are causing havoc everywhere, and at the same time, it seems social distancing has completely gone out of the window, so to speak. This makes me wonder if that will be the next contraction? I do not know how many contractions we must go through, or how severe they will be, but I do know that we all must go through this together.

Okay, I have been giving you all several biblical witnesses as to who I am. I have been hearing people say that they do not need to wear a mask for Jesus did not wear a mask. I have heard people say things like, "Jesus is my vaccine." First and foremost, let us recall when Jesus tells us, "It is written though shall not tempt thy Lord God."

And saith unto him, If thou be the Son of God, cast thyself down: for it is written, He shall give his angels charge concerning thee: and in their hands they shall

bear thee up, lest at any time thou dash thy foot against a stone. Jesus said unto him, It is written again, Thou shalt not tempt the Lord thy God. (Matthew 4:6–7)

Listen to what is being said here; the devil told Jesus that the angels would make sure that he would be okay, right? Remember how I told my brother, in the chapter “Believing,” that I would not go to a mental hospital so that they could put me on drugs so that I would stop hearing the voice of the Father? He wanted to see if I would still have the same beliefs if I was on drugs. I told him that “Thou shall not tempt God.” If I would have went, I would have spiritually been telling our Father that I didn’t want to hear his voice so that I could please my brother. *No way.*

Now, if I walk around without washing my hands frequently, sanitizing when needed, and wiping things down as I should, wouldn’t that be the same as saying spiritually, “I dare you”? I have heard of many pastors and such that have been infected with this COVID-19 and have passed away. Do you think that you have protection and they didn’t? Do you think Jesus will protect you and not others? They did and do bleed the same blood as you. They, too, breathe the same air you do, and they walked on the same ground as you.

Now, I will tell all, I do wear a mask when I am around others or know that I could somehow be close to others. Yes, it is uncomfortable, and no, I do not like it, but I do it for the love of others. How many people, or children of God, are scared, worried, terrified, or even petrified they might catch this disease? How many have the same emotions of taking it home to their families and them getting it, and some might die because of it? Is it fair for me to walk in their path without protection? How do I know what people fear? How do I know if I will wind up crossing paths with someone that fears this? When I am in a truck stop or a grocery store, I am there to get something that I need. It is safe to assume that they, too, are there to get something they need. Would it be right for me to walk around without my mask, crossing paths with someone, and scaring them just because they are getting something they need?

JESUS IS HERE

Now, let us look at another reason I wear a mask. What if I unknowingly get this virus and I am not aware of it? We all have heard that around half of the people that get this virus will not know they have it. A lot of people can walk around asymptomatic. Hypothetically, let just say that I could be walking around asymptomatic and am passing this virus around. Then suddenly, I start feeling bad, and find out that I have it. It can take up to two weeks before symptoms start showing.

I travel a lot, and I do meet several people in warehouses, truck stops, etc. I would say that I probably physically talk to around fifty strangers a week. Now, what if some of these people get sick sometime after I have met with them, one way or another? What if a few of these people die? It would be extremely hard to do contact tracing with the people I meet for I am always on the move. I, myself, will feel extremely guilty if I thought I might have spread something, or even thought I might have had something to do with someone else's illness or death. I wear the mask for my love of others and not myself.

Now, I will say that if I am seeing that nobody is wearing a mask in the area I am in, I tend to not put my mask on, for at the same time, I do not want to frighten people and make them think that I have this disease. I am going to tell you all of a situation that happened. I was recently at one of our terminals to get some repairs done on my truck. I was in the drivers' lounge. There was a group of three other drivers sitting in a group and talking. None of them was wearing a mask, and they invited me to the group. I grabbed a chair and placed it back to keep social distance without placing my mask on. This is different than walking into a store or truck stop where I have no idea if there is going to be someone there that is worried.

A conversation came up about people wearing mask. I mentioned that we wear a mask for the love of others. I, myself, do not wear it so much that I am worried about getting it, but rather, it is not making others worry that I might give it to them. One of the men got very defensive and started yelling at me.

I guess maybe I am partly to blame. At the same time, he brought how he had gotten in trouble with the DOT shortly after he started

working for this company. Remember how we showed you in the chapter, “Let Us Make Man in Our Image,” that we, truck drivers, must follow the laws for driving a semi, or we will be chastised and eventually kicked out of the spiritual house. He was complaining and trying to blame the tickets he received on the truck and the company. When I started asking what had happened a couple of days prior to this, he soon realized that he could not blame anyone but himself. This got him to be mad at me. But I ask you, “Who do you think he was really mad at?” I asked our Father why this servant did this, and what I thought of right away was, he only was worried about himself and did not want to change. To this, I will say, it is up to you to as to whether you are going to love yourself more than others, or are you going to love others and at least as much as yourself. I do know the more you make it about you, the harder it is going to be.

As I have been showing you all, I wear a mask for my love for others and not myself. Let us listen to where the Bible tells us to do just that. “Then said Jesus unto his disciples, ‘If any man will come after me, **let him deny himself, and take up his cross, and follow me.**’” (Matthew 16:24).

Remember how we showed that we all have the cross within each of us? If you don’t, just look to your left shoulder, then your right shoulder, then you belly button, then look up. You just seen your cross. Remember how we should always allow invisible rays of love for others go out in every direction around us? How is making the wearing of mask a problem for you loving others? I have heard people say that a person is deprived of oxygen when they wear a mask. “*Bull malarkey!*” If that was the case, then no doctor would ever do a surgery that took longer than twenty minutes or so. We all know there are a lot of surgeries that take several hours. If they lacked oxygen, then they would become light-headed, passing out, and such during surgery. Yeah, some might have asthma or some- thing in which it might cause problems; hopefully, if that is the case, you are taking proper care. Remember, it is not about you but rather about the others around you. Love thy neighbor as yourself.

JESUS IS HERE

Now that we have showed that, we are going to give a live experience I had that caused me to call the safety department with company that I work for and explained to them the same way our Father taught me. I had been getting few messages indicating that I had been slow rolling through a couple of Stop signs. After our Father had these servants send me these messages, it started to be on my conscience a lot. I figured if I was doing this, then maybe I was just doing it and not realizing it. Then one evening, I would say around eight or so, I came up to a Stop sign and caught myself slow rolling through it. I had seen that the camera on my windshield took a video of this when it happened. As I am driving along, about twenty to thirty minutes later, I noticed this car, passing a semi, coming from the other direction. I had to hit my breaks to slow down and take the shoulder so that there would not be a head-on collision.

Think about this for a minute, who would have been at fault if we would have collided? Most will say the oncoming car, but would have it been? No, it would have been my own fault. If I would have come to a complete stop at that Stop sign, looked in all directions to make sure that it was safe to move, I would have been anywhere from ten and twenty seconds behind the very spot I was in at that time. When this happened, it was not a lesson for me. It was our Father showing me what they were talking about. I had known for quite some time that anything that goes wrong in my life is because of something I have done.

This will be extremely hard for many, and yes, there will be a lot of people that will get very mad and hate me for teaching this. But I am not showing you all anything that our Father has not shown me.

The reason we bring this up is because of how much of the blame game we see going on. It is the first of July, and I am hearing governors of certain states that now have exponential growth of their case count blame the medical experts for their failure. Some are even stating that they will stop listening to the medical experts because it is their fault.

Now being as our Father has taught me very well to listen to everything and not just pick and choose certain things to listen to, I listen to the news all day as I drive, and I watch it when I am parked.

I will not show the research in here, but anyone can easily look at how there is only a handful of states that listened to the guidelines for opening back up. Those states are doing very well because they followed the guidelines to the letter. Most states only followed the guidelines to say that they had only one week of a decrease in case count, hospitalizations, and death count. The guidelines called for a decrease in all three areas for at least two weeks before going to the next stage of opening. Most states were opened back up to at least 50 percent within two weeks. To get to that stage of reopening, it should have taken six weeks.

All that is happening when people blame for their own mistakes takes a big tole on other children of God that are at no fault. It is diminishing, insulting, and downgrading to others while you are trying to draw the attention off you for screwing up. You make a mistake, realize it, own it, and work with others to fix it without tearing others down.

When I was hearing about the states reopening prematurely, it reminded of an area of the Bible that I truly feel we all should always keep on our mind.

Let as many servants as are under the yoke count their own masters worthy of all honour, that the name of God and his doctrine be not blasphemed. And they that have believing masters, let them not despise them, because they are brethren; but rather do them service, because they are faithful and beloved, partakers of the benefit. These things teach and exhort. If any man teach otherwise, and consent not to wholesome words, even the words of our Lord Jesus Christ, and to the doctrine which is according to godliness; He is proud, knowing nothing, but doting about questions and strifes of words, whereof cometh envy, strife, railings, evil surmisings, perverse disputings of men of corrupt minds, and destitute of the truth, supposing that gain is godliness: from such withdraw

JESUS IS HERE

thyself. But godliness with contentment is great gain. For we brought nothing into this world, and it is certain we can carry nothing out. And having food and raiment let us be therewith content. But they that will be rich fall into temptation and a snare, and into many foolish and hurtful lusts, which drown men in destruction and perdition. **For the love of money is the root of all evil: which while some coveted after, they have erred from the faith, and pierced themselves through with many sorrows.** (1 Timothy 6:1–10)

Now we want to talk about our president for a few minutes. We have shown you all that Jesus does, in fact, where a mask. We have seen and heard that he does feel as if he should wear a mask, and it almost seems that he encourages others not to wear them, and he encourages others not to social distance from one another. I have seen reports as to where he had signs on seats removed in rallies he held that would have separated people. I have heard him say on occasion that he thought this virus is a hoax or that it will just disappear. I have listened to him promote a drug in which it led to people needing it, had to do without, and then this drug was found out to cause more damage than help. I do still hear that it might have some benefits of early stage discovery of the virus and might have some benefits, though.

It is July now, and the case count throughout the country is spiking, and he is still implying that we have done better than other countries and that we have it under control. Then he continues to state that we have more cases in this country than others for we do more testing. He stated that if we didn't do the amount of testing that we do, we would not have these many cases. I hope everybody realized that we would have the same or maybe even more cases because there would be no one isolating from others and spreading the virus even harder. When I heard this, it immediately made me think of an area of the scriptures in which would come into play if we didn't test. In fact,

it might still come into play because of how fast this virus is growing. Let us listen to what I am talking about.

Speak, Thus saith the Lord, **Even the carcases of men shall fall as dung upon the open field, and as the handful after the harvestman, and none shall gather them.** Thus saith the Lord, Let not the wise man glory in his wisdom, neither let the mighty man glory in his might, let not the rich man glory in his riches: But let him that glorieth glory in this, that he understandeth and knoweth me, that I am the Lord which exercise lovingkindness, judgment, and righteousness, in the earth: for in these things I delight, saith the Lord. Behold, the days come, saith the Lord, that I will punish all them which are circumcised with the uncircumcised; Egypt, and Judah, and Edom, and the children of Ammon, and Moab, and all that are in the utmost corners, that dwell in the wilderness: for all these nations are uncircumcised, and all the house of Israel are uncircumcised in the heart. (Jeremiah 9:22–26)

Now I do realize that that it is most likely those above that have dominion over us. They are doing this because our Father that is commanding them to do so. He is doing this to keep the flames burning. Just listen to all the controversy going on about wearing a mask and social distancing. And at the same time, it seems that this virus is mutating. I truly feel that our Father will cause other kinds of sicknesses of sorts. I do know that now the water is broke, there will be no stopping this. He already has a day planned, but He is the only one that knows.

This is where I make a public proclamation. If I catch this virus and start to feel sick, I will wonder off to an unknown area so that I can isolate myself from others. I will not get tested or see a doctor, for I know without a doubt, if it is my time, then let me be. If by any

JESUS IS HERE

chance someone comes around and finds me unconscious, or if you see me fall into unconsciousness, do not do one-chest compression. There will be nothing to help me breathe. I refuse any medical treatment, for I do not want to live in the flesh one second further than our Father needs me to.

I have been hearing about antibody test and a possible treatment that can help cure or prevent this virus from someone else's blood that has the antibodies. As we showed you all in the chapter "Believing," my mom told the doctor not to put blood in her. That was those above that had dominion her body telling the doctors that and not her. When we come out of the womb, we have the organs and blood that our Father has provided for us. When we chose to take someone else's blood or organs, we have just told our Father that we would rather live here in Satan's kingdom, and not be with Christ or Him. I would much rather be with our Father, but I do know it is more needful for me to be in the flesh.

According to my earnest expectation and my hope, that in nothing I shall be ashamed, but that with all boldness, as always, so now also Christ shall be magnified in my body, whether it be by life, or by death. For to me to live is Christ, and to die is gain. But if I live in the flesh, this is the fruit of my labour: yet what I shall choose I wot not. For I am in a strait betwixt two, having a desire to depart, and to be with Christ; which is far better: **Nevertheless to abide in the flesh is more needful for you.** (Philippians 1:20–24)

Something that we need to be remembering here is that we are in hell. This is something that was explained very well in the second book we wrote, in the chapter called "The Fire." Because this has covered in an earlier book, we will only give one definitive verse that pretty much declares that we are in hell now. "And fear not them which kill the body, but are not able to kill the soul: **but rather fear him which is able to destroy both soul and body in hell**" (Matthew

10:28). I do not know about you, but once my body dies, I don't care what happens to it. I will be dead and will not know anything. But if I am alive in the flesh, I do fear the one that can destroy my body and soul. We are being told that we are in hell right now.

To understand this, we need to realize that we walk through spiritual fire every day. This has been explained also in that chapter and other areas as well. Anytime something upsets or makes a person feel anything other than almost perfect, it's some type of spiritual fire. Hypothetically, think of someone calling you a very nasty name to your face, it hurts. The more this goes on, the more it bothers you. That hurt that you feel is a small flame. The more intense the words get, the hotter the flame. Let us imagine that a person loses their job, which leads to them being forced out of the home. This, too, is a fire. It disrupts the way a person is doing something, or the way this person is living.

Now, we have started to see these fires pop up everywhere. The fire truly started to swell when China realized that their people were dying with a disease that they had no treatment or cure for. Then the flames started to grow when they realized how contagious it is. This started to cause a panic as it spread throughout the world. When this panic started from the contagiousness, then several people started to die. This caused a lot of pain for a lot of people that were losing loved ones. This pain is fire; it burns. It is not a physical fire.

As the virus spread throughout the entire world, the next flame on top of that flame was ignited. This was when the economies of the world started shutting down. I know there is probably some out there thinking that we have had these pandemics and such before. Yes, we have, but none of the past pandemics from before ever shut down the world economy. Without showing the Google searches, I have done several and keep finding headlines that indicate that this is the first pandemic that has ever shut down the world economy.

Now, with these two things happening throughout the world, people from everywhere are feeling the pain. This is because we all are in labor at the same time. Now, to add gasoline to the fire, it seems we have a leader that wants to separate the United States from

JESUS IS HERE

all other countries. They, too, have the same blood as you and me. They, too, breathe the same air as you and me. They, too, walk on the same earth as you and me. They, too, have the same Father as you and me. Christ dwells in them as well as he dwells in you. Remember, “Where there is neither Greek nor Jew, circumcision nor uncircumcision, Barbarian, Scythian, bond nor free: **but Christ is all, and in all**” (Colossians 3:11). This country needs our brothers and sisters, as well as they need us.

This is where it is going to get extremely sensitive. We have been showing you all how they have dominion over our bodies. First, remember that we’re hearing conversations being held in heaven. Then listen to when we can hear how they have dominion over our bodies. These are the spirits of the kings of the old testament, angels, Satan, and others also.

And all the cities of store that Solomon had, and cities for his chariots, and cities for his horse- men, and that which Solomon desired to build in Jerusalem, and in Lebanon, and in all the land of his dominion. (1 Kings 9:19)

Remember Jerusalem is above us and is the mother of all. But Jerusalem which is above is free, which is the mother of us all. (Galatians 4:26)

And it yieldeth much increase unto the kings whom thou hast set over us because of our sins: also they have dominion over our bodies, and over our cattle, at their pleasure, and we are in great distress. (Nehemiah 9:37)

Knowest thou the ordinances of heaven? canst thou set the dominion thereof in the earth? (Job 38:33)

Keep back thy servant also from presumptuous sins; let them not have dominion over me: then shall I

DAVID JENKINS

be upright, and I shall be innocent from the great transgression. (Psalm 19:13)

Bless the Lord, all his works in all places of his dominion: bless the Lord, O my soul. (Psalm 103:22)

Thou madest him to have dominion over the works of thy hands; thou hast put all things under his feet: (Psalm 8:6)

Order my steps in thy word: and let not any iniquity have dominion over me. (Psalm 119:133)

We used a few different examples of how they above have dominion over us, and yes, we even used an example of how Jesus has dominion over the works of our hands. This is how he is building the temple that cannot be seen with our eyes.

Jesus answered and said unto them, Destroy this temple, and in three days I will raise it up. Then said the Jews, Forty and six years was this temple building, and wilt thou rear it up in three days? But he spake of the temple of his body. (John 2:19–21)

I must confess here, as I am looking over these verses to find what seems to fit what we are talking about, something weird came to mind. I was looking over these verses, and suddenly had the image of our president having the peaceful protest violently cleared, walking to the man-made church, and holding up a Bible. I am not saying this is something that our Father is confirming with me, but it does make me wonder if he is thinking about this dominion. It just makes me wonder if he wants to have dominion over the country. I only say this because he has said several times that they must dominate the movement. It does make me think that he is trying to give the

JESUS IS HERE

impression of him trying to use the Word of God, which is telling him that he has the right to dominate the people.

Learn to do well; seek judgment, relieve the oppressed, judge the fatherless, plead for the widow. Come now, and let us reason together, saith the Lord: though your sins be as scarlet, they shall be as white as snow; though they be red like crimson, they shall be as wool. If ye be willing and obedient, ye shall eat the good of the land: But if ye refuse and rebel, ye shall be devoured with the sword: for the mouth of the Lord hath spoken it. (Isaiah 1:17–20)

A love for all does not dominate; it listens, understands, and compromises. If he ever reads this book, he is going to learn that he does not want this dominion we are talking about. This dominion can and will cause people to be who they are as shown in the second book we wrote. It was shown in this book and also in the chapter, “Reincarnation.”

The first thing we are going to be reflecting on is something we went over just a bit ago.

And thou, Ezra, after the wisdom of thy God, that is in thine hand, set magistrates and judges, which may judge all the people that are beyond the river, all such as know the laws of thy God; and teach ye them that know them not. And whosoever will not do the law of thy God, and the law of the king, let judgment be executed speedily upon him, whether it be unto death, or to banishment, or to confiscation of goods, or to imprisonment. Blessed be the Lord God of our fathers, which hath put such a thing as this in the king’s heart, to beautify the house of the Lord which is in Jerusalem: (Ezra 7:25–27)

Let us look at one more spot, talking about them above us having dominion without it talking about dominion.

Then I looked, and, behold, in the firmament that was above the head of the cherubims there appeared over them as it were a sapphire stone, as the appearance of the likeness of a throne. And he spake unto the man clothed with linen, and said, Go in between the wheels, even under the cherub, and fill thine hand with coals of fire from between the cherubims, and scatter them over the city. And he went in in my sight. Now the cherubims stood on the right side of the house, when the man went in; and the cloud filled the inner court. Then the glory of the Lord went up from the cherub, and stood over the threshold of the house; and the house was filled with the cloud, and the court was full of the brightness of the Lord's glory. And the sound of the cherubims' wings was heard even to the outer court, as the voice of the Almighty God when he speaketh. And it came to pass, that when he had commanded the man clothed with linen, saying, Take fire from between the wheels, from between the cherubims; then he went in, and stood beside the wheels. And one cherub stretched forth his hand from between the cherubims unto the fire that was between the cherubims, and took thereof, and put it into the hands of him that was clothed with linen: who took it, and went out. And there appeared in the cherubims the form of a man's hand under their wings. And when I looked, behold the four wheels by the cherubims, one wheel by one cherub, and another wheel by another cherub: and the appearance of the wheels was as the colour of a beryl stone. And as for their appearances, they four had one likeness, as if a wheel had been in the midst of a wheel. When they

went, they went upon their four sides; they turned not as they went, but to the place whither the head looked they followed it; they turned not as they went. And their whole body, and their backs, and their hands, and their wings, and the wheels, were full of eyes round about, even the wheels that they four had. As for the wheels, it was cried unto them in my hearing, O wheel. And every one had four faces: the first face was the face of a cherub, and the second face was the face of a man, and the third the face of a lion, and the fourth the face of an eagle. And the cherubims were lifted up. This is the living creature that I saw by the river of Chebar. **And when the cherubims went, the wheels went by them: and when the cherubims lifted up their wings to mount up from the earth, the same wheels also turned not from beside them. When they stood, these stood; and when they were lifted up, these lifted up themselves also: for the spirit of the living creature was in them.** Then the glory of the Lord departed from off the threshold of the house, and stood over the cherubims. And the cherubims lifted up their wings, and mounted up from the earth in my sight: when they went out, the wheels also were beside them, and every one stood at the door of the east gate of the Lord's house; and the glory of the God of Israel was over them above. This is the living creature that I saw under the God of Israel by the river of Chebar; and I knew that they were the cherubims. **Every one had four faces apiece, and every one four wings; and the likeness of the hands of a man was under their wings.** And the likeness of their faces was the same faces which I saw by the river of Chebar, their appearances and themselves: they went every one straight forward. (Ezekiel 10:1-22)

Notice how these are above us, and they go where we go, or we go where they go? Notice the four faces? Now think about the four basic moods a person has. Without posting the entire article in here, I will show what first pops on when I do a Google search. This leaves us with four “basic” emotions, according to this study: **happy, sad, afraid/surprised, and angry/disgusted** (Feb. 4, 2014, “New Research Says There Are Only Four Emotions”—The...). These are the faces that each of us have. And they have dominion over our bodies. Please try to relate how your actions relate to your mood, and you will notice this right away.

Keep this in mind as we remind you of somethings you have read about as to where they showed this dominion. The first thing will be the so-called car accident that I had on March 28, 1986, Good Friday. Who do you think caused me to oversteer so that this accident would happen when it did? Then thirty years later, almost to the day, I was called out to the wilderness to be baptized with Holy Ghost? Who do you think had dominion over my mom when she kicked me out of the house? Remember, she did not even remember doing it. We just went over how they had dominion over her when she told the doctor not to give her blood. Who had dominion over me when I was told to start listening to the Bible when I did? Who had dominion over me when I told my one brother that though shalt not tempt thy Lord God? Who do you think had dominion over me when I almost sacrificed my son in the spiritual realm? Who do you think had dominion over my second brother when he called me an hour after my son did? Remember, my son called me to tell me he just got a job, and then my brother called asking for a hundred dollars and wound up being the ram with his horns in the thicket? Who do you think had dominion over my wife when I went to the Lake of the Ozarks to love my wife as I was told to do? Remember how that was related to teaching me who I am? Who do you think had dominion over my oldest brother when, after around forty days and nights of fasting, he and his wife went to a man-made church, and then we argued about the scriptures all day?

JESUS IS HERE

We are hoping that you are truly seeing how they have dominion over our bodies. The reason we felt a need to show you all this again is because I have been witnessing for quite some time now. We have brought this up in the second and third book also. Have you ever had one of those moments that you regretted? Maybe you ran a Stop sign and got a ticket, and it really laid hard on conscience for you, hardly ever break any traffic laws, but for some reason that day, you just did without thinking about it. It could very well be because those above have that dominion over you, caused you to do it without you knowing it.

The reason we are going over this is because this entire world just witnessed how this happens with George Floyd. This is not to say that George did anything wrong or right. He, too, is a part of the son of God. But here is the catch: so are the policemen involved.

Then they said to Jeremiah, The Lord be a true and faithful witness between us, if we do not even according to all things for the which the Lord thy God shall send thee to us. **Whether it be good, or whether it be evil, we will obey the voice of the Lord our God, to whom we send thee; that it may be well with us, when we obey the voice of the Lord our God.** (Jeremiah 42:5–6)

These are not men here on earth, but rather men from above us that have dominion over us. Our Father commanded these men to do what they did. Not because anyone did anything against per say, but rather because He knows how to ignite the next set of flames on the earth. And with what happened, you can only imagine how strong this dominion is. I have been experiencing this for quite some time now, and now the world gets to see how this is done. This happens all the time, but most do not realize it or understand it. This is by no means an excuse to start breaking the law and saying God made me do it, for if He did not, you will pay severely with Him and not man.

Before the big incident with George Floyd happened, there were a couple other wrongful deaths. They were not talked about a lot before the video was finally released with the killing of Ahmaud Arbery. Then there was the death of Breonna Taylor that took place when the police raided her home. Now, I know there have been many more, but these are the main ones we hear on the news. With all this going on, it is starting to bring more cases of police brutality up. With these things coming out, it is like adding gasoline to the fires.

This is an area in which we will be talking about Rayshard Brooks that was shot down by police in Atlanta, Georgia, on June 12, 2020. I feel our Father is telling me to show you all how He has taught me to look at this situation. What we are going to be doing is breaking this down and metaphorically putting myself in the arresting officer's shoes, Rayshard's shoes, and then finally, the officers that refused to work after the arresting officers were arrested.

Even though I know this was done to keep the flames or labor pains going, there are some particularly important factors that need to be looked at. When this happened, Rayshard fell asleep in his car in the drive-through at a fast-food restaurant. This obviously would raise concern, and the expected outcome would be to call for some help. When the police arrive on the scene, they had a peaceful conversation with Rayshard that lasted around a half hour or so. They are trained to watch for suspected drunk driving and, yes, falling asleep behind the wheel would give a good indication of this. When they gave him the sobriety test and then the breathalyzer test, he failed.

It was then when the police tried place him under arrest, Rayshard decided to resist arrest. While he did this, he pretty much took two officers down to the ground. While fighting with these officers, he managed to steal a weapon from them that they use to temporarily paralyse people so they can get control of an out of control suspect. He decided to run, but while he was being chased by the police, he turned around and tried to use the paralyzing weapon on them. When this happened, what do you think this police officer was thinking? I would have been thinking about all that just went down and now this guy is trying to hurt an officer of the law. If he does hit me with that,

JESUS IS HERE

what will he do? Will he come get my gun and try to kill me? Will he try to cause bodily harm to others? If he is willing to fight with me and use this weapon against me, who else is he willing to harm just so he does not get arrested? Police are hired and trained to protect and serve everybody and not just those that cooperate.

Now let me put myself in Rayshard's shoes. I ask you to realize that I didn't say anything about skin color above. But I will say now that I am a White man and will be putting myself in the same scenario. Let us say I have had a few drinks and decide to drive the fast-food restaurant to get something to eat. I fall asleep behind the wheel in the drive-through. The police show up, and we have the same conversation. I fail the breathalyzer test, and they place me under arrest. As they are doing this, I decide that I am not going back to jail.

We must pause here because they did show an interview that Rayshard had a couple of months before this. In this interview, Rayshard did say that if you do wrong, you need to pay your debt to society. Rayshard knew he was doing wrong when he got behind the wheel of a car while intoxicated. By doing this, he was potentially putting his life and many others in danger. So he knew that the police had a right to arrest him. He knew it was wrong.

Now that I decide to resist, I take these officers to the ground and overtake them. I steal a weapon from the police that they use to temporarily paralyze people, and I try to use it against them as I am trying to run away. Not only would I think they would have a right to shoot me, not only would I think that they could shoot me, but I would also expect them to shoot me. That is what they are trained to do.

Now let us think about the officers that refused to come into work after these officers were arrested. I do realize that I do not have all the exact facts, but with the fact that I do have, these arresting policemen did what they are trained to do. They were protecting others from what seemed to be a pretty much desperate man that was breaking the law, that didn't want to go back to jail. And at the time seemed this man would do anything to keep from going back. Regardless of skin color, you do the crime, you do the time.

This is where I disagree with CNN. I don't think it was fair to these police officers for the mayor to fire them immediately. What do you think was going on in the heads of the policemen that refused to come into work? If I were a policeman, I would have quit my job immediately. When this happened the way it did, it sent out a message that if a Black man resist arrest and tries to harm you in anyway, you are to back down. It is almost like telling these cops that if a Black parson tries to harm you, you must let him.

As you know from reading these books or just listening to how I talk, I know that Black Lives Matter, but at the same time, every life on the planet matters equally. No one deserves to be treated better or worse. We are all equally stuck here until all things be fulfilled.

Remember how we showed Rebekah had two nations in here womb? Remember how a person is a nation and not a county? How many nations are there living in each country? How many nations are living in the United States? Listen to how there seems to be somewhat of a race war starting to flare up in the country. Listen to how there are several servants tearing down statues and such. Listen to the racial divide that seems to be happening. Then listen to how the president seems to be more concerned about these statues than the virus.

Now we need to listen to something that we are told in the Old Testament.

According to the word that I covenanted with you when ye came out of Egypt, so my spirit remaineth among you: fear ye not. For thus saith the Lord of hosts; Yet once, it is a little while, and I will shake the heavens, and the earth, and the sea, and the dry land; **And I will shake all nations, and the desire of all nations shall come:** and I will fill this house with glory, saith the Lord of hosts. (Haggai 2:5-7)

Notice how He is shaking the nations without shaking the earth? Notice how He is spiritually awakening these nations without physically shaking the earth? As of right now, I would say He has

JESUS IS HERE

shaking the nations up pretty well. But we remember, these are just part of the labor pains, and it will get worse.

There will be more fires or problems throughout the world. I do not know how our Father will start these, but I am sure there will be more. As this goes on, these fires will be stronger. They will hurt more than these that we are going through. But we need to remember at the same time, they are contractions for we are in the womb of the woman getting ready to give birth to the son of God in which covers the earth.

We ask that you try to think of a woman in the flesh going into labor. If the water breaks, you know without a doubt it is not false labor. Here is how I know the water has broken. This is the fourth book that our Father has had me write in, which shows a true understanding of what the Bible is about. We showed you all how the world is cover in a spiritual flood. This flood is called Egypt. We showed you all how David allowed the spirit of Moses lead him out of Egypt so that our Father could teach him the Bible with His doctrine and not mans. Now listen to this.

He hath made every thing beautiful in his time: also he hath set the world in their heart, so that no man can find out the work that God maketh from the beginning to the end. (Ecclesiastes 3:11)

When I came out of the spiritual water, which is called Egypt, the water broke. That is why I can understand the Bible the way I do. This, too, confirms that we are at the end of the world. With these fires going on at the same time as the contractions, one can only imagine how much hotter the flames will become, or how much stronger the pain will be. But we can know with the water being broke, we cannot stop it from happening. Once a woman's water breaks in the flesh, it is time to get to the hospital because the birth of the child is coming.

I was truly trying to understand when the water broke, and it was the eleventh of June this year when our Father gave me an exact time. This is one time that I am going to tell you exactly how our Father

brought it to my attention. Up until June 11, I thought it was when I was baptized with the Holy Ghost on March 8, 2016. I had spoken with Cathy on the June 10, telling her that the water broke when I was baptized. Nothing came of it that evening. The next day, my son called, and I was telling him the same thing.

I am going to give you the conversation we were having, almost to the word. I was driving in the evening, and I started to say that the water broke when I was baptized. I paused, and all the sudden, I said, "Hold on a minute." Just as I got the word baptized out of my mouth, I saw a vision go through my mind. It did not take my mind off the road or cause me to not see. I just suddenly saw myself sitting in the airplane seat, looking out the window. I was looking at the flood that I had seen that we covered in the chapter just as the days of Noah.

I told my son right away, and that was when the water broke. I understood it because when I was in that plane, watching it all form, I was on the outside of the flood. I got back from Hawaii on November 13, 2019. The first case called COVID-19 was discovered on November 17. Just four days after I got back from the trip our Father sent me on.

We are all going through this together, but we will not get through this only thinking of ourselves. This will be the time that our Father will be testing the hearts of us more than He has ever in the past.

The heart is deceitful above all things, and desperately wicked: who can know it? I the Lord search the heart, I try the reins, even to give every man according to his ways, and according to the fruit of his doings. As the partridge sitteth on eggs, and hatcheth them not; so he that getteth riches, and not by right, shall leave them in the midst of his days, and at his end shall be a fool. A glorious high throne from the beginning is the place of our sanctuary. O Lord, the hope of Israel, all that forsake thee shall be ashamed, and they that depart from me shall be written in the earth, because they have forsaken the

JESUS IS HERE

Lord, the fountain of living waters. Heal me, O Lord, and I shall be healed; save me, and I shall be saved: for thou art my praise. Behold, they say unto me, Where is the word of the Lord? let it come now. As for me, I have not hastened from being a pastor to follow thee: neither have I desired the woeful day; thou knowest: that which came out of my lips was right before thee. Be not a terror unto me: thou art my hope in the day of evil. Let them be confounded that persecute me, but let not me be confounded: let them be dismayed, but let not me be dismayed: bring upon them the day of evil, and destroy them with double destruction. (Jeremiah 17:9–18)

This is where we need to reflect as to when we were told of this time.

All these are the beginning of sorrows. Then shall they deliver you up to be afflicted, and shall kill you: and ye shall be hated of all nations for my name's sake. **And then shall many be offended, and shall betray one another, and shall hate one another. And many false prophets shall rise, and shall deceive many.** And because iniquity shall abound, the love of many shall wax cold. But he that shall endure unto the end, the same shall be saved. And this gospel of the kingdom shall be preached in all the world for a witness unto all nations; and then shall the end come. When ye therefore shall see the abomination of desolation, spoken of by Daniel the prophet, stand in the holy place, (whoso readeth, let him understand:) Then let them which be in Judaea flee into the mountains: Let him which is on the housetop not come down to take any thing out of his house: Neither let him which is in the field return back to take his clothes. And woe unto them that are with child, and to them

that give suck in those days! But pray ye that your flight be not in the winter, neither on the sabbath day: **For then shall be great tribulation, such as was not since the beginning of the world to this time, no, nor ever shall be. And except those days should be shortened, there should no flesh be saved: but for the elect's sake those days shall be shortened.**
(Matthew 24:8–22)

We have gone over and explained most of this chapter and will not try to explain it again. But we are going to touch on this, for this is what the world is now going through. This is the time in which we will see the “true colors” of everybody. And this has nothing to do with skin color. This is when we will see how everybody is out for themselves and not others.

His watchmen are blind: they are all ignorant, they are all dumb dogs, they cannot bark; sleeping, lying down, loving to slumber. Yea, they are greedy dogs which can never have enough, and they are shepherds that cannot understand: they all look to their own way, every one for his gain, from his quarter.
(Isaiah 56:10–11)

This is going to be hard and very devastating in the world, and not a time in which you only should be thinking of yourself. As we just heard above, we are told that those that make it at the end will be saved. This isn't telling us that we do whatever we can so that we ourselves can survive to the end, but rather having love and compassion for our Father and others is what will get us to the end. Remember the two greatest commandments.

Master, which is the great commandment in the law? Jesus said unto him, Thou shalt love the Lord thy God with all thy heart, and with all thy soul,

JESUS IS HERE

and with all thy mind. This is the first and great commandment. And the second is like unto it, Thou shalt love thy neighbour as thyself. On these two commandments hang all the law and the prophets. (Matthew 22:36–40)

Then listen to when we are told those that try to save their life will lose it.

And when he had called the people unto him with his disciples also, he said unto them, Whosoever will come after me, let him deny himself, and take up his cross, and follow me. For whosoever will save his life shall lose it; but whosoever shall lose his life for my sake and the gospel's, the same shall save it. For what shall it profit a man, if he shall gain the whole world, and lose his own soul? (Mark 8:34–36)

As we are doing the conclusion of this chapter, there are a few things that we need to remember. Let us start by recalling the reincarnation of my mom and dad. Remember when my daughter was pregnant with her first daughter? How I knew she was pregnant before she told me? Remember how the doctors said the baby was due on August 15 of 2017, and our Father told me the baby was going to be born on the fourth of August? Then Avalinn was born on the fourth. As noted in the second book, my daughter got pregnant again, and once again, the doctors said the baby was due on January 15 of 2019. Adsila was born on the eighth.

At the time these births took place, I thought this was about our Father teaching me about reincarnation. About six months ago or so, our Father started to put it on my conscience about how both children were born premature. Then He kept reminding me of the scriptures we just read about.

DAVID JENKINS

And except those days should be shortened, there should no flesh be saved: but for the elect's sake those days shall be shortened. (Matthew 24:22)

I realized that He was showing me that He is using my only daughter as a teaching tool. Remember, as we showed in all books, our Father is the only one that knows if a person is doing wrong or right by Him. Now we need to bring back to remembrance that my daughter was only fifteen when she got pregnant with Avalinn, my first granddaughter, which is my mother. Without going into the studies that have been done, we all know that the Virgin Mary was only a teenager when she got pregnant. Then our Father used my daughter to teach me about reincarnation.

Remember how we are told to pray.

After this manner therefore pray ye: Our Father which art in heaven, Hallowed be thy name. Thy kingdom come, Thy will be done in earth, as it is in heaven. Give us this day our daily bread. And forgive us our debts, as we forgive our debtors. And lead us not into temptation, but deliver us from evil: For thine is the kingdom, and the power, and the glory, for ever. Amen. (Matthew 6:9-14)

If it is happening in heaven, it is happening here also.

Now, we were just talking about how they, above us, have dominion over us, right? Who do you think had the overall dominion over my daughter and those that she has been with so that these children would be born on the days that they were born on? Do you think that she planned it out that way?

Okay, we have been going over how the world is now in labor. We have gone over how the world is coming to an end. We showed you all how the first two grandchildren were born premature as the birth of the son of God will be. Let us listen to when no one knows the day or hour of the end.

JESUS IS HERE

So ye in like manner, when ye shall see these things come to pass, know that it is nigh, even at the doors. Verily I say unto you, that this generation shall not pass, till all these things be done. Heaven and earth shall pass away: but my words shall not pass away. **But of that day and that hour knoweth no man, no, not the angels which are in heaven, neither the Son, but the Father.** (Mark 13:29–32)

Now my daughter is pregnant with her third child. No, I do not know who is being reincarnated this time, but that is not why we are bringing this up. This baby is due on the fourth of July, this year. What is the fourth of July about? Let us Google it, for I know a lot of people have forgotten what holidays are supposed to represent. *From 1776 to the present day, July 4th has been celebrated as the birth of American independence, with festivities ranging from fireworks, parades and concerts to more casual family gatherings and barbecues.* (Apr 17, 2020, *History of the Fourth of July—Brief History and Early Celebrations.* [www.history.com › topics › holidays › july-4th](http://www.history.com/topics/holidays/july-4th))

We just showed the first thing that popped on the search. We will not post the entire article on this. But as we can hear, it is about the birth of this nation. What is getting ready to happen to the world, it is coming to an end, and at the same time, the son of God will be born into the next world. Let us listen to when we are told about that.

Now Jesus knew that they were desirous to ask him, and said unto them, Do ye enquire among yourselves of that I said, A little while, and ye shall not see me: and again, a little while, and ye shall see me? Verily, verily, I say unto you, That ye shall weep and lament, but the world shall rejoice: and ye shall be sorrowful, but your sorrow shall be turned into joy. A woman when she is in travail hath sorrow, because her hour is come: but as soon as she is delivered of the child,

she remem- bereth no more the anguish, **for joy that a man is born into the world.** (John 16:19–21)

Have you ever heard of a man being born and not a baby? This man is in everybody on the planet. This man is going to be born into the next world, and this world will be no more.

When our Father first showed me this, it took my breath away. As I have stated before, even though He has been teaching me for quite some time now, He still amazes me. When all this started to come together as it did, I started to ask if this Christmas means anything. Let me explain. I was in a coma, or in the belly of the earth for three days and nights back in 1986. This happened on the holiday that we call Easter. I mean the so-called accident did happen right before the sabbath started, just as the scriptures describe, but it still happened on a man-made holiday. Being how Christmas is supposed to be about the birth of Jesus, is He going to use this Christmas the same way He did the Easter of 1986? What I was quickly reminded of how my grandchildren and parents were both premature? This tells me that we, being the woman, will not go full term. And then I was reminded that no one knows the day or hour in which this will happen. Even the son of man, but the Father only.

But before anyone get to excited, these flames are not going to be a physical fire. They will get larger and more painful as the labor pain will do the same. This does not mean that this will happen this year, for there is no time frame in our Father's world. Man frames time; man puts a time limit on years, months, weeks, days, hours, and even minutes. Now listen to how our Father looks at time.

My daughter had her third daughter on the fifth of July. She carried Ana the full term this time, and it makes me recall the scriptures telling us that all must be fulfilled. This is because everything must be placed or fully developed before we can be born into the next world.

Let your light so shine before men, that they may see your good works, and glorify your Father which is in

JESUS IS HERE

heaven. Think not that I am come to destroy the law, or the prophets: I am not come to destroy, but to fulfil. For verily I say unto you, **Till heaven and earth pass, one jot or one tittle shall in no wise pass from the law, till all be fulfilled.** (Matthew 5:16–18)

Lord, thou hast been our dwelling place in all generations. Before the mountains were brought forth, or ever thou hadst formed the earth and the world, even from everlasting to everlasting, thou art God. Thou turnest man to destruction; and sayest, **Return, ye children of men. For a thousand years in thy sight are but as yesterday when it is past, and as a watch in the night.** Thou carriest them away as with a flood; they are as a sleep: in the morning they are like grass which groweth up. In the morning it flourisheth, and groweth up; in the evening it is cut down, and withereth. For we are consumed by thine anger, and by thy wrath are we troubled. Thou hast set our iniquities before thee, our secret sins in the light of thy countenance. **For all our days are passed away in thy wrath: we spend our years as a tale that is told.** (Psalm 90:1–9)

Please note how a thousand years are as yesterday for our Father. There is no time frame. This could go on for a couple of our years or so. It is not for me to know; it is just for me the help others understand what is going on. When we listen to this closely, we can also hear why the Bible sounds as if everything in it has happened already. That is because in our Father's world, it has, but it hasn't happened for us yet. Remember, He knows everything. He already knows what will happen in the next world and beyond. In other words, the birth of Jesus Christ is a prophecy and has not happened yet. But as you can tell now, it is approaching.

We need to go over one more area before closing this chapter. We need to be listening to when Satan will be loosed, for he will now only has a short time left.

And I saw an angel come down from heaven, having the key of the bottomless pit and a great chain in his hand. And he laid hold on the dragon, that old serpent, which is the Devil, and Satan, and bound him a thousand years, And cast him into the bottomless pit, and shut him up, and set a seal upon him, that he should deceive the nations no more, till the thousand years should be fulfilled: **and after that he must be loosed a little season.** And I saw thrones, and they sat upon them, and judgment was given unto them: and I saw the souls of them that were beheaded for the witness of Jesus, and for the word of God, and which had not worshipped the beast, neither his image, neither had received his mark upon their foreheads, or in their hands; and they lived and reigned with Christ a thousand years. But the rest of the dead lived not again until the thousand years were finished. This is the first resurrection. Blessed and holy is he that hath part in the first resurrection: on such the second death hath no power, but they shall be priests of God and of Christ, and shall reign with him a thousand years. And when the thousand years are expired, Satan shall be loosed out of his prison, And shall go out to deceive the nations which are in the four quarters of the earth, Gog, and Magog, to gather them together to battle: the number of whom is as the sand of the sea. (Revelation 20:1–8)

We have gone over how we are living in the thousand-year reign now. We have gone over that man is Satan. Not the soul or life that our Father breathed into man, but rather the flesh of man is Satan.

JESUS IS HERE

This is the tricky part if you will. Once many read this book and realize who I am, man or Satan will be loosed for a short season because all will know that the world is going to end soon.

One last thing we need to mention in the closing of this chapter:

And I saw a new heaven and a new earth: for the first heaven and the first earth were passed away; and there was no more sea. And I John saw the holy city, new Jerusalem, coming down from God out of heaven, prepared as a bride adorned for her husband. And I heard a great voice out of heaven saying, Behold, the tabernacle of God is with men, and he will dwell with them, and they shall be his people, and God himself shall be with them, and be their God. And God shall wipe away all tears from their eyes; and there shall be no more death, neither sorrow, nor crying, neither shall there be any more pain: for the former things are passed away. And he that sat upon the throne said, Behold, I make all things new. And he said unto me, Write: for these words are true and faithful. And he said unto me, It is done. I am Alpha and Omega, the beginning and the end. I will give unto him that is athirst of the fountain of the water of life freely. (Revelation 21:1-6)

I can almost see this as I am writing this in this book. And yes, even though I know that we all have some very hard times ahead of us, I am rejoicing within myself as you should also.

BUILDING YOUR HOUSE ON THE ROCK



This chapter is going to cover a few different topics. It is mainly going to be focusing what is that rock in which we are to build our house. It is neither a physical house nor a physical rock. The house in which we build is our own body, and the rock is our Father. The reason we need to do this chapter is because there a lot of people who believe that Jesus changed God, our Father. There are a lot of people that believe that the Old Testament is only for the people of the past. There are a lot of people that still believe that celebrating holidays and such are okay with our Father.

One of the first things we want to bring up is Matthew 7:21–27.

Not every one that saith unto me, Lord, Lord, shall enter into the kingdom of heaven; but he that doeth the will of my Father which is in heaven. Many will say to me in that day, Lord, Lord, have we not prophesied in thy name? and in thy name have cast out devils? and in thy name done many wonderful works? And then will I profess unto them, I never knew you: depart from me, ye that work iniquity. **Therefore whosoever heareth these sayings of mine, and doeth them, I will liken him unto a wise man, which built his house upon a rock:** And the rain descended, and the floods came, and the winds blew, and beat upon that house; and it fell not: for it was founded upon a rock. And every one that heareth these sayings of

mine, and doeth them not, shall be likened unto a foolish man, which built his house upon the sand: And the rain descended, and the floods came, and the winds blew, and beat upon that house; and it fell: and great was the fall of it.

Jesus is telling us right here that whosoever heareth these sayings of mine and do them, that is the person who will build his house on a rock. Where in the Bible does Jesus say that he came to change our Father? I will guarantee you that Jesus did not come to change one jot or tittle of the law. **“Think not that I am come to destroy the law, or the prophets: I am not come to destroy, but to fulfil. For verily I say unto you, Till heaven and earth pass, one jot or one tittle shall in no wise pass from the law, till all be fulfilled”** (Matthew 5:17–18).

Where did Jesus say that we no longer needed the Old Testament? He didn't; however, we are going to look at several spots in which Jesus is telling us that we need the Old Testament just as well as we do the New Testament, without actually coming right out and saying it. But people refuse to listen, hence the name of the first book, *Father, Forgive Us, We Haven't Been Listening*.

Then was Jesus led up of the Spirit into the wilderness to be tempted of the devil. And when he had fasted forty days and forty nights, he was afterward an hungred. And when the tempter came to him, he said, If thou be the Son of God, command that these stones be made bread. **But he answered and said, It is written, Man shall not live by bread alone, but by every word that proceedeth out of the mouth of God.** Then the devil taketh him up into the holy city, and setteth him on a pinnacle of the temple, And saith unto him, If thou be the Son of God, cast thyself down: for it is written, He shall give his angels charge concerning thee: and in their hands they shall bear thee up, lest at any time thou dash thy foot against a

stone. **Jesus said unto him, It is written again, Thou shalt not tempt the Lord thy God.** Again, the devil taketh him up into an exceeding high mountain, and sheweth him all the kingdoms of the world, and the glory of them; And saith unto him, All these things will I give thee, if thou wilt fall down and worship me. **Then saith Jesus unto him, Get thee hence, Satan: for it is written, Thou shalt worship the Lord thy God, and him only shalt thou serve.** Then the devil leaveth him, and, behold, angels came and ministered unto him. (Matthew 4:1–11)

Okay, do you think Jesus knew all of these things by just reading the first three chapters of the New Testament?

Jesus saith unto them, **Did ye never read in the scriptures,** The stone which the builders rejected, the same is become the head of the corner: this is the Lord's doing, and it is marvellous in our eyes? (Matthew 21:42)

Jesus answered and said unto them, **Ye do err, not knowing the scriptures,** nor the power of God. (Matthew 22:29)

But how then shall the scriptures be fulfilled, that thus it must be? In that same hour said Jesus to the multitudes, Are ye come out as against a thief with swords and staves for to take me? I sat daily with you teaching in the temple, and ye laid no hold on me. But all this was done, **that the scriptures of the prophets might be fulfilled.** Then all the disciples forsook him, and fled. (Matthew 26:54–56)

And beginning at Moses and all the prophets, he expounded unto them in all the scriptures the things concerning himself. (Luke 24:27)

And they said one to another, Did not our heart burn within us, while he talked with us by the way, **and while he opened to us the scriptures?** (Luke 24:32)

What scriptures is he referring to if we do not need the Old Testament anymore? So now let us listen to a few spots other than the words of Jesus that we can hear that we need the scriptures or the Old Testament.

And Paul, as his manner was, **went in unto them, and three sabbath days reasoned with them out of the scriptures**, Opening and alleg- ing, that Christ must needs have suffered, and risen again from the dead; and that this Jesus, whom I preach unto you, is Christ. And some of them believed, and consorted with Paul and Silas; and of the devout Greeks a great multitude, and of the chief women not a few. But the Jews which believed not, moved with envy, took unto them certain lewd fellows of the baser sort, and gathered a company, and set all the city on an uproar, and assaulted the house of Jason, and sought to bring them out to the people. And when they found them not, they drew Jason and certain brethren unto the rulers of the city, crying, These that have turned the world upside down are come hither also; Whom Jason hath received: and these all do contrary to the decrees of Caesar, saying that there is another king, one Jesus. And they troubled the people and the rul- ers of the city, when they heard these things. And when they had taken security of Jason, and of the other, they let them go. And the brethren imme- diately sent

JESUS IS HERE

away Paul and Silas by night unto Berea: who coming thither went into the synagogue of the Jews. These were more noble than those in Thessalonica, **in that they received the word with all readiness of mind, and searched the scriptures daily, whether those things were so.** Therefore many of them believed; also of honourable women which were Greeks, and of men, not a few. (Acts 17:2–12)

Paul, a servant of Jesus Christ, called to be an apostle, separated unto the gospel of God, **(Which he had promised afore by his prophets in the holy scriptures,)** Concerning his Son Jesus Christ our Lord, which was made of the seed of David according to the flesh. (Romans 1:1–3)

But now is made manifest, and by the scriptures of the prophets, according to the commandment of the everlasting God, made known to all nations for the obedience of faith. (Romans 16:26)

As also in all his epistles, speaking in them of these things; in which are some things hard to be understood, which they that are unlearned and unstable wrest, **as they do also the other scriptures, unto their own destruction.** (2 Peter 3:16)

This is why we are told that God's people will be destroyed for their lack of knowledge.

My people are destroyed for lack of knowledge: because thou hast rejected knowledge, I will also reject thee, that thou shalt be no priest to me: seeing thou hast forgotten the law of thy God, I will also forget thy children. (Hosea 4:6)

Being as how I am a truck driver and drive all over the country, I see many signs or billboards saying that real Christians obey the teaching of Christ. First and foremost, that statement alone condemns. It is telling people that if they don't believe the same way as they do, then they're not a Christian. As we showed in the last book, nobody knows what God wants for each person other than to love, as we have heard from the beginning. But at the same time, I know they do not even believe in the teachings of Jesus, for Jesus did not come into this world to condemn it, neither do I. I come in my Father's name to show how easy it is to learn what our Father has wanted from us if we just listen to Him and not man.

I just walked out of a truck stop that has a stack of free New Testament Bibles. Where does any scripture say that we do not need the Old Testament? I will guarantee that there is not one scripture that even hints to this. In fact, we just read several scriptures that in reality are telling us to seek the Old Testament. Let us listen to what Jesus said in John 5:44–47.

How can ye believe, which receive honour one of another, and seek not the honour that cometh from God only? **Do not think that I will accuse you to the Father: there is one that accuseth you, even Moses, in whom ye trust. For had ye believed Moses, ye would have believed me; for he wrote of me. But if ye believe not his writings, how shall ye believe my words?**

Then let us listen to what he said in John 6:44–45, “No man can come to me, except the Father which hath sent me draw him: and I will raise him up at the last day. **It is written in the prophets, And they shall be all taught of God. Every man therefore that hath heard, and hath learned of the Father, cometh unto me.**”

These two sections of the New Testament alone give us direct instructions from Jesus himself to seek Moses and the prophets. But more importantly, let us listen to when we are told that a lot of people

have a veil on their hearts when it comes to reading Moses. This is in the New Testament.

Seeing then that we have such hope, we use great plainness of speech: And not as Moses, which put a veil over his face, that the children of Israel could not stedfastly look to the end of that which is abolished: **But their minds were blinded: for until this day remaineth the same veil untaken away in the reading of the Old Testament; which veil is done away in Christ. But even unto this day, when Moses is read, the veil is upon their heart. Nevertheless when it shall turn to the Lord, the veil shall be taken away.** (2 Corinthians 3:12–16)

Let us listen to when this veil was on Moses.

And it came to pass, when Moses came down from mount Sinai with the two tables of testimony in Moses' hand, when he came down from the mount, that Moses wist not that the skin of his face shone while he talked with him. And when Aaron and all the children of Israel saw Moses, behold, the skin of his face shone; and they were afraid to come nigh him. And Moses called unto them; and Aaron and all the rulers of the congregation returned unto him: and Moses talked with them. And afterward all the children of Israel came nigh: and he gave them in commandment all that the Lord had spoken with him in mount Sinai. **And till Moses had done speaking with them, he put a veil on his face.** But when Moses went in before the Lord to speak with him, he took the veil off, until he came out. And he came out, and spake unto the children of Israel that which he was commanded. And the children of Israel saw the face

of Moses, that the skin of Moses' face shone: **and Moses put the vail upon his face again**, until he went in to speak with Him. (Exodus 34:29–35)

The people couldn't handle the brightness of Moses's face after He had spoken with our Father. Now think about this for a minute: how do you react when you think about reading or listening to the Old Testament? This world has allowed their imagination to run wild when they read the Old Testament and automatically think our Father is cruel, mean, vindictive, or something like that. They put the same vail on their hearts. Then most refuse to look into the books of Moses. There is the first commandment being broken. "And God spake all these words, saying, I am the Lord thy God, which have brought thee out of the land of Egypt, out of the house of bondage. **Thou shalt have no other gods before me**" (Exodus 20:1–3). Now listen to what Jesus said in Matthew 4:4, "But he answered and said, It is written, **Man shall not live by bread alone, but by every word that proceedeth out of the mouth of God.**" How can man live by every word that proceedeth out of the mouth of God if they will not even go and see the words in which God spoke and listen to what our Father says? "This then is the message which we have heard of him, and declare unto you, that God is light, and in him is no darkness at all" (1 John 1:5). This also means He is all love, and man does not want to love in the same manner as He does.

Now through these three books our Father has had me write, we have been finding out that the Bible is not at all what it seems when you first read it. In the last book, we showed what the forbidden fruit is, as man calls it. We showed that our Father never commanded us to sacrifice animals, but man let his imagination run wild. We have showed in this book that our Father never commanded man to starve themselves. We have showed you the sacrifice of Abraham and his son and how I did the same thing, but yet there was never any threat to the life of my son. But all along, we have been told God is love. "**He that loveth not knoweth not God; for God is love**" (1 John 4:8). We all know that God is spirit: "**But the fruit of the Spirit is love,**

joy, peace, longsuffering, gentleness, goodness, faith, Meekness, temperance: against such there is no law” (Galatians 5:22–23).

So now let us listen to a few times that our Father tells us what He will do with those that have went a whoring after their own imagination.

Thus saith the Lord of hosts, the God of Israel; Put your burnt offerings unto your sacrifices, and eat flesh. For I spake not unto your fathers, nor commanded them in the day that I brought them out of the land of Egypt, concerning burnt offerings or sacrifices: But this thing commanded I them, saying, Obey my voice, and I will be your God, and ye shall be my people: and walk ye in all the ways that I have commanded you, that it may be well unto you. **But they hearkened not, nor inclined their ear, but walked in the counsels and in the imagination of their evil heart, and went backward, and not forward.** Since the day that your fathers came forth out of the land of Egypt unto this day I have even sent unto you all my servants the prophets, daily rising up early and sending them: **Yet they hearkened not unto me, nor inclined their ear, but hardened their neck: they did worse than their fathers.** Therefore thou shalt speak all these words unto them; but they will not hearken to thee: thou shalt also call unto them; but they will not answer thee. But thou shalt say unto them, This is a nation that obeyeth not the voice of the Lord their God, nor receiveth correction: truth is perished, and is cut off from their mouth. **Cut off thine hair, O Jerusalem, and cast it away, and take up a lamentation on high places; for the Lord hath rejected and forsaken the generation of his wrath.** (Jeremiah 7:21–29)

Just want to make a quick sidenote here. Remember we are hearing conversations being held in heaven when we read or listen to the Bible. Remember that they have dominion over our bodies. I am not saying this is what is going on for sure, for our Father will not tell me what He wants or needs from any other person on the planet, as explained in the last book. But look at all the men that are shaving their heads. I truly do believe the Bible is about us and not the people of the past. And remember Jesus saying that not one jot or tittle of the law shall in no wise pass until all be fulfilled?

The word that came to Jeremiah from the Lord saying, Hear ye the words of this covenant, and speak unto the men of Judah, and to the inhabitants of Jerusalem; And say thou unto them, Thus saith the Lord God of Israel; Cursed be the man that obeyeth not the words of this covenant, Which I commanded your fathers in the day that I brought them forth out of the land of Egypt, from the iron furnace, saying, Obey my voice, and do them, according to all which I command you: so shall ye be my people, and I will be your God: That I may perform the oath which I have sworn unto your fathers, to give them a land flowing with milk and honey, as it is this day. Then answered I, and said, So be it, O Lord. Then the Lord said unto me, Proclaim all these words in the cities of Judah, and in the streets of Jerusalem, saying, Hear ye the words of this covenant, and do them. For I earnestly protested unto your fathers in the day that I brought them up out of the land of Egypt, even unto this day, rising early and protesting, saying, Obey my voice. **Yet they obeyed not, nor inclined their ear, but walked every one in the imagination of their evil heart: therefore I will bring upon them all the words of this covenant, which I commanded them to do: but they did them not.** And the Lord said unto me, A

conspiracy is found among the men of Judah, and among the inhabitants of Jerusalem. They are turned back to the iniquities of their forefathers, **which refused to hear my words; and they went after other gods to serve them:** the house of Israel and the house of Judah have broken my covenant which I made with their fathers. **Therefore thus saith the Lord, Behold, I will bring evil upon them, which they shall not be able to escape; and though they shall cry unto me, I will not hearken unto them.** Then shall the cities of Judah and inhabitants of Jerusalem go, and cry unto the gods unto whom they offer incense: but they shall not save them at all in the time of their trouble. For according to the number of thy cities were thy gods, O Judah; and according to the number of the streets of Jerusalem have ye set up altars to that shameful thing, even altars to burn incense unto Baal. Therefore pray not thou for this people, neither lift up a cry or prayer for them: **for I will not hear them in the time that they cry unto me for their trouble.** (Jeremiah 11:1–14)

This right here makes me think of what we are told in Romans 10:11–14.

For the scripture saith, Whosoever believeth on him shall not be ashamed. For there is no difference between the Jew and the Greek: for the same Lord over all is rich unto all that call upon him. For whosoever shall call upon the name of the Lord shall be saved. **How then shall they call on him in whom they have not believed? and how shall they believe in him of whom they have not heard? and how shall they hear without a preacher?**

How can one call on our Father if you do not believe that He truly is love? Or you believe He is cruel and wrong for doing what He is doing?

Then the word of the Lord came unto me, saying, Thus saith the Lord, After this manner will I mar the pride of Judah, and the great pride of Jerusalem. This evil people, which refuse to hear my words, **which walk in the imagination of their heart, and walk after other gods, to serve them, and to worship them, shall even be as this girdle, which is good for nothing.** (Jeremiah 13:8–10)

I am going to have to place the entire chapter of Jeremiah 23, for there is so much that is being said by our Father, and I feel it fits right here.

Woe be unto the pastors that destroy and scatter the sheep of my pasture! saith the Lord. Therefore thus saith the Lord God of Israel against the pastors that feed my people; Ye have scattered my flock, and driven them away, and have not visited them: behold, I will visit upon you the evil of your doings, saith the Lord. And I will gather the remnant of my flock out of all countries whither I have driven them, and will bring them again to their folds; and they shall be fruitful and increase. And I will set up shepherds over them which shall feed them: and they shall fear no more, nor be dismayed, neither shall they be lacking, saith the Lord. Behold, the days come, saith the Lord, that I will raise unto David a righteous Branch, and a King shall reign and prosper, and shall execute judgment and justice in the earth. In his days Judah shall be saved, and Israel shall dwell safely: and this is his name whereby he shall be called, The Lord Our

Righteousness. Therefore, behold, the days come, saith the Lord, that they shall no more say, The Lord liveth, which brought up the children of Israel out of the land of Egypt; But, The Lord liveth, which brought up and which led the seed of the house of Israel out of the north country, and from all countries whither I had driven them; and they shall dwell in their own land. Mine heart within me is broken because of the prophets; all my bones shake; I am like a drunken man, and like a man whom wine hath overcome, because of the Lord, and because of the words of his holiness. **For the land is full of adulterers; for because of swearing the land mourneth; the pleasant places of the wilderness are dried up, and their course is evil, and their force is not right.** For both prophet and priest are profane; yea, in my house have I found their wickedness, saith the Lord. Wherefore their way shall be unto them as slippery ways in the darkness: they shall be driven on, and fall therein: for I will bring evil upon them, even the year of their visitation, saith the Lord. And I have seen folly in the prophets of Samaria; they prophesied in Baal, and caused my people Israel to err. I have seen also in the prophets of Jerusalem an horrible thing: they commit adultery, and walk in lies: they strengthen also the hands of evildoers, that none doth return from his wickedness; they are all of them unto me as Sodom, and the inhabitants thereof as Gomorrah. Therefore thus saith the Lord of hosts concerning the prophets; Behold, I will feed them with wormwood, and make them drink the water of gall: for from the prophets of Jerusalem is profaneness gone forth into all the land. Thus saith the Lord of hosts, Harken not unto the words of the prophets that prophesy unto you: they make you vain: they speak a vision of their own

heart, and not out of the mouth of the Lord. **They say still unto them that despise me, The Lord hath said, Ye shall have peace; and they say unto every one that walketh after the imagination of his own heart, No evil shall come upon you.** For who hath stood in the counsel of the Lord, and hath perceived and heard his word? who hath marked his word, and heard it? Behold, a whirlwind of the Lord is gone forth in fury, even a grievous whirlwind: it shall fall grievously upon the head of the wicked. The anger of the Lord shall not return, until he have executed, and till he have performed the thoughts of his heart: in the latter days ye shall consider it perfectly. I have not sent these prophets, yet they ran: I have not spoken to them, yet they prophesied. But if they had stood in my counsel, and had caused my people to hear my words, then they should have turned them from their evil way, and from the evil of their doings. Am I a God at hand, saith the Lord, and not a God afar off? Can any hide himself in secret places that I shall not see him? saith the Lord. Do not I fill heaven and earth? saith the Lord. I have heard what the prophets said, that prophesy lies in my name, saying, I have dreamed, I have dreamed. How long shall this be in the heart of the prophets that prophesy lies? yea, they are prophets of the deceit of their own heart; **Which think to cause my people to forget my name by their dreams which they tell every man to his neighbour, as their fathers have forgotten my name for Baal.** The prophet that hath a dream, let him tell a dream; and he that hath my word, let him speak my word faithfully. What is the chaff to the wheat? saith the Lord. **Is not my word like as a fire? saith the Lord; and like a hammer that breaketh the rock in pieces?** Therefore, behold, I am against the prophets,

saith the Lord, that steal my words every one from his neighbour. Behold, I am against the prophets, saith the Lord, that use their tongues, and say, He saith. Behold, I am against them that prophesy false dreams, saith the Lord, and do tell them, and cause my people to err by their lies, and by their lightness; yet I sent them not, nor commanded them: therefore they shall not profit this people at all, saith the Lord. **And when this people, or the prophet, or a priest, shall ask thee, saying, What is the burden of the Lord? thou shalt then say unto them, What burden? I will even forsake you, saith the Lord.** And as for the prophet, and the priest, and the people, that shall say, The burden of the Lord, I will even punish that man and his house. Thus shall ye say every one to his neighbour, and every one to his brother, What hath the Lord answered? and, What hath the Lord spoken? And the burden of the Lord shall ye mention no more: for every man's word shall be his burden; for ye have perverted the words of the living God, of the Lord of hosts our God. Thus shalt thou say to the prophet, What hath the Lord answered thee? and, What hath the Lord spoken? But since ye say, The burden of the Lord; therefore thus saith the Lord; Because ye say this word, The burden of the Lord, and I have sent unto you, saying, Ye shall not say, The burden of the Lord; **Therefore, behold, I, even I, will utterly forget you, and I will forsake you, and the city that I gave you and your fathers, and cast you out of my presence: And I will bring an everlasting reproach upon you, and a perpetual shame, which shall not be forgotten.** (Jeremiah 23:1-40)

Now let us listen to a couple of times in which we can even hear that it is pastors and such that lead people to their own destruction.

Hear ye the word which the Lord speaketh unto you, O house of Israel: Thus saith the Lord, Learn not the way of the heathen, and be not dismayed at the signs of heaven; for the heathen are dismayed at them. For the customs of the people are vain: for one cutteth a tree out of the forest, the work of the hands of the workman, with the axe. They deck it with silver and with gold; they fasten it with nails and with hammers, that it move not. They are upright as the palm tree, but speak not: they must needs be borne, because they cannot go. Be not afraid of them; for they cannot do evil, neither also is it in them to do good. Forasmuch as there is none like unto thee, O Lord; thou art great, and thy name is great in might. Who would not fear thee, O King of nations? for to thee doth it appertain: forasmuch as among all the wise men of the nations, and in all their kingdoms, there is none like unto thee. But they are altogether brutish and foolish: the stock is a doctrine of vanities. Silver spread into plates is brought from Tarshish, and gold from Uphaz, the work of the workman, and of the hands of the founder: blue and purple is their clothing: they are all the work of cunning men. But the Lord is the true God, he is the living God, and an everlasting king: at his wrath the earth shall tremble, and the nations shall not be able to abide his indignation. Thus shall ye say unto them, The gods that have not made the heavens and the earth, even they shall perish from the earth, and from under these heavens. He hath made the earth by his power, he hath established the world by his wisdom, and hath stretched out the heavens by his discretion. When he uttereth his voice, there is a multitude of waters in the heavens, and he causeth the vapours to ascend from the ends of the earth; he maketh lightnings with rain, and bringeth forth the

JESUS IS HERE

wind out of his treasures. Every man is brutish in his knowledge: every founder is confounded by the graven image: for his molten image is falsehood, and there is no breath in them. They are vanity, and the work of errors: in the time of their visitation they shall perish. The portion of Jacob is not like them: for he is the former of all things; and Israel is the rod of his inheritance: The Lord of hosts is his name. Gather up thy wares out of the land, O inhabitant of the fortress. For thus saith the Lord, Behold, I will sling out the inhabitants of the land at this once, and will distress them, that they may find it so. Woe is me for my hurt! my wound is grievous; but I said, Truly this is a grief, and I must bear it. **My tabernacle is spoiled, and all my cords are broken: my children are gone forth of me, and they are not: there is none to stretch forth my tent any more, and to set up my curtains. For the pastors are become brutish, and have not sought the Lord: therefore they shall not prosper, and all their flocks shall be scattered.** (Jeremiah 10:1–21)

Remember how we showed that the curtain is the sky that was being made in the books of Moses and the prophets? We showed how that the instructions for us to build our house in the prophets. Now let us listen to a couple of times we can hear them talk about the tents in which men were to dwell in. “And every wise hearted among you shall come, and make all that the Lord hath commanded; **The tabernacle, his tent, and his covering, his taches, and his boards, his bars, his pillars, and his sockets**” (Exodus 35:10–11). “**And thou shalt make an hanging for the door of the tent, of blue, and purple, and scarlet, and fine twined linen, wrought with needlework**” (Exodus 26:36).

These tents are spiritual tents in which we put around us when we build our house. Our bodies being the house of God. Obviously, we will not show all of the instructions, for that is not what these books are about. They are about getting people to turn back to our Father.

Now remember that we must worship God in spirit and in truth. As you see on my picture on the cover of this book, I wear fringes. Now check this out: the atmosphere protects the earth from things falling from space onto it. Just as these tents that we put around us protect us from the ways of this world. Remember thy kingdom come in earth as it is in heaven. Now I will speak about my tent and the door of my tent. But first let us listen to Ephesian 6:11–18.

Put on the whole armour of God, that ye may be able to stand against the wiles of the devil. For we wrestle not against flesh and blood, but against principalities, against powers, against the rulers of the darkness of this world, against spiritual wickedness in high places. Wherefore take unto you the whole armour of God, that ye may be able to withstand in the evil day, and having done all, to stand. Stand therefore, having your loins girt about with truth, **and having on the breastplate of righteousness;** And your feet shod with the preparation of the gospel of peace; Above all, taking the shield of faith, wherewith ye shall be able to quench all the fiery darts of the wicked. **And take the helmet of salvation, and the sword of the Spirit, which is the word of God: Praying always with all prayer and supplication in the Spirit, and watching thereunto with all perseverance and supplication for all saints.**

The armor of God that I have put on is the entire Bible and not just bits and pieces. I have learned of our Father through Moses and the prophets so that I could build my house (my body), and I have made this tent to be around me at all times so that all the things of the world do no harm to me. But what about the door to my tent.

Speak unto the children of Israel, **and bid them that they make them fringes in the borders of their garments throughout their generations, and that they put upon the fringe of the borders a ribband of blue: And it shall be unto you for a fringe, that ye may look upon it, and remember all the commandments of the Lord, and do them ; and that ye seek not after your own heart and your own eyes, after which ye use to go a whoring: That ye may remember, and do all my commandments, and be holy unto your God. I am the Lord your God, which brought you out of the land of Egypt, to be your God: I am the Lord your God.** (Numbers 15:38–41)

Let us listen to this again: “And thou shalt make an hanging for the door of the tent, **of blue, and purple, and scarlet, and fine twined linen, wrought with needlework**” (Exodus 26:36). I do not have scarlet in my fringes, but the blue is a blue violet in which is a form of purple.

I confess, I am just learning this as I am writing it. I have always worn my fringes to remind me that I will do as I am commanded. Well, I think it was the later part of 2012 when I first started to make and wear them for myself and not so that I could be seen wearing them. And yes, it does take a little needlework—well, a safety pin. But now we are seeing that these fringes are the door to my tent. Now I can relate to this firsthand. I told you all in the chapter “Believing” that I am sometimes rebellious and do mess up. It is a learning process, and I do know that, but there have been times that this learning process has been difficult. Our Father has been bringing me into His world, without leaving this one. Sometimes it gets to be hard to understand of what I am supposed to be doing. So, there has been a couple of times in which I took the fringes off. Big mistake, my mood was foul. I didn’t realize what I was doing; I was opening that door and telling our Father that I didn’t want His instructions. Needless to say, I think the longest they stayed off of me is almost three days. I do remember

about six months ago I did take a shower and decided not to put them back on before I went in. I always listen to some of the Bible as soon as I am done showering, so by the time I was walking out the door of the shower, the fringes were back on. I knew within myself that I did not like feeling like I did before when I had kept them off for almost three days, and I just couldn't keep them off. Now I know why. I will keep my door shut. Are you all starting to hear how the Old Testament is showing us how to build our house and how to protect our house? I will also mention one more thing about my fringes. For about two weeks before I received the commandment to make my name known, I started to think about making new fringes, for the ones that I was wearing were getting to be stained and a little frayed. I just figured, oh, I will soon, then when I finally made them and put them on, it wasn't but a day or two when I received the commandment to make my name known and to get the book done. There is absolutely no way anyone will tell me that they do not work.

Now without showing that all the instructions for building the tabernacle, let us just know that we are to build our own personal tabernacle. Let us look at a couple of times where they are instructed to build the tabernacle. "According to all that I shew thee, after the pattern of the tabernacle, and the pattern of all the instruments thereof, **even so shall ye make it**" (Exodus 25:9). "**Moreover thou shalt make the tabernacle with ten curtains of fine twined linen, and blue, and purple, and scarlet: with cherubims of cunning work shalt thou make them**" (Exodus 26:1). Now let us look up the definition of *tabernacle* on e-Sword, the online Bible concordance.

H4908 mishkân mish-kawn' From H7931; a residence (including a shepherd's hut, the lair of animals, figuratively the grave; **also the Temple**); specifically the Tabernacle (properly its wooden walls):—dwelleth, dwelling (place), **habitation**, tabernacle, tent.

We are the temple of God, and God inhabits or dwells within each person. Can you see how we are being instructed on how to

build our house of God within ourselves and not for everyone else? Listen to how we are being told that these tabernacles are for individual people. “And it came to pass, as they departed from him, Peter said unto Jesus, Master, it is good for us to be here: **and let us make three tabernacles; one for thee, and one for Moses, and one for Elias: not knowing what he said**” (Luke 9:33). Notice how it shows us how Peter did not know what he said. We cannot make tabernacles for others. Each individual must make their own. That is that engrafted word in which can save our souls. “Wherefore lay apart all filthiness and superfluity of naughtiness, **and receive with meekness the engrafted word**, which is able to save your souls” (James 1:21).

Just to make a sidenote here: this is because man has allowed his imagination to run wild as to why they cannot hear what our Father has been saying along. Many imaginations have run wild and made our Father out to be a completely different God than He really is. And I am living proof that it truly does take a complete desire to learn of Him and His ways if you want Him to teach you the proper way instead of the ways of man.

In the last book, we showed that most of the laws, rules, judgments, statutes, ordinances, and commandments were for most of them in heaven that have dominion over our bodies. Now we are leaning that we really need to be thinking about how Jesus told us to pray.

After this manner therefore pray ye: Our Father which art in heaven, Hallowed be thy name. **Thy kingdom come, Thy will be done in earth, as it is in heaven.** Give us this day our daily bread. And forgive us our debts, as we forgive our debtors. And lead us not into temptation, but deliver us from evil: For thine is the kingdom, and the power, and the glory, for ever. Amen. (Matthew 6:9–13)

We are to be doing the same thing, but in a spiritual realm. We are actually hearing how to build our lives so that we can be doing

what our Father needs us to be doing. We are being told of how to do it without being told directly how to build our lives.

Remember how we showed, in the last book, that there are fifteen verses that tell us to be sober, sober minded, or to think soberly in the New Testament? Then we showed that there are thirty verses that mention our conscience. This is where we put on the helmet of salvation. God the Father is our salvation. When we let the Bible, Bible verses, and/or just meditate on the word of God all the time—and that means all of the Bible and not just bits and pieces or a couple hours a day—we are putting on the helmet of salvation.

How can anyone build their house on this rock (the Old Testament) if they think this rock is ugly, defiled, unjust, and, most of all, not perfect in all that He is doing, done, and will do? Let us listen to the two greatest commandments again.

Master, which is the great commandment in the law? Jesus said unto him, **Thou shalt love the Lord thy God with all thy heart, and with all thy soul, and with all thy mind. This is the first and great commandment. And the second is like unto it, Thou shalt love thy neighbour as thyself. On these two commandments hang all the law and the prophets.**
(Matthew 22:36–40)

How can anyone love God with all of their heart, soul, and mind if they do not want to get to know everything about Him? As we showed in the last book, one of the main things the Old Testament does is show us how to love our neighbor as ourselves. That is why we are told to hang all of the law and prophets on these two commandments.

I want to take a few minutes as to show how I have built my house on the rock, if you will. We all know that the spirit of the invisible Jesus took over David's body. This did not happen because I didn't believe the all the scriptures, but formed a genuine fear for our Father. While in this form of fear, our Father raised the son of righteousness up inside of me. **“But unto you that fear my name shall**

the Sun of righteousness arise with healing in his wings; and ye shall go forth, and grow up as calves of the stall" (Malachi 4:2). When this happened, he was risen up in my temple of God that is not made with hands. **"Know ye not that ye are the temple of God, and that the Spirit of God dwelleth in you?"** (1 Corinthians 3:16). **"Howbeit the most High dwelleth not in temples made with hands; as saith the prophet"** (Acts 7:48).

This is when he flipped the tables of my heart to show me that I too had been making the house of God a den of thieves. "Let their table become a snare before them: and that which should have been for their welfare, let it become a trap" (Psalm 69:22). "Let not mercy" (Proverbs 3:3). "The sin of Judah is written with a pen of iron, and with the point of a diamond: **it is graven upon the table of their heart, and upon the horns of your altars**" (Jeremiah 17:1). "Forasmuch as ye are manifestly declared to be the epistle of Christ ministered by us, written not with ink, but with the Spirit of the living God; **not in tables of stone, but in fleshy tables of the heart**" (2 Corinthians 3:3). At the same time that this table on my heart was flipped, he showed me that all the money I have is actually our Father's. "They say unto him, Caesar's. Then saith he unto them, Render therefore unto Caesar the things which are Caesar's; and unto God the things that are God's" (Matthew 22:21). Can you hear Jesus say that any of the money you have is yours? No, you cannot because everything on this planet and elsewhere belongs to our Father. So, I try to do with it of what He wants and not man. The tables of my heart have been flipped, so I have no desire to own anything of this world, for it is not going with me when I leave. "But godliness with contentment is great gain. **For we brought nothing into this world, and it is certain we can carry nothing out. And having food and raiment let us be therewith content**" (1 Timothy 6:6-8).

As all this was happening, I was listening to the scriptures from Genesis through Revelation because I knew and know that man must live by every word that proceedeth out of the mouth of God. I was quickly shown not to seek any other book other than the King James Bible, for the truth is not in the books that man has written about

the Bible. Now as I listen to the Bible over and over, I am showed a little more each time. This was building my house to be stronger each time. Now my house is strong enough to stand forever because I believe my Father.

But now listen to what our Father will do because so many people have chosen not to get to know Him and just live off their imagination of Him.

Oh that my head were waters, and mine eyes a fountain of tears, that I might weep day and night for the slain of the daughter of my people! Oh that I had in the wilderness a lodging place of wayfaring men; that I might leave my people, and go from them! for they be all adulterers, an assembly of treacherous men. And they bend their tongues like their bow for lies: but they are not valiant for the truth upon the earth; for they proceed from evil to evil, and they know not me, saith the Lord. Take ye heed every one of his neighbour, and trust ye not in any brother: for every brother will utterly supplant, and every neighbour will walk with slanders. And they will deceive every one his neighbour, and will not speak the truth: they have taught their tongue to speak lies, and weary themselves to commit iniquity. **Thine habitation is in the midst of deceit; through deceit they refuse to know me, saith the Lord.** Therefore thus saith the Lord of hosts, Behold, I will melt them, and try them; for how shall I do for the daughter of my people? Their tongue is as an arrow shot out; it speaketh deceit: one speaketh peaceably to his neighbour with his mouth, but in heart he layeth his wait. Shall I not visit them for these things? saith the Lord: shall not my soul be avenged on such a nation as this? For the mountains will I take up a weeping and wailing, and for the habitations of the wilderness a lamentation,

because they are burned up, so that none can pass through them; neither can men hear the voice of the cattle; both the fowl of the heavens and the beast are fled; they are gone. And I will make Jerusalem heaps, and a den of dragons; and I will make the cities of Judah desolate, without an inhabitant. Who is the wise man, that may understand this? and who is he to whom the mouth of the Lord hath spoken, that he may declare it, for what the land perisheth and is burned up like a wilderness, that none passeth through? **And the Lord saith, Because they have forsaken my law which I set before them, and have not obeyed my voice, neither walked therein; But have walked after the imagination of their own heart, and after Baalim, which their fathers taught them:** Therefore thus saith the Lord of hosts, the God of Israel; Behold, I will feed them, even this people, with wormwood, and give them water of gall to drink. I will scatter them also among the heathen, whom neither they nor their fathers have known: and I will send a sword after them, till I have consumed them. Thus saith the Lord of hosts, Consider ye, and call for the mourning women, that they may come; and send for cunning women, that they may come: And let them make haste, and take up a wailing for us, that our eyes may run down with tears, and our eyelids gush out with waters. For a voice of wailing is heard out of Zion, How are we spoiled! we are greatly confounded, because we have forsaken the land, because our dwellings have cast us out. Yet hear the word of the Lord, O ye women, and let your ear receive the word of his mouth, and teach your daughters wailing, and every one her neighbour lamentation. For death is come up into our windows, and is entered into our palaces, to cut off the children

from without, and the young men from the streets. Speak, Thus saith the Lord, Even the carcasses of men shall fall as dung upon the open field, and as the handful after the harvestman, and none shall gather them. Thus saith the Lord, Let not the wise man glory in his wisdom, neither let the mighty man glory in his might, let not the rich man glory in his riches: **But let him that glorieth glory in this, that he understandeth and knoweth me, that I am the Lord which exercise lovingkindness, judgment, and righteousness, in the earth: for in these things I delight, saith the Lord.** Behold, the days come, saith the Lord, that I will punish all them which are circumcised with the uncircumcised; Egypt, and Judah, and Edom, and the children of Ammon, and Moab, and all that are in the utmost corners, that dwell in the wilderness: for all these nations are uncircumcised, and all the house of Israel are uncircumcised in the heart. (Jeremiah 9:1–26)

Now I am sure that there are many that are wondering how God can do this if He is all about love. Remember we all have transgressed His law. That is why our souls were cast out of heaven, probably billions of years ago, and were given another chance to learn how to love in the same manner that He loves. He is the one that breathed His son into us, so yes, He loved us first. Our Father has had me show in all three books that He is about love, but people refuse to learn about Him. Remember in the last book of how every person is a part of the son of God? When we do something to one of His children, He is the one that justifies your actions by making sure the same thing happens to you. That is a fair love for all and not just a few. Now He is getting ready to bring this world to an end and welcome some back into heaven. His house in which is perfect. It is perfect because it is built on love. Why would He allow anyone to come into His house that does not want anything to do with His perfect love? I mean, that

JESUS IS HERE

is why we got cast out: we thought our own ways were better. Why would He allow someone in that does not have a desire to be obedient to everything He commands? If you do not believe He is perfect, then you will try to run things differently when He already has it functioning perfectly. In reality, it isn't Him doing it, it is our own selves. Because we refuse to listen to Him and trust His perfection.

Now maybe we can all see why Jesus said many will not make it to life. Let us listen to Matthew 7:13–23.

Enter ye in at the strait gate: for wide is the gate, and broad is the way, that leadeth to destruction, and many there be which go in there at: **Because strait is the gate, and narrow is the way, which leadeth unto life, and few there be that find it.** Beware of false prophets, which come to you in sheep's clothing, but inwardly they are ravening wolves. Ye shall know them by their fruits. Do men gather grapes of thorns, or figs of thistles. Even so every good tree bringeth forth good fruit; but a corrupt tree bringeth forth evil fruit. A good tree cannot bring forth evil fruit, neither can a corrupt tree bring forth good fruit. Every tree that bringeth not forth good fruit is hewn down, and cast into the fire. Wherefore by their fruits ye shall know them. **Not every one that saith unto me, Lord, Lord, shall enter into the kingdom of heaven; but he that doeth the will of my Father which is in heaven. Many will say to me in that day, Lord, Lord, have we not prophesied in thy name? and in thy name have cast out devils? and in thy name done many wonderful works? And then will I profess unto them, I never knew you: depart from me, ye that work iniquity.**

This leads us to Isaiah 27:1–13.

In that day the Lord with his sore and great and strong sword shall punish leviathan the piercing serpent, even leviathan that crooked serpent; and he shall slay the dragon that is in the sea. In that day sing ye unto her, A vineyard of red wine. I the Lord do keep it; I will water it every moment: lest any hurt it, I will keep it night and day. Fury is not in me: who would set the briars and thorns against me in battle? I would go through them, I would burn them together. Or let him take hold of my strength, that he may make peace with me; and he shall make peace with me. He shall cause them that come of Jacob to take root: Israel shall blossom and bud, and fill the face of the world with fruit. Hath he smitten him, as he smote those that smote him? or is he slain according to the slaughter of them that are slain by him? In measure, when it shooteth forth, thou wilt debate with it: he stayeth his rough wind in the day of the east wind. By this therefore shall the iniquity of Jacob be purged; and this is all the fruit to take away his sin; when he maketh all the stones of the altar as chalkstones that are beaten in sunder, the groves and images shall not stand up. Yet the defenced city shall be desolate, and the habitation forsaken, and left like a wilderness: there shall the calf feed, and there shall he lie down, and consume the branches thereof. When the boughs thereof are withered, they shall be broken off: the women come, and set them on fire: **for it is a people of no understanding: therefore he that made them will not have mercy on them, and he that formed them will shew them no favour.** And it shall come to pass in that day, that the Lord shall beat off from the channel of the river unto the stream of Egypt, and ye shall be gathered one by one, O ye children of Israel. And it shall come to pass in that day, that the great

JESUS IS HERE

trumpet shall be blown, and they shall come which were ready to perish in the land of Assyria, and the outcasts in the land of Egypt, and shall worship the Lord in the holy mount at Jerusalem.

This leads us to where we need to say that it is nobody's fault that you have not been able to understand this but your own. Don't be like Adam and Eve in the very beginning and try to say that someone taught you. You have heard of the Bible, so what you did with it is your own fault. Even if you want to say that your pastor, preacher, priest, or any other teacher has taught you differently, it is still your own fault that you didn't build your house as instructed in our Bibles. **"Having the understanding darkened, being alienated from the life of God through the ignorance that is in them, because of the blindness of their heart:** Who being past feeling have given themselves over unto lasciviousness, to work all uncleanness with greediness" (Ephesians 4:18–19).

Yet now hear, O Jacob my servant; and Israel, whom I have chosen: Thus saith the Lord that made thee, and formed thee from the womb, which will help thee; Fear not, O Jacob, my servant; and thou, Jesurun, whom I have chosen. For I will pour water upon him that is thirsty, and floods upon the dry ground: I will pour my spirit upon thy seed, and my blessing upon thine offspring: And they shall spring up as among the grass, as willows by the water courses. One shall say, I am the Lord's; and another shall call himself by the name of Jacob; and another shall subscribe with his hand unto the Lord, and surname himself by the name of Israel. Thus saith the Lord the King of Israel, and his redeemer the Lord of hosts; I am the first, and I am the last; and beside me there is no God. And who, as I, shall call, and shall declare it, and set it in order for me, since I appointed the ancient people?

and the things that are coming, and shall come, let them shew unto them. Fear ye not, neither be afraid: have not I told thee from that time, and have declared it? ye are even my witnesses. Is there a God beside me? yea, there is no God; I know not any. They that make a graven image are all of them vanity; and their delectable things shall not profit; and they are their own witnesses; they see not, nor know; that they may be ashamed. Who hath formed a god, or molten a graven image that is profitable for nothing? Behold, all his fellows shall be ashamed: and the workmen, they are of men: let them all be gathered together, let them stand up; yet they shall fear, and they shall be ashamed together. The smith with the tongs both worketh in the coals, and fashioneth it with hammers, and worketh it with the strength of his arms: yea, he is hungry, and his strength faileth: he drinketh no water, and is faint. The carpenter stretcheth out his rule; he marketh it out with a line; he fitteth it with planes, and he marketh it out with the compass, and maketh it after the figure of a man, according to the beauty of a man; that it may remain in the house. He heweth him down cedars, and taketh the cypress and the oak, which he strengtheneth for himself among the trees of the forest: he planteth an ash, and the rain doth nourish it. Then shall it be for a man to burn: for he will take thereof, and warm himself; yea, he kindleth it, and baketh bread; yea, he maketh a god, and worshippeth it; he maketh it a graven image, and falleth down thereto. He burneth part thereof in the fire; with part thereof he eateth flesh; he roasteth roast, and is satisfied: yea, he warmeth himself, and saith, Aha, I am warm, I have seen the fire: And the residue thereof he maketh a god, even his graven image: he falleth down unto it, and worshippeth it,

JESUS IS HERE

and prayeth unto it, and saith, Deliver me; for thou art my god. **They have not known nor understood: for he hath shut their eyes, that they cannot see; and their hearts, that they cannot understand. And none considereth in his heart, neither is there knowledge nor understanding to say, I have burned part of it in the fire; yea, also I have baked bread upon the coals thereof; I have roasted flesh, and eaten it: and shall I make the residue thereof an abomination? shall I fall down to the stock of a tree? He feedeth on ashes: a deceived heart hath turned him aside, that he cannot deliver his soul, nor say, Is there not a lie in my right hand?** (Isaiah 44:1–20)

Our Father does not respect or favor any person, as you just read a bit ago. It does not matter who you are or who you know; if you do not understand Him and what He is doing, He is not allowing you into His perfect house. I know that there are probably some that are thinking that this is not fair, for our Father could have shown us in an easier way. Remember we were told that He hid this knowledge. He hid it, for there is no thief getting into His house. Our hearts must be right with Him and not man. To this I must say I don't think it has been hidden. It has been in our Bible all along. Man just doesn't take the time to listen to Him. "For there is nothing covered, that shall not be revealed; neither hid, that shall not be known" (Luke 12:2). All of my knowledge comes from the King James Bible and the King James Bible only. And our Father teaches me more each time I listen to the entire Bible. Precept upon precept, line upon line, little bit here and little bit there.

So, let us listen to where our Father explains this very

The word of the Lord came unto me again, saying, What mean ye, that ye use this proverb concerning the land of Israel, saying, The fathers have eaten sour grapes, and the children's teeth are set on edge? As I

live, saith the Lord God, ye shall not have occasion any more to use this proverb in Israel. Behold, all souls are mine; as the soul of the father, so also the soul of the son is mine: the soul that sinneth, it shall die. But if a man be just, and do that which is lawful and right, And hath not eaten upon the mountains, neither hath lifted up his eyes to the idols of the house of Israel, neither hath defiled his neighbour's wife, neither hath come near to a menstruous woman, And hath not oppressed any, but hath restored to the debtor his pledge, hath spoiled none by violence, hath given his bread to the hungry, and hath covered the naked with a garment; He that hath not given forth upon usury, neither hath taken any increase, that hath withdrawn his hand from iniquity, hath executed true judgment between man and man, Hath walked in my statutes, and hath kept my judgments, to deal truly; he is just, he shall surely live, saith the Lord God. If he beget a son that is a robber, a shedder of blood, and that doeth the like to any one of these things, And that doeth not any of those duties, but even hath eaten upon the mountains, and defiled his neighbour's wife, Hath oppressed the poor and needy, hath spoiled by violence, hath not restored the pledge, and hath lifted up his eyes to the idols, hath committed abomination, Hath given forth upon usury, and hath taken increase: shall he then live? he shall not live: he hath done all these abominations; he shall surely die; his blood shall be upon him. Now, lo, if he beget a son, that seeth all his father's sins which he hath done, and considereth, and doeth not such like, That hath not eaten upon the mountains, neither hath lifted up his eyes to the idols of the house of Israel, hath not defiled his neighbour's wife, Neither hath oppressed any, hath not withholden the pledge, neither hath

JESUS IS HERE

spoiled by violence, but hath given his bread to the hungry, and hath covered the naked with a garment, That hath taken off his hand from the poor, that hath not received usury nor increase, hath executed my judgments, hath walked in my statutes; he shall not die for the iniquity of his father, he shall surely live. As for his father, because he cruelly oppressed, spoiled his brother by violence, and did that which is not good among his people, lo, even he shall die in his iniquity. Yet say ye, Why? doth not the son bear the iniquity of the father? When the son hath done that which is lawful and right, and hath kept all my statutes, and hath done them, he shall surely live. The soul that sinneth, it shall die. The son shall not bear the iniquity of the father, neither shall the father bear the iniquity of the son: the righteousness of the righteous shall be upon him, and the wickedness of the wicked shall be upon him. But if the wicked will turn from all his sins that he hath committed, and keep all my statutes, and do that which is lawful and right, he shall surely live, he shall not die. All his transgressions that he hath committed, they shall not be mentioned unto him: in his righteousness that he hath done he shall live. Have I any pleasure at all that the wicked should die? saith the Lord God: and not that he should return from his ways, and live? But when the righteous turneth away from his righteousness, and committeth iniquity, and doeth according to all the abominations that the wicked man doeth, shall he live? All his righteousness that he hath done shall not be mentioned: in his trespass that he hath trespassed, and in his sin that he hath sinned, in them shall he die. Yet ye say, The way of the Lord is not equal. Hear now, O house of Israel; Is not my way equal? are not your ways unequal? When a righteous man

turneth away from his righteousness, and committeth iniquity, and dieth in them; for his iniquity that he hath done shall he die. Again, when the wicked man turneth away from his wickedness that he hath committed, and doeth that which is lawful and right, he shall save his soul alive. Because he considereth, and turneth away from all his transgressions that he hath committed, he shall surely live, he shall not die. Yet saith the house of Israel, The way of the Lord is not equal. O house of Israel, are not my ways equal? are not your ways unequal? Therefore I will judge you, O house of Israel, every one according to his ways, saith the Lord God. Repent, and turn yourselves from all your transgressions; so iniquity shall not be your ruin. Cast away from you all your transgressions, whereby ye have transgressed; and make you a new heart and a new spirit: for why will ye die, O house of Israel? For I have no pleasure in the death of him that dieth, saith the Lord God: wherefore turn yourselves, and live ye. (Ezekiel 18:1–32)

Now at the same time that we can hear that each person must answer for their own sins and no one else, we can hear that anyone that is alive can still repent and change his or her ways and turn back to our Father and seek His perfection.

They say, If a man put away his wife, and she go from him, and become another man's, shall he return unto her again? shall not that land be greatly polluted? but thou hast played the harlot with many lovers; yet return again to me, saith the Lord. 2 Lift up thine eyes unto the high places, and see where thou hast not been lien with. In the ways hast thou sat for them, as the Arabian in the wilderness; and thou hast polluted the land with thy whoredoms and with

thy wickedness. 3 Therefore the showers have been withholden, and there hath been no latter rain; and thou hadst a whore's forehead, thou refusedst to be ashamed. 4 Wilt thou not from this time cry unto me, My father, thou art the guide of my youth? 5 Will he reserve his anger for ever? will he keep it to the end? Behold, thou hast spoken and done evil things as thou couldest. 6 The Lord said also unto me in the days of Josiah the king, Hast thou seen that which backsliding Israel hath done? she is gone up upon every high mountain and under every green tree, and there hath played the harlot. 7 And I said after she had done all these things, Turn thou unto me. But she returned not. And her treacherous sister Judah saw it. 8 **And I saw, when for all the causes whereby backsliding Israel committed adultery I had put her away, and given her a bill of divorce;** yet her treacherous sister Judah feared not, but went and played the harlot also. 9 And it came to pass through the lightness of her whoredom, that she defiled the land, and committed adultery with stones and with stocks. 10 And yet for all this her treacherous sister Judah hath not turned unto me with her whole heart, but feignedly, saith the Lord. 11 And the Lord said unto me, The backsliding Israel hath justified herself more than treacherous Judah. 12 Go and proclaim these words toward the north, **and say, Return, thou backsliding Israel, saith the Lord; and I will not cause mine anger to fall upon you: for I am merciful, saith the Lord, and I will not keep anger for ever.** 13 **Only acknowledge thine iniquity, that thou hast transgressed against the Lord thy God, and hast scattered thy ways to the strangers under every green tree, and ye have not obeyed my voice, saith the Lord.** 14 Turn, O backsliding children,

saith the Lord; for I am married unto you: and I will take you one of a city, and two of a family, and I will bring you to Zion. (Jeremiah 3:1–14)

We showed in the first book that the bill of divorcement that our Father gave us is not final. Without having to go over all of it again, we can see in verse 8 that He gave us a bill of divorcement and, then in verse 14, that the divorce is not final. But at the same time listen to what needs to be done to keep the marriage alive. And neither of you will wear rings. Our Father never said this was going to be easy, nor did He say that He will make it simple. But He did tell us that He comes to us in a cloud. “And the Lord said unto Moses, **Lo, I come unto thee in a thick cloud, that the people may hear when I speak with thee, and believe thee for ever**” (Exodus 19:9). And Moses told the words of the people unto the Lord. How hard is it to see when the fog is thick? Now think of the Bible as being the cloud in which our Father comes to us. This is why we are to diligently seek Him. “But without faith it is impossible to please him: for he that cometh to God must believe that he is, **and that he is a rewarder of them that diligently seek him**” (Hebrews 11:6). My King James Bible has just over two thousand pages in it. That is a pretty thick cloud, if you will. And a pretty dark cloud if you allow your imagination to run wild. Continue to seek Him through the entire cloud, and you will see that this cloud will change your life. So now that we have done this chapter, we ask you, where are you going to build your house?

CONCLUSION



First thing that we want to bring up is I stated that this will be the final book in which I will write of this trilogy of books. I cannot say that, for my knowledge will continue to grow as long as I am in the flesh. And I have to say here something that I tell people all the time. It is not up to me; it is up to our Father, for He is my boss. And when I say He is my boss, I mean He is my boss in everything that I do. As you can see, we are writing the fourth book. He is the reason I awake; He is the reason I am alive; He is my dispatcher at my job; I drive the truck He tells me to drive; He is my doctor or medical advisor. He is my rock; He is my fortress, and most of all, He is my salvation.

I want to show one chapter of many in our Bible that really makes me feel this way.

O lord, thou hast searched me, and known me. Thou knowest my downsitting and mine uprising, thou understandest my thought afar off. Thou compassest my path and my lying down, and art acquainted with all my ways. For there is not a word in my tongue, but, lo, O Lord, thou knowest it altogether. Thou hast beset me behind and before, and laid thine hand upon me. Such knowledge is too wonderful for me; it is high, I cannot attain unto it. Whither shall I go from thy spirit? or whither shall I flee from thy presence? If I ascend up into heaven, thou art there: if I make my bed in hell, behold, thou art there. If I take the wings of the morning, and dwell in the uttermost parts of the sea; Even there shall thy hand lead me, and thy right hand shall hold me. If I say, Surely the darkness shall cover me; even the night shall be light about me. Yea, the darkness hideth not from thee; but the

night shineth as the day: the darkness and the light are both alike to thee. For thou hast possessed my reins: thou hast covered me in my mother's womb. I will praise thee; for I am fearfully and wonderfully made: marvellous are thy works; and that my soul knoweth right well. My substance was not hid from thee, when I was made in secret, and curiously wrought in the lowest parts of the earth. Thine eyes did see my substance, yet being unperfect; and in thy book all my members were written, which in continuance were fashioned, when as yet there was none of them. How precious also are thy thoughts unto me, O God! how great is the sum of them! If I should count them, they are more in number than the sand: when I awake, I am still with thee. Surely thou wilt slay the wicked, O God: depart from me therefore, ye bloody men. For they speak against thee wickedly, and thine enemies take thy name in vain. Do not I hate them, O Lord, that hate thee? and am not I grieved with those that rise up against thee? I hate them with perfect hatred: I count them mine enemies. Search me, O God, and know my heart: try me, and know my thoughts: And see if there be any wicked way in me, and lead me in the way everlasting. (Psalm 139:1–24)

Now let us listen to who our enemies are by our Father's definition. **“Thine enemies roar in the midst of thy congregations; they set up their ensigns for signs”** (Psalm 74:4). They do not take the time to try and understand who our Father is and what He is all about. They would rather look for things that indicate the end is near, which keeps people away from the truth. They are not learning how to love others, and they are not teaching others how we should love.

As we have went through this book, we have learned some very important things about our Bibles and how it is about our lives today. For anyone that still has any doubt as to whether or not we are in the end-time, let us listen to Ecclesiastes 3:1–11.

To every thing there is a season, and a time to every purpose under the heaven: A time to be born, and a time to die; a time to plant, and a time to pluck up that which is planted; A time to kill, and a time to

JESUS IS HERE

heal; a time to break down, and a time to build up; A time to weep, and a time to laugh; a time to mourn, and a time to dance; A time to cast away stones, and a time to gather stones together; a time to embrace, and a time to refrain from embracing; A time to get, and a time to lose; a time to keep, and a time to cast away; A time to rend, and a time to sew; a time to keep silence, and a time to speak; A time to love, and a time to hate; a time of war, and a time of peace. What profit hath he that worketh in that wherein he laboureth? I have seen the travail, which God hath given to the sons of men to be exercised in it. **He hath made every thing beautiful in his time: also he hath set the world in their heart, so that no man can find out the work that God maketh from the beginning to the end.**

Through these three books that our Father has had me write, we can all agree that the Bible is making a lot more sense. Our Father has made sure that no man would be able to understand how He is doing this until the time of the end, as we just read. Now that we can know that the Old Testament is about how we are to build our own personal house of God, we can know that we are getting very close to the end.

Remember there is nothing new under the sun, as shown in Ecclesiastes 1 earlier. Can you now see how Moses parted the Red Sea? We are in that sea now, and this sea is full of man's blood. Now we truly know what it means when we are told it will be just like the days of Noah.

And as it was in the days of Noe, so shall it be also in the days of the Son of man. They did eat, they drank, they married wives, they were given in marriage, until the day that Noah entered into the ark, and the flood came, and destroyed them all. Likewise also as it was in the days of Lot; they did eat, they drank,

**they bought, they sold, they planted, they builded;
But the same day that Lot went out of Sodom it
rained fire and brimstone from heaven, and
destroyed them all. Even thus shall it be in the day
when the Son of man is revealed.** (Luke 17:26–30)

Makes you think about the Bible completely different, doesn't it? This world is covered in water just as it was in the days of Noah. But it is a spiritual water and not physical.

Knowing that, there are a couple more things that we need to consider. There are a lot of people out here that keep wondering why things just keep happening to them the way they do. This is because most do not realize that our Father has always given us an opportunity to learn why these things happen. Yes, we just heard that He put it in man's heart not to know until the time of the end, but why did He do this? It is because this world goes chasing after their imagination of God, instead of just listening to Him.

Now we need to listen to Psalm 83:1–18.

Keep not thou silence, O God: hold not thy peace, and be not still, O God. For, lo, thine enemies make a tumult: and they that hate thee have lifted up the head. They have taken crafty counsel against thy people, and consulted against thy hidden ones. They have said, Come, and let us cut them off from being a nation; that the name of Israel may be no more in remembrance. For they have consulted together with one consent: they are confederate against thee: The tabernacles of Edom, and the Ishmaelites; of Moab, and the Hagarenes; Gebal, and Ammon, and Amalek; the Philistines with the inhabitants of Tyre; Assur also is joined with them: they have holpen the children of Lot. Selah. Do unto them as unto the Midianites; as to Sisera, as to Jabin, at the brook of Kison: Which perished at Endor: they became as

JESUS IS HERE

ding for the earth. Make their nobles like Oreb, and like Zeeb: yea, all their princes as Zebah, and as Zalmunna: Who said, Let us take to ourselves the houses of God in possession. O my God, make them like a wheel; as the stub- ble before the wind. As the fire burneth a wood, and as the flame setteth the mountains on fire; So persecute them with thy tempest, and make them afraid with thy storm. Fill their faces with shame; that they may seek thy name, O Lord. Let them be confounded and troubled for ever; yea, let them be put to shame, and perish: **That men may know that thou, whose name alone is Jehovah, art the most high over all the earth.**

In the last book, we showed that the name *Jehovah* means “to self-exist.” Yes, God our Father is sitting right inside of you. I am going to tell you a little bit of a story so you all can hear how our Father told me that He wants this in the book. We mentioned earlier in the book that I know a woman that has marital problems going on in her life and that her eighteen-year-old daughter was moving out. We showed how that was putting salt on an open wound. Remember I am married to our Father, and there is absolutely no chance of me allowing any woman into my house of God. Me being the house of God as we all have learned, for that would take my mind off our Father, and that is something I will not allow. But anyway, I was talking with her on the phone a few days ago, and she said she knows what it feels like to love somebody and still feel alone. As soon as we got off the phone, the name *Jehovah* came to mind, and I have known for some while now that He is self-existing. I knew right away that this is exactly how our Father feels. He is inside each and every one of us. He is sitting there wanting to share His love with us, but this world doesn’t want Him. As we have shown, He will not force Himself on anyone; it is your choice.

I will guarantee you this though: once you get a taste of how deep and strong His love is for you, you will never look back. Okay, I cannot say this for all, for the scriptures do warn of this.

Therefore leaving the principles of the doctrine of Christ, let us go on unto perfection; not laying again the foundation of repentance from dead works, and of faith toward God, Of the doctrine of baptisms, and of laying on of hands, and of resurrection of the dead, and of eternal judgment. And this will we do, if God permit. **For it is impossible for those who were once enlightened, and have tasted of the heavenly gift, and were made partakers of the Holy Ghost, And have tasted the good word of God, and the powers of the world to come, If they shall fall away, to renew them again unto repentance; seeing they crucify to themselves the Son of God afresh, and put him to an open shame. For the earth which drinketh in the rain that cometh oft upon it, and bringeth forth herbs meet for them by whom it is dressed, receiveth blessing from God:** But that which beareth thorns and briers is rejected, and is nigh unto cursing; whose end is to be burned. But, beloved, we are persuaded better things of you, and things that accompany salvation, though we thus speak. (Hebrews 6:1–9)

His love is so profound that I can't even imagine a woman being able to make me feel as He does. I truly feel that I am a spoiled little brat. I own nothing, and I live paycheck to paycheck—okay, I do have one week's worth of clothes, four or five short-sleeve shirts, and four or five long-sleeve shirts, plus undershirts, a cell phone, a microwave, laptop for writing, CB for safety reasons, a tablet, and a large duffel bag for traveling out of the country if needed. Yet I feel I have more than I need. Remember how Jesus said unless you become as a little child, you will not enter the kingdom of God. Just as our Father

JESUS IS HERE

had me put in the first book, I feel my Father can do no wrong, and there is (I will say it) no way that your dad is better than my dad. I am laughing when I say that, but that is exactly how I feel. I am His little boy, and He makes sure I have everything my heart desires. I have been married and have children. None of them has ever come close to making me feel as loved as I do by our Father.

Now we can understand why Jesus said there is no marriage in the resurrection.

Saying, Master, Moses said, If a man die, having no children, his brother shall marry his wife, and raise up seed unto his brother. Now there were with us seven brethren: and the first, when he had married a wife, deceased, and, having no issue, left his wife unto his brother: Likewise the second also, and the third, unto the seventh. And last of all the woman died also. Therefore in the resurrection whose wife shall she be of the seven? for they all had her. Jesus answered and said unto them, **Ye do err, not knowing the scriptures, nor the power of God. For in the resurrection they neither marry, nor are given in marriage, but are as the angels of God in heaven. But as touching the resurrection of the dead, have ye not read that which was spoken unto you by God, saying, I am the God of Abraham, and the God of Isaac, and the God of Jacob? God is not the God of the dead, but of the living.** (Matthew 22:24–32)

And to make another note here, the clothes that I wear are from Walmart. I will not spend extra money on clothes that only cover my body. I will not dress in a fashion that might intimidate some or make others feel as if I deserve better. I do not deserve any better than anyone else. I will say though: I do buy my cowboy boots at a boot store, for Walmart does not carry boots. And because I wear them most of the time, I need a boot that will last longer. And I will say that

if we ever meet, you will know what I am about, for I will not allow a conversation to go on for more than five minutes without bringing our Father into the conversation, for He is my true love. You will know what I am about by the love you will hear come from my mouth and not the clothes that I wear. Okay, I have now bought three long-sleeve shirts from a boot store. I did this for the quality of the shirts. I have bought some cheap Nikes for excursive.

Now this is something that I am not sure if I should be putting in here or not, but I am going to throw this in here, for this is something that I heard in the Bible the very first time I read it. I will warn you though, this could freak you out a little. One thing in the book of Revelation that I am sure hasn't happened yet, and this is the supper of the great God. **“And I saw an angel standing in the sun; and he cried with a loud voice, saying to all the fowls that fly in the midst of heaven, Come and gather yourselves together unto the supper of the great God; That ye may eat the flesh of kings, and the flesh of captains, and the flesh of mighty men, and the flesh of horses, and of them that sit on them, and the flesh of all men, both free and bond, both small and great”** (Revelation 19:17–18). The very first time I read the Bible back in 2011, I thought—and still think—that this is our dead bodies. This is when our Father calls all the fowls of the heavens to come and eat. Yes, I believe in aliens, as we call them, but they too are children of our Father, for our Father created them also. Our souls will be gone at this time, and they will only be eating our dead bodies. Remember, our flesh is dung.

Speak, Thus saith the Lord, **Even the carcasses of men shall fall as dung upon the open field, and as the handful after the harvestman, and none shall gather them.** Thus saith the Lord, Let not the wise man glory in his wisdom, neither let the mighty man glory in his might, let not the rich man glory in his riches: But let him that glorieth glory in this, that he understandeth and knoweth me, that I am the Lord which exercise lovingkindness, judgment,

and righteousness, in the earth: for in these things I delight, saith the Lord. Behold, the days come, saith the Lord, that I will punish all them which are circumcised with the uncircumcised; Egypt, and Judah, and Edom, and the children of Ammon, and Moab, and all that are in the utmost corners, that dwell in the wilderness: for all these nations are uncircumcised, and all the house of Israel are uncircumcised in the heart. (Jeremiah 9:22–26)

And the slain of the Lord shall be at that day from one end of the earth even unto the other end of the earth: they shall not be lamented, neither gathered, nor buried; they shall be dung upon the ground.
(Jeremiah 25:33)

This is where we really need to be thinking about what we said in the last book. We showed that the son of God is made up with about 8 billion functioning body parts. Everybody on this planet. We will be in travail when we give birth to the son of God. This is when everybody will be changed in the blink of an eye. “Behold, I shew you a mystery; We shall not all sleep, but we shall all be changed, **In a moment, in the twinkling of an eye, at the last trump: for the trumpet shall sound, and the dead shall be raised incorruptible, and we shall be changed**” (1 Corinthians 15:51–52). But before this happens, we must go through labor pains. This is when we really need to realize that our Father’s hand is stretched out still.

Nevertheless the dimness shall not be such as was in her vexation, when at the first he lightly afflicted the land of Zebulun and the land of Naphtali, and afterward did more grievously afflict her by the way of the sea, beyond Jordan, in Galilee of the nations. The people that walked in darkness have seen a great light: they that dwell in the land of the shadow of death, upon them hath the light shined. Thou hast multiplied the nation, and not increased the joy: they joy before thee according to the joy in harvest, and as men rejoice when they divide

the spoil. For thou hast broken the yoke of his burden, and the staff of his shoulder, the rod of his oppressor, as in the day of Midian. For every battle of the warrior is with confused noise, and garments rolled in blood; but this shall be with burning and fuel of fire. For unto us a child is born, unto us a son is given: and the government shall be upon his shoulder: and his name shall be called Wonderful, Counsellor, The mighty God, The everlasting Father, The Prince of Peace. Of the increase of his government and peace there shall be no end, upon the throne of David, and upon his kingdom, to order it, and to establish it with judgment and with justice from henceforth even for ever. The zeal of the Lord of hosts will perform this. The Lord sent a word into Jacob, and it hath lighted upon Israel. And all the people shall know, even Ephraim and the inhabitant of Samaria, that say in the pride and stoutness of heart, The bricks are fallen down, but we will build with hewn stones: the sycamores are cut down, but we will change them into cedars. Therefore the Lord shall set up the adversaries of Rezin against him, and join his enemies together; **The Syrians before, and the Philistines behind; and they shall devour Israel with open mouth. For all this his anger is not turned away, but his hand is stretched out still.** For the people turneth not unto him that smiteth them, neither do they seek the Lord of hosts. Therefore the Lord will cut off from Israel head and tail, branch and rush, in one day. The ancient and honourable, he is the head; and the prophet that teacheth lies, he is the tail. For the leaders of this people cause them to err; and they that are led of them are destroyed. **Therefore the Lord shall have no joy in their young men, neither shall have mercy on their fatherless and widows: for every one is an hypocrite and an evildoer, and every mouth speaketh folly. For all this his anger is not turned away, but his hand is stretched out still.** For wickedness burneth as the fire: it shall devour the briers and thorns, and shall kindle in the thickets of the forest, and they shall mount up like the lifting up of smoke. Through the wrath of the Lord of hosts is the land darkened, and the people shall be as the fuel of the fire: no man shall spare his brother. And he shall snatch on the right hand, and be hungry; and he shall eat on the left hand, and they shall not be satisfied: they shall

eat every man the flesh of his own arm: **Manasseh, Ephraim; and Ephraim, Manasseh: and they together shall be against Judah. For all this his anger is not turned away, but his hand is stretched out still.** (Isaiah 9:1–21)

He has not ended this world, so that can only mean that there is room for repentance. I have told you all that I read the Bible twice and have listened to it more than twenty times. I will continue to listen to the Bible until the day I die. The reason I share this is because I really feel that the Bible truly came to life once I started to listen to the word of God. From Genesis 1 through all the books of Revelation. I mean I believed the Bible the first time I read it, as described in the chapter “Believing,” but once I started listening, it became like a drug, and I was and am addicted. So yes, if you have the will to learn, our Father has the power to show you.

This is where I want to bring up something since it has been on my mind since our president was elected. We all know that our Father is all-knowing. We just read about how at the last trump, the trumpet will sound. We will not post the entire verse for we just went over it. I believe that we have the last president in office now. We will not hear the trumpet sound for that will sound for those above us.

Now, this does not mean that this will happen this year, for it does say at the last trump. This could mean in his last term, for these flames and labor pains could go on for a couple of years. I just find it to be coincidental that our Father has been teaching me this for a few years. It all started when this president took office. And as I showed you all throughout the book, there is no such thing a coincidence.

Now I told you all in the chapter of “Believing” of how I heard what the Spirit said. I was commanded to get the book done and make my name known. I am going to give a little detail on that, for there is something that I did not tell you. There was more that the Spirit said, but I didn’t want to mention what else the Spirit said till now. Now with all my understanding of the scriptures, I know what it meant when I heard a servant directly say to me, “Hear what the spirit says.” We all know that God is spirit, right? “But the hour cometh, and now is, when the true worshippers shall worship the Father in spirit and

in truth: for the Father seeketh such to worship him. **God is a Spirit:** and they that worship him must worship him in spirit and in truth” (John 4:23–24). I was told to get the book done on the seventeenth of June. Just under three weeks ago. Yes, I had started the book, but only had about thirty thousand words or so before then. I am writing the conclusion now with over one hundred thousand words, and I feel as if maybe I didn’t get everything in that is needed to be said. That is why I say there might be another. But at the same time that I heard the Spirit say, “Get the book done,” I was also told something else. I was told that if I didn’t get the book done, I would have to do it all over and start from the beginning. As we showed in the last book and in the chapter “Reincarnation” in this book, that means another seventy to eighty thousand years without being with my Father.

But with Him telling me this, it makes me think of a couple of areas of the Bible in which we need to look at. Because Jehovah is self-existing, and now that the world is learning where Satan is, we are getting ready to meet our Father.

Hear this word, ye kine of Bashan, that are in the mountain of Samaria, which oppress the poor, which crush the needy, which say to their masters, Bring, and let us drink. The Lord God hath sworn by his holiness, that, lo, the days shall come upon you, that he will take you away with hooks, and your posterity with fishhooks. And ye shall go out at the breaches, every cow at that which is before her; and ye shall cast them into the palace, saith the Lord. Come to Bethel, and transgress; at Gilgal multiply transgression; and bring your sacrifices every morning, and your tithes after three years: And offer a sacrifice of thanksgiving with leaven, and proclaim and publish the free offerings: for this liketh you, O ye children of Israel, saith the Lord God. And I also have given you cleanness of teeth in all your cities, and want of bread in all your places: yet have ye not returned unto me, saith the

JESUS IS HERE

Lord. And also I have withholden the rain from you, when there were yet three months to the harvest: and I caused it to rain upon one city, and caused it not to rain upon another city: one piece was rained upon, and the piece whereupon it rained not withered. So two or three cities wandered unto one city, to drink water; but they were not satisfied: yet have ye not returned unto me, saith the Lord. I have smitten you with blasting and mildew: when your gardens and your vineyards and your fig trees and your olive trees increased, the palmerworm devoured them: yet have ye not returned unto me, saith the Lord. I have sent among you the pestilence after the manner of Egypt: your young men have I slain with the sword, and have taken away your horses; and I have made the stink of your camps to come up unto your nostrils: yet have ye not returned unto me, saith the Lord. I have overthrown some of you, as God overthrew Sodom and Gomorrah, and ye were as a firebrand plucked out of the burning: yet have ye not returned unto me, saith the Lord. **Therefore thus will I do unto thee, O Israel: and because I will do this unto thee, pre- pare to meet thy God, O Israel.** For, lo, he that formeth the mountains, and createth the wind, and declareth unto man what is his thought, that maketh the morning darkness, and treadeth upon the high places of the earth, The Lord, The God of hosts, is his name. (Amos 4:1–13)

Now we are going to look at one more spot. This is an area that caught my attention the very first time that I listened to the Bible. I am going to place the entire chapter so that maybe you can hear how this is all connected, even more than you have already.

The word of the Lord also came unto me, saying, **2 Son of man, thou dwellest in the midst of a rebellious house, which have eyes to see, and see not; they have ears to hear, and hear not: for they are a rebellious house.** 3 Therefore, thou son of man, prepare thee stuff for removing, and remove by day in their sight; and thou shalt remove from thy place to another place in their sight: it may be they will consider, though they be a rebellious house. 4 Then shalt thou bring forth thy stuff by day in their sight, as stuff for removing: and thou shalt go forth at even in their sight, as they that go forth into captivity. 5 Dig thou through the wall in their sight, and carry out thereby. 6 In their sight shalt thou bear it upon thy shoulders, and carry it forth in the twilight: thou shalt cover thy face, that thou see not the ground: for I have set thee for a sign unto the house of Israel. 7 And I did so as I was commanded: I brought forth my stuff by day, as stuff for captivity, and in the even I digged through the wall with mine hand; I brought it forth in the twilight, and I bare it upon my shoulder in their sight. 8 And in the morning came the word of the Lord unto me, saying, 9 Son of man, hath not the house of Israel, the rebellious house, said unto thee, What doest thou? 10 Say thou unto them, Thus saith the Lord God; This burden concerneth the prince in Jerusalem, and all the house of Israel that are among them. 11 Say, I am your sign: like as I have done, so shall it be done unto them: they shall remove and go into captivity. 12 And the prince that is among them shall bear upon his shoulder in the twilight, and shall go forth: they shall dig through the wall to carry out thereby: he shall cover his face, that he see not the ground with his eyes. 13 My net also will I spread upon him, and he shall be taken in my snare: and I will

bring him to Babylon to the land of the Chaldeans; yet shall he not see it, though he shall die there. 14 And I will scatter toward every wind all that are about him to help him, and all his bands; and I will draw out the sword after them. 15 And they shall know that I am the Lord, when I shall scatter them among the nations, and disperse them in the countries. 16 But I will leave a few men of them from the sword, from the famine, and from the pestilence; that they may declare all their abominations among the heathen whither they come; and they shall know that I am the Lord. 17 Moreover the word of the Lord came to me, saying, 18 Son of man, eat thy bread with quaking, and drink thy water with trembling and with carefulness; 19 And say unto the people of the land, Thus saith the Lord God of the inhabitants of Jerusalem, and of the land of Israel; They shall eat their bread with carefulness, and drink their water with astonishment, that her land may be desolate from all that is therein, because of the violence of all them that dwell therein. 20 And the cities that are inhabited shall be laid waste, and the land shall be desolate; and ye shall know that I am the Lord. 21 And the word of the Lord came unto me, saying, 22 **Son of man, what is that proverb that ye have in the land of Israel, saying, The days are prolonged, and every vision faileth? 23 Tell them therefore, Thus saith the Lord God; I will make this proverb to cease, and they shall no more use it as a proverb in Israel; but say unto them, The days are at hand, and the effect of every vision. 24 For there shall be no more any vain vision nor flattering divination within the house of Israel. 25 For I am the Lord: I will speak, and the word that I shall speak shall come to pass; it shall be no more prolonged: for in your days, O rebellious house, will**

I say the word, and will perform it, saith the Lord God. 26 Again the word of the Lord came to me, saying. 27 Son of man, behold, they of the house of Israel say, The vision that he seeth is for many days to come, and he prophesieth of the times that are far off. 28 Therefore say unto them, Thus saith the Lord God; There shall none of my words be prolonged any more, but the word which I have spoken shall be done, saith the Lord God. (Ezekiel 12:1–28)

Listen to verse 2 for a second. I was living in the Lake of the Ozarks, Missouri, area when I first heard this. That is only four hundred miles from the dead center of the United States. I remember this, for my brother offered to take me there, for he could not stand how much I listened to the Bible and talked about nothing but God, our Father. When he offered to do this, I was at my mom's for the three weeks right after the baptism. And from there I was less than four hundred miles away from the center of the United States.

Believe the Bible is about us today and notice how the Bible will come to life in your very own life. And then try to remember the only thing our Father commanded us to do is to love one another. In the beginning, He said be fruitful, multiply, and replenish the earth. This cannot be done without love. *Amen!*

I want to make another note here. I am not here to do the miracles as Jesus did the first time in which he was here. I want to show where I feel the Bible is telling us this.

But I know him: for I am from him, and he hath sent me. Then they sought to take him: but no man laid hands on him, because his hour was not yet come. And many of the people believed on him, and said, **When Christ cometh, will he do more miracles than these which this man hath done?** The Pharisees heard that the people murmured such things concerning him; and the Pharisees and the chief priests sent officers to

JESUS IS HERE

take him. Then said Jesus unto them, Yet a little while am I with you, and then I go unto him that sent me.
(John 7:29–33)

The miracles in which will be done are when my fellow servants turn back to our Father so that our Father can heal them. He will take the covers of many ears and remove blindfolds so that many can hear and see the same things in which I can. And that will be an innumerable amount of people.

As a final note, I want to mention the names of the books the Father has had me write in case you decide you want to get the others, for I could not put all the previous books into one, for that would make this book to be a little over a thousand pages long. There is some very strong lessons in the other books, but I just couldn't add them here, for the publisher is already thinking this might be too long. In the other books, we show how we are in hell and walk through a spiritual fire daily. They show, in detail, how everybody on the planet makes up the one son of God, and at the same time, they show how there is almost 8 billion little Jesuses walking on this planet today. They show how each person you see is carrying the same cross as Jesus to their own crucifixion for just being who they are.

Father, Forgive Us, We Haven't Been Listening.

Behold, a Greater Than Jonas Is Here!!!

Jesus Christ in the Flesh!

And now this one if you're interested.

ABOUT THE AUTHOR



This is the fourth book that our Father has had me write. When our Father called me to the bible back in 2011, I had no idea of what the bible meant. After reading the bible and believing that our Father is perfect, righteous, and justified in everything that He has done, doing, and will do, I stopped celebrating all man-made holidays and birthdays for He never commanded us to do so. I strongly felt and still do feel the same to this day that if He thought we should celebrate these days; He would have commanded it. Then on my 45th birthday in 2015, I woke up knowing what is in the first book in which we wrote. This book is called Father, forgive us, we haven't been listening. This book was reflecting on how important it is to believe the books of Moses. In this book our Father had me truly define the difference between Jesus and the Father and how they are not the same. Then in March of 2016, I was believing that I was being talked to through the scriptures and gave everything I owned to the poor and needy. I did this because I believed that I was being commanded to go out into the wilderness and die so that I could be with our Father and Jesus. Unbeknownst to me, this was me being baptized with the Holy Ghost. This was me giving up living in the Satan's kingdom and Satan's world. After this happened, I was led by our Father, to fast for 40 days and nights. And yes, I was tempted by the devil right about the time the 40 days were finished. Then again unbeknownst to me, I was led back into a truck to undergo hard core one on one training with our Father. Or schooling as noted in Galatians. At this time, I had already listened to the bible a few times but now I started to listen to the bible day in and day out. Then

in 2018, our Father had me write the second book called, Behold, a greater than Jonas in here! This book truly showed how every person on this planet is a servant and or vessel of God. It truly showed how it is almost like there is eight billion little Jesus on the planet in which make up the one son of God. It shows how every person is a tree and we all carry the cross made without hands. By this time, I knew who I am but still felt the scriptures or our Father was telling me not to tell anyone. Then in June of 2019, I was told to make my name know. I rushed and wrote the third book. In this book, I made my name know and who I was. By the time this book was written, I had read the bible twice and listened to the bible from Genesis through Revelations over 20 times. Each time I listen to the bible, I am taught, by our Father more in-depth teachings and got addicted. This is because of the engrafted word we are told about in the book of James. The name of the third book is called Jesus Christ in the flesh! Then shortly after the third book was published, our Father had a servant and or vessel of God tell me that I should have named it Jesus Christ in the flesh is here. So now we bring the fourth book to you in which most of the third book is within. However, we did amend some of the third book, change a couple chapters around and added a couple chapters on some very misunderstood areas of the scriptures.

